



CASTLE OF BLACK IRON

BOOK 10

Drunk Tiger

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Castle of Black Iron

(黑铁之堡)

by

Drunken Tiger

(醉虎)

Synopsis

After the Catastrophe, every rule in the world was rewritten.

In the Age of Black Iron, steel, iron, steam engines and fighting force became the crux in which human beings depended on to survive.

A commoner boy by the name Zhang Tie was selected by the gods of fortune and was gifted a small tree which could constantly produce various marvelous fruits. At the same time, Zhang Tie was thrown into the flames of war, a three-hundred-year war between the humans and monsters on the vacant continent. Using crystals to tap into the potentials of the human body, one must cultivate to become stronger.

The thrilling legends of mysterious clans, secrets of Oriental fantasies, numerous treasures and legacies in the underground world — All in the Castle of Black Iron!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by the WQL @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation edits by DarkGem / Geoffrey @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 901: The New Identity of Zhang Tie

The cemetery was not far from Cui manor. Even though it was a mountainous path, it only took them less than 1 hour to reach there.

During the decade when the young master Cui went out to learn skills, the servants in Cui manor were loyal and honest. They would sweep and offer a sacrifice to the cemetery of old master and the old madam at each Sweeping Tomb Day. Therefore, this cemetery was tidy and clean.

Being voluntarily led by Afu and Cui Wang who were at their 50s and healthy, Zhang Tie finally came to the front of the cemetery of the old master and the old madam of Cui manor after walking along the mountainous path for 40-50 minutes leisurely.

The cemetery of Cui manor was very decent. It was surrounded by a stone enclosure. There was a patch of cyan stony floor in front of the cemetery. Some stony auspicious beasts were standing on both sides of the cemetery.

Standing in front of the 2-in-1 gravestone and watching the names of the old couple on the gravestone, Zhang Tie felt somewhat complex.

Afu and Cui Wang had started to sweep the cemetery and put sacrificial offerings and joss sticks and candles before Zhang Tie moved.

'You were killed by Zhu Liang the fierce wolf. Cui Li was also killed by Zhu Liang in the mountain. His corpse had been used to feed wild beasts. I killed Zhu Liang the fierce wolf and survived in this world in the look and identity of Cui Li. In the others' eyes, I'm your son. Therefore, I will kowtow 3 times for you two out of the karma between Cui family and I...' Zhang Tie thought.

Noticing that Afu and Cui Wang had prepared the items well,

Zhang Tie immediately knelt down in front of the gravestone and kowtowed three times for the old late couple.

After that, Zhang Tie picked himself up and flicked his clothes. He then burned the yellow and white joss paper in the stony pot that Afu and Cui Wang had specially built on the side of the cemetery.

As they burned the joss paper, Afu and Cui Wang couldn't stand dropping off tears.

Being covered with tears on his face, Afu cried, "Old master, old madam, please open your eyes. Young master has come back. He's a knight now. We could finally bring glory to our ancestors..."

Cui Wang's eyes also turned red, "Yes, our young master will ride a tall horse and a gold boat; be a general and a city mayor. You can be reassured in the heaven..."

All the servants that Zhu Liang the fierce wolf took here were honest and simple. In their eyes, the old couple both died of diseases and this young master was the same one as before; after young master Cui came back, the Cui family would grow prosperous; young master was benign, who increased their monthly compensations by two times the moment he returned. They would have a better life from then on. Therefore, they thought that they had gone through all sorts of ordeals.

After burning the joss paper, Afu put out the sparkles using the river water in the terrine. After that, he sprayed it around the cemetery. When they were going to leave the cemetery, Village Constable Jia arrived with County Magistrate Li breathlessly.

At the sight of "Cui Li", County Magistrate Li's eyes shined.

At this moment, Cui Li was still bald headed. Being taller than 2 m, the muscled guy was like a mountain. According to the descriptions of the others, the young master Cui should be almost 50 years old; however, at the sight of him, County Magistrate Li

felt that he was only about 30 years old. At the 50s, commoners would grow old; however, as for a knight, even if he was 60 years old, he would still look young. Cui Li was too young, just like the morning sun.

What impressed County Magistrate Li most was the dense eyebrows which looked like a pair of guillotines. At the sight of them, County Magistrate Li had felt a strong killing qi as his heart raced. Combined with his mountain-like figure, Cui Li looked fierce and dignified. Under the pair of guillotines, flames were flickering in his pupils which were more terrifying...

As a county magistrate, of course, he had a much broader vision than Village Constable Jia. At the sight of Cui Li's eyes, he had remembered a topic about knights at a party. A VIP brought by Li Chengfeng to the party said that some powerhouses who cultivated senior secret skills would look special. Eyes were the portal of one's spirit. Many of those special skills would be manifested through eyes.

After combining with the information provided by Village Constable Jia, County Magistrate Li could almost immediately judge that Cui Li had promoted to a knight. Additionally, he realized that Cui Li must be cultivating a special secret skill.

'He promoted to a knight at such a young age, he must have a bright future.'

Before Village Constable Jia introduced Cui Li to him, County Magistrate Li had already bowed towards Cui Li, "Mr. Cui, I'm Li Chunfeng, the county magistrate of Tongguang County!"

As Cui Li's identity had not been confirmed, he didn't have an official status. Therefore, Li Chunfeng couldn't call him Lord. As the local magistrate of a county, it was close to flattery if he called Zhang Tie young master Cui. It was impolite to call his name either. Therefore, County Magistrate Li directly called Zhang Tie Mr. Cui. As a civil official in Taixia Country, if he called a knight

mister, he was showing his respect to the knight on the premise of not losing his face.

"County Magistrate Li!" Zhang Tie smiled as he nodded in 'neither arrogant nor eager' attitude.

In front of a knight, a county magistrate was nothing. They were completely from two different worlds. Unless they were familiar with each other or friends, their passionate interactions would make people surprised.

Zhang Tie's attitude strengthened the belief of County Magistrate Li.

After greeting Zhang Tie, County Magistrate Li walked to the front of the old couple and bowed three times. At the same time, he said, "With a dutiful son, your ancestors would feel glorious; coming out of our village, the talent will bestow his bounties to one region. Today, I appreciate the old couple of Cui on behalf of over 800,000 commoners in Tongguang County. Thanks to the severe father and kind mother; thank you for cultivating the first knight and contributing to the first powerful memorial gateway for Tongguang County. This powerful memorial gateway will be used to instruct our posterities and make our villagers glorious!"

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter, 'This County Magistrate Li is really a talent. His oral passage sounds really good. He must be a real scholar.'

"County Magistrate Li, Village Constable Jia, as you've come all the way from the foot of the mountain, you must be tired. How about having a cup of fresh tea at my home?"

County Magistrate Li smiled as he cupped his hands once again, "Sorry to trouble you!"

Watching Country Magistrate Li's attitude towards the young master Cui, Village Constable Jia who had watched Cui Li growing up and always felt being an elder became kinder too.

They then went downhill once again.

Compared to how they went up the mountain, they felt much more relaxed when going downhill.

County Magistrate Li moved steadily and vigorously, which could even match youngsters. In the middle of the 4 people, Zhang Tie chatted with County Magistrate Li in a very relaxed way.

"County Magistrate Li, you've promoted to LV 7?" Zhang Tie asked.

"I feel quite ashamed. I have a poor talent for cultivation. After reaching LV 6, I could barely advance to higher levels. Therefore, I could only learn how to manage people and become an official of Taixia. After so many years, through constant cultivation, I only lit over 10 surging points. I've just promoted to LV 7 last year. Therefore, I feel ashamed to show off it in front of Mr. Cui!" County Magistrate Li said modestly.

When in Youzhou Province, Zhang Tie heard that county magistrate was the lowest rank of an official in Taixia Country, which should be assumed by fighters above LV 6. When in Youzhou, as Zhang Tie didn't touch these basic officials, he was still dubious about that rule; when he came here, he found it was real.

This rule only fit Taixia County. None of other countries or regions could meet and stick to such a talent selection standard.

In Waii Subcontinent, a LV 6 fighter was already a grass-rooted officer of a platoon in the troops of each country.

Although County Magistrate Li looked like a scholar, after promoting to LV 7, it indicated that over 10 tough men and burglars could not defeat him at all; even 3-5 LV fighters might not defeat him.

In schools across Taixia Country, books and military skills were impeached at the same time. This education mode had been

carried forward for thousands of years. If one judged the history of Hua people from the pure perspective of education, he would find a law——in all the dynasties where scholars carried crossbows and bolts and poets carried swords on their backs, there would be full of talents and heroes, causing the dynasties unrivaled. By contrast, all the dynasties that gave up the education mode would gradually decline. Those which paid military more than culture would gradually decline to internal chaos. In that dynasties, military officers would be prioritized while the dynasties would go on punitive expeditions in all directions, causing Hua nations one after another; however, none of the dynasties could last long. In those dynasties which valued culture more than the military would last longer; however, the only outcome was that the dynasty would be invaded by alien people, causing great disasters. Many times, Hua people were almost exterminated.

The future of a country could be judged by its current education. Those who valued military more than culture would grow chaotic; while those who valued culture more than military would grow weaker and finally be exterminated. Only by combining military with culture could a country be constantly prosperous.

The national policy of Taixia Country was——combining military with culture, which had been written into the "Laws of Taixia Country" as the essence of education.

...

After returning to Cui manor, Village Constable Jia found an excuse to leave in advance. Finally, only County Magistrate Li and Zhang Tie stayed in the manor and drank the spring tea, which had been picked from Cui's private tea plantation in the mountain.

"I wonder which sect did Mr. Cui join these years before promoting to a knight?" County Magistrate Li asked Zhang Tie as he drank the tea.

"It's too difficult to join any top sect, which requires excellent

aptitude and deep background!" Zhang Tie shook his head and continued, "I've not joined any sect at all. I just learned from powerhouses across famous mountains and rivers. Later on, due to luck, I had a marvelous experience in a famous mountain and met a cave where a knight had died cross-legged. I gained a secret skill and some pills from the cave. After that, I cultivated for over 10 years before promoting to a knight!" Zhang Tie tossed out the explanation that he had long prepared. This explanation was almost real. If Li Chunfeng really wanted to investigate the cave, Zhang Tie could lead him to the cave where he got the "Fire Dragon Sutra" so as to cancel off all the doubts.

County Magistrate Li was dumbfounded about Zhang Tie's answer. Even in Taixia Country, this was also a marvelous experience. He had not imagined that it could occur to Cui Li who lived in Liuying Town under the governance of him.

"What's your plan then, Mr. Cui?"

"As it is in the holy war, as a knight, of course, I need to serve the country. I have to fight demons in the most dangerous places!" Zhang Tie replied generously with full ambition, "I will stay at home for a few days. After offering a sacrifice to my parents and paying a visit to the villagers, I will go to the earth-elements realm to fight demons..."

"How heroic you are, Mr. Cui! That's what a hero should do. Pitifully, I'm poor in battle strength; otherwise, if I could promote to a knight, I would definitely learn from Mr. Cui and fight demons on the battlefield!" County Magistrate Li patted the table out of excitement.

"As County Magistrate Li is here, I have a thing to trouble you!"

"Please, as long as I could do it, this humble official will definitely try my best to do it!"

Touching his bald head, Zhang Tie said with a great heroic and coarse sound, "After I leave, I don't know when will I come back.

As these loyal servants are growing old and have no relative. If there's something wrong with them, please take care of them in case that they are bullied by others in their twilight years!"

"Don't worry about that. I can do it!" County Magistrate Li promised it right away. As it was a rare chance for him to strike up an acquaintance with a knight, of course, he would never decline it.

"Thanks!"

After coming back to Liuying Town and fixing his identity as Cui Li, Zhang Tie became reassured inside...

Only after staying at Cui manor for a short while, County Magistrate Li had left Liuying Town.

After confirming Zhang Tie's identity as a knight, County Magistrate Li returned to the county by vehicle. He wrote a document on the same day.

He then sent the document to Zeyun City. As Tongguang County belonged to Zeyun City, after confirming the fact that there was a knight in Liuying Town in Tongguang County, of course, he needed to notice the city mayor as soon as possible. It was also a major event for Zeyun City.

After the city mayor of Zeyun City was shocked, the news that Cui Li the young master of Cui family in Liuying Town had promoted to a knight spread across the foot of Coiling Dragon Mountain officially at once.

...

In the next few days, Village Constable Jia and the villagers in Liuying Town felt that the entire Liuying Town had become a vegetable market as all the influential figures within hundreds of square miles were pouring in Liuying Town like going to the market. They were all here to pay a visit to Cui manor in order. It was said that their gifts had filled the warehouse of Cui manor.

The remote Liuying Town had not been so glorious before.

After being boisterous for a few days, some residents in Liuying Town saw a flame shooting into the sky in one evening. On the second day, when those visitors waited outside the gate of Cui manor, they heard a news——the young master Cui had left last night...

...

Chapter 902: Zhang Tie's New Plan

After leaving Liuying Town on the evening of June 7th, Zhang Tie arrived at Ailian City which was 3,500 miles away from Liuying Town on June 9th at a medium speed.

Ailian City was a Class A city, which was the traffic hub that linked Yongzhou Province to the western provinces in Taixia Country.

That was to say, people could buy air tickets to arrive at any province in the west part of Taixia Country from Ailian City.

Zhang Tie was going to Force Province.

Being in the northwest of Taixia Country, Force Province was almost 150,000 miles away from Yongzhou Province.

As one of the 36 upper provinces in Taixia Country, Force Province was an important military province in Taixia Country. The entrance leading to earth-elements realm was in Force Province.

Even in the entire human world, Force Province was one of the most outstanding human places, not to mention in Taixia Country.

Each of the top four forces in Taixia Country had powerful troops in Force Province. Besides, there were over 1.5 billion regular soldiers in Force Province. That was how it got its name.

The airline from Ailian City in Yongzhou Province to Force Province was operated only once a week. When Zhang Tie arrived at Ailian City, 3 more days were left for the second airship to set off. Zhang Tie spent 268 gold coins to buy a ship ticket of a super deluxe berth cabin from Ailian City to Force Province. After that, he settled down in a hotel in the west airport of Ailian City and started to cultivate there.

The Purgatory Samsara confirmed Zhang Tie's guess—in ancient times, besides elements-gathering matrix, people have

developed a method to absorb four elements in a higher efficiency.

After getting hang of the Purgatory Samsara, Zhang Tie increased his absorption efficiency by 3 times at once. Previously, it took Zhang Tie 2 hours to use up an earth-elements crystal; now, it only took him half an hour to use up one high-quality earth-elements crystal.

Of course, such a high efficiency was based on the effect of his 18 spiritual hands at the same time. Besides Zhang Tie, nobody else might be able to absorb earth-elements crystals at such an amazing speed. Even his master Zhao Yuan might not do it. Such a powerful one mind-for-various purposes skill was exclusive to Zhang Tie.

At such a high efficiency, Zhang Tie could absorb above 40 earth-elements crystals each day on the premise of making his full efforts in cultivation. In this condition, Zhang Tie could light one scale in about 8 days. Due to the sudden increase in cultivation speed and consumption of earth-elements crystals, Zhang Tie finally saw a ray of hope in forming the tricky second chakra of King Roc Sutra.

Zhang Tie's total stockpile of earth-elements crystals were over 9,000 which couldn't afford him to light 30 scales. Even though he used up all the crystals that he had, it was still a long way to go before lighting the second chakra. Therefore, Zhang Tie chose to have a try in the earth-elements realm.

Actually, it would only take Zhang Tie over 10 days to fly to Force Province from Yongzhou Province himself; however, Zhang Tie didn't want to make trouble at such a critical moment. Therefore, he chose the airship.

It would take the fastest public airship in Taixia Country almost 4 months to arrive at Force Province from Yongzhou Province, plus the supplying time in the way. Zhang Tie planned to cultivate during this period.

On June 12th, after absorbing over 120 earth-elements crystals in 3 days, Zhang Tie checked out the room in the early morning and

came to the underground entrance of his airship on time.

There was only one tunnel leading to the ground. Two beautiful stewardesses were checking tickets at the entrance of the tunnel.

It was not a long queue in the tunnel. Zhang Tie's height and figure made him very eye-catching the moment he arrived there.

"Sir, please show me your air ticket!"

When it was Zhang Tie's turn, Zhang Tie passed his super deluxe air ticket to the stewardess while watching her sweet smile.

After checking it, the stewardess punched a hole in the ticket and gave it back to Zhang Tie. Meanwhile, she reminded Zhang Tie, "Please keep your ticket. Before the airship set off, there's one more checkpoint in the airship!"

Zhang Tie nodded in a handsome way.

"Do you need checkin luggage?" The stewardess asked Zhang Tie while throwing a glance at the simple military luggage in Zhang Tie's hand.

Although the military luggage was not small, it was like a kid's schoolbag in Zhang Tie's hand.

Of course, Zhang Tie carried his space-teleportation item; however, it was too eye-catching; especially for a knight who was not famous. Additionally, in case of trouble, Zhang Tie didn't show his space-teleportation item. Instead, he just carried a military luggage which contained some clothes and spare shoes. Even though knights had to prepare spare clothes in case of scaring people away by stink after being treated as a beggar. Now that he didn't want to show his space-teleportation item, Zhang Tie had to carry these necessities.

"No need, thanks!"

"If so, please board the airship from this side. Your cabin berth is Heavenly No. 17. Bon Voyage!"

Holding the luggage, Zhang Tie walked to the ground through the tunnel.

Right on the ground, there was a huge blue hard-type airship at the exit of the tunnel.

It was so huge that even the fury-level airship of Huaiyuan Palace was only as large as half of it. Additionally, compared to that of the fury-level airship, this airship's air sac was very special. Common air sacs would look full after being filled with gas; however, this air sac shrunk with wrinkles on its surface like that of the bellows of an accordion.

Zhang Tie watched this airship for a while.

This was the most technical airship in the world—vacuum airship.

The air sac of common airship would usually be filled with a gas which was lighter than air; however, the air sac of vacuum airship was in the vacuum state. It flew by the floating effect caused by the vacuum air sac.

Besides a greater loading capacity, vacuum airships could fly longer than common airships. Of course, it required more advanced technologies. In this age, besides Taixia Country, no other human countries could produce vacuum airship. Facing the fierce competition of the airship manufacturing industry in Taixia Country, Zhang Ping's small airship factory had to go bankrupt.

After watching the huge airship for a short while, Zhang Tie entered the cabin with his luggage...

Chapter 903: Arriving at Force Province

The so-called No.17 Heavenly super deluxe berth cabin could never match that of Zhang Tie's private airship.

This berth cabin only covered about 10 square meters. It only contained a bed, a desk and a small independent washroom. There was a looming flavor of lavender.

Besides being private and clean, this room was nothing different than a basic single dorm.

Of course, such a single dorm was already super deluxe in long-distance traffic tools like an airship.

The water in the berth cabin was supplied quantitatively everyday. After using up the daily provision, the passenger would have no more on the very day. The bathing function in the washroom was unavailable during normal times; only when the airship landed for supply and was connected to the water pipe in the airport could the shower head work.

The average landing time of the airship was five days. Therefore, Zhang Tie could only take a bath once in 5 days.

The airship provided 3 meals a day; however, passengers needed to enjoy food at a fixed time in the dining hall as the dining hall would be closed except for the fixed time. If they wanted to drink something, they had to consume in the bar, which would run around the clock in the airship. All the drinks and snacks in the bar were not free.

When the weather permitted, the observation deck on the airship would open 14 hours a day from 7 am to 9 pm.

Passengers were forbidden to enter the bellyhold cargo bay, the crew's living quarters and workspace in the airship.

Fire was forbidden in the airship, which was also a universal regulation across Taixia Country. Smoke was only allowed in the

observation deck and the bar area.

Passengers could rent safes to store their valuables. Otherwise, if passengers lost their valuables, the airship would not shoulder any responsibility for that.

If everything went smooth, the ETM of the airship was October 5. If it encountered any force majeure due to weather or mechanical faults, etc., it might arrive at Force Province later.

...

After entering his private room, Zhang Tie took up the notice board for passengers in the room and read the introductions on it. All the introductions above were the very treatments that Zhang Tie could enjoy at the cost of 268 gold coins.

However, Zhang Tie didn't care about that. He only needed to cultivate quietly in the airship. Therefore, Zhang Tie was basically satisfied with this small single dorm.

The only problem was his height. Every time Zhang Tie stood up, his head would almost touch the ceiling with a distance of less than 20 cm. Therefore, he felt a bit depressed.

The locker was beneath the bed and was connected with the bed.

After looking around the furnishings in the berth cabin, Zhang Tie opened the locker beneath his bed and dropped his luggage into it.

...

After a few minutes, the first mate boarded the airship, followed by two people in the uniform of bounty hunters and started to check tickets one after another according to the routine.

Although Zhang Tie didn't exit his berth cabin, the moment the two bounty hunters boarded the vehicle, Zhang Tie had known that.

After hearing the knocks, Zhang Tie opened the hatch door with

a calm look and saw the first mate and two bounty hunters standing outside the hatch door.

"Sir, please show me your ticket!"

Closely after the first mate's request, Zhang Tie had passed his ticket to the first mate.

The two bounty hunters looked Zhang up and down seriously; one of them even lowered his head to check the order for arrest in his hand.

Benefited from his height, Zhang Tie could see the contents on the order for arrest clearly.

The first image on the order for arrest was very close to the original look of Zhang Tie while the other 20-odd images on it were all that of important criminals on the wanted list issued by the Supreme Court of Taixia Country.

The images of important criminals in Taixia Country would be posted outside the gates of all the cities, in hotels and pivot harbors across Taixia Country for recognition within 3 months after their crimes were confirmed or in the first half year after they escaped when they would probably be easily caught.

Due to the large territory and population in Taixia Country, there were many common criminals, who were not qualified to enjoy such a special "treatment". The common criminals' images could only be seen in the Pavilion of Brightness or the archives of judicial agencies. Only those whose crimes had shocked one region could enjoy such a treatment to be well known across Taixia Country within half a year after their crimes.

As the former dean of the provincial court in Youzhou Province, at the sight of the order for arrest, Zhang Tie had known that nobody had made a more important crime than him in the late months. Therefore, his image ranked top in the order for arrest.

Zhang Tie had a dense whisker. After gazing at Zhang Tie's

whisker, ear root and lower jaw carefully, the two bounty hunters nodded. The first mate then gave the ticket back to Zhang Tie.

"Wish you a pleasant trip, sir!"

The group of three then moved to the next berth cabin...

After taking the ticket, Zhang Tie closed the door. After that, touching his whisker, Zhang Tie revealed a smile.

Among all the disguising masks, there would always be a loophole on the beard. Therefore, common disguising masks would not have a beard. The two bounty hunters also observed Zhang Tie's whisker carefully. Given this point, they must be experienced.

After closing the door, Zhang Tie came to the bedside and took off his shoes. After that, he sat on the bed and took out an earth-elements crystal from Castle of Black Iron.

...

Half an hour later, the two bounty hunters left the airship. Closely after that, all the hatch doors of the airship were closed. With a slight shock, the airship began to take off...

Zhang Tie had already absorbed the first earth-elements crystal and took out the second one...

...

When the huge vacuum airship set off for Force Province, Zhang Tie started his new round of cultivation.

Zhang Tie could enjoy food from Castle of Black Iron very well in the berth cabin; however, in case of doubts, he would exit his berth cabin at noontime and have a lunch in the dining hall everyday. After that, he would return to his berth cabin to continue his cultivation. He didn't even want to go to the observation deck.

In the single-minded state, Zhang Tie would consume 40 earth-elements crystals in 20 hours each day. As for the remaining 4

hours a day; he would enter deep sleep 2 hours, eat and shit 1 hour and practice those battle skills of "Fire Dragon Sutra" in trouble-reappearance situations 1 hour...

Zhang Tie just entered cultivation in such a small berth in this way.

Zhang Tie's fierce look and the sturdy figure would bring people a sense of oppression wherever he was in the airship. Therefore, very few people dared to talk with him when he exited his hatch door for lunch. Benefited from this reason, Zhang Tie felt quieter and could concentrate on cultivation.

The great pile of earth-elements crystals that Zhang Tie plundered from Waii Subcontinent also started to be consumed rapidly.

5 days later, when the airship landed for the first supply, Zhang Tie had already lit the 15th scale on his knight's crystal plate...

From then on, Zhang Tie would light one scale per 8 days. As he was so devoted, he almost forgot about the existence of time...

...

The vacuum airship flew over prefectures and mountain ranges and moved all the way towards Force Province...

Zhang Tie just consumed his earth-elements crystals at a high speed...

Time flew past...

The order for arrest of Zhang Tie, Zhang Mushen, the former dean of the provincial court in Youzhou Province was still effective...

The color of the land below gradually turned from green to yellow...

...

Until one day, knocks finally drifted from the door of the No. 17

Heavenly berth cabin.

A voice sounded outside the door, "Sir, the vehicle will arrive at Thunder Battle Fortress in Force Province in an hour. Please keep your belongings handy and be ready for getting off."

After hearing the sounds, Zhang Tie, who was absorbing earth-elements crystals cross-legged on his bed opened his eyes with a flickering red light...

"Okay, thanks." Zhang Tie replied.

After putting away that earth-elements crystal, Zhang Tie got off the bed and put on his shoes. He then relaxed his limbs and took out the military luggage from the locker beneath the bed. Carrying it on his back, Zhang Tie opened the door and exited calmly.

The calendar memo on the aisle outside the berth cabin marked the date clearly.

October 7, the 900th year of the black iron calendar.

The actual time of arrival was 2 days later than the estimated time of arrival because the airship met a heavy thunderstorm when it passed by Guanzhou Province two months ago. For the sake of the safety, the airship stayed 2 more days in Guanzhou Province.

As usual, many passengers were gathering on the observation deck and watching the scenery below after hearing that they had arrived at the destination.

With the military luggage on his back, Zhang Tie also came to the observation deck. At the sight of a muscle man, although being a bit crowded on the observation deck, those in front of him still hurriedly gave way to Zhang Tie.

At the sight of such a giant man, they knew that he was tricky. He might be here to join the army. As they had arrived at the destination, if they were fractured by him, it would be too unfortunate.

It was Zhang Tie's first time to board the observation deck of this airship.

It was golden all over on the land below, which indicated that the harvest season had arrived. Being covered with fiery maple leaves, the mountain range in the far seemed to catch fire...

There were only battle fortresses instead of towns on the land.

"Wow, is this Force Province? It's covered with battle fortresses!" A passenger who came to Force Province for the first time exclaimed...

"It's said that the largest battle fortress in Force Province could match a Class A city..."

"All the commoners and factories are in the battle fortresses!"

They started to discuss about that...

Zhang Tie came to the guardrail of the observation deck and immediately jumped into the air.

Such a dangerous movement aroused exclamations from the surroundings——is this tough guy seeking for death?

Closely after that, everybody became dumbfounded as they found the tough guy was ascending like a bird instead of descending. After a short while, he even suspended in the air...

"A knight? That tough guy is a knight? I've not imagined that there's a knight among us."

The airship was sent into an uproar...

Zhang Tie ignored their uproar; instead, after identifying the direction, he flew towards the direction where the sun was going down.

Carrying the grass-green military luggage, in a few seconds, Zhang Tie had disappeared into the sight of the passengers...

Chapter 904: What Rolling Thunders!

What a Force Province!

After leaving the airship for less than 20 minutes, Zhang Tie had seen at least 10 knights in the sky; most of whom just passed by him while two flew towards northwest like him.

The knights didn't feel strange seeing their same kind, it was just like encountering each other on the road by car. Therefore, they didn't hail each other; instead, they just hurried on with their own journey.

Besides knights, as Zhang Tie flew towards west, he saw more and more battle airships in the sky.

Huge battle fortresses, barracks and panzer groups running in the wild could be seen everywhere below.

When Zhang Tie was in Selnes Theater of Operations, the crystal battle fortress of Jinyun Country was the largest one over there; however, at this moment, right below Zhang Tie's feet, Zhang Tie could see bigger battle fortresses in every 70 miles. Those bigger and grimmer battle fortresses were like wild beasts crawling on the ground quietly. Airships would land in the battle fortresses time to time.

During the sunset, the afterglow in the skyline turned more brilliant...

After about 2 hours of flight, Zhang Tie "leisurely" traversed almost 1,000 miles, As more and more knights appeared in the sky, Zhang Tie knew that he had arrived at his destination.

A huge floating airboat flew 1,000 m above Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie turned around and saw 4 men and 2 women standing on the prow and looking into the distance.

The 6 people looked distinctive. Some were carrying a crossbow and bolts, some were carrying a sword. With a profound qi, they

were looking into the distance and talking about something.

The floating airboat didn't move too fast while a huge flag was swaying in the wind in the middle of the airboat with two huge characters on it——天禄...

Zhang Tie was shocked for a short while, "Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace?"

It was out of Zhang Tie's imagination that he could meet a top clan surnamed Zhang.

Given the airboat which was not smaller than the exclusive vehicle of Commander Cheng, Zhang Tie knew that Zhang family of Tianlu Palace must be something.

Zhang Tie turned around and looked at that huge airboat. After sensing Zhang Tie's sight, the 6 people on the prow turned around at the same time and threw a glance at Zhang Tie. After finding that Zhang Tie was nothing special but a sturdy figure with a bald head, they just ignored him.

At this moment, more and more knights appeared in the sky. Within Zhang Tie's sight, Zhang Tie could see over 20 knights flying ahead together with him.

Another airboat flew towards him from afar...

...

After flying another 10 minutes, Zhang Tie sensed the increasingly stronger ascending, whirling thermal current, which had completely broken the limit of the ascending thermal currents caused by geographical features on the ground.

Except for knights and airboats, no airship could stand still in such a severe environment.

Those who liked gliders and were not afraid of death could have a try here.

After sensing the thermal current, the airboats and knights ahead

of Zhang Tie ascended to above 15,000 m high from thousands of meters high at the same time...

Right on the ground below, Zhang Tie caught sight of a pitch dark entrance leading to the underground world.

The entrance was so large that its diameter was over 150 miles. From a height, it looked like a huge funnel. Compared to it, the entrance of Dragon Cave was like a sesame to a millstone...

As Zhang Tie had learned, it was the entrance to the earth-elements realm...

This huge funnel was breathing; precisely exhaling.

A thermal current was blowing out of the huge funnel-sized black hole, causing changes in the air within tens of thousands square miles. Right in the center of the huge entrance, a cyclone covering 70 square miles was swirling in an anti-clock manner like a hurricane, which was very shocking.

Standing above 10,000 m in the air, Zhang Tie looked around and found 3 airboats and over 100 black spots in the surroundings above 10,000 m, all of whom were looking down at the entrance of the cyclone quietly and waiting for the possible chance to enter it, including Zhang Tie.

Coincidentally, the floating airboat of the Zhang family of Tianlu Palace was also hovering not far from Zhang Tie.

...

The thermal current was constantly blowing out of the entrance of the earth-elements realm. After reaching the highest point in the troposphere, they dispersed in all directions. causing no cloud within square miles.

Before the catastrophe, when everybody was cheated by lies, it was very difficult for a commoner to believe that this planet was hollow and could breathe itself while its surface could lead to another world in its depth. The current scene could only be seen at

the poles of this planet at specific moments, which could never be touched by commoners. Even aircrafts were forbidden in the areas where people could catch sight of the underground tunnels from a height. The limited number of major countries which knew this secret had blocked the poles and divided their own territories. They then stealthily explored another underground world in the name of studying climates and glaciers.

The existence of the underground world had been a shared secret among major countries.

Watching the present scene and recalling the history before the Catastrophe, Zhang Tie felt that humans before the Catastrophe were too innocent. The limited number of major countries invested in a lot of money and personnel and forbade people in only for studying the climate change and changes in glaciers in the depopulated zone hundreds of millions years ago and making explorations in geology and resources? However, most of the people believed in it. Didn't they think that those who entered the poles in the name of scientific research might want to do some other researches such as making an exploration nearby the entrance of the underground world or contacting some intelligent beings and forces in the underground world?

As the sun gradually set, the cyclone in the huge entrance also started to decline...

More knights and airboats arrived.

Among those later knights, a woman in a bright-colored imperial dress started to look around, the moment she arrived here. At the sight of Zhang Tie's sturdy back, her eyes shone. Closely after that, she floated towards Zhang Tie like a red cloud.

...

"Brother, are you going to the earth-elements realm?"

After hearing the word "brother", Zhang Tie almost fell down.

After sniffing the fragrant breeze, Zhang Tie turned around as he saw an extremely sexy woman standing on his side, who was watching him with a sweet smile in a pair of charming and watery eyes.

Her skin was as white as milk. In a red, hot imperial dress and a peony-shaped bun, she had a nice nose and petite mouth. The bra covered 3/4 of her "huge white rabbits", making them tight and plump. As a result, Zhang Tie's interest was aroused.

'F*ck, am I attending the palace ball or heading to kill demons in the earth-elements realm?' Zhang Tie muttered. After looking around, he found this woman was talking to him.

'Brother?' It was Zhang Tie's first time to hear a female knight calling him in such a sloppy manner.

At this moment, Zhang Tie faintly heard two women's cold harrumphs from the airboat of the Zhang family of Tianlu Palace. When a woman disliked the other one, she would never conceal her feeling. Evidently, this woman was not on the side of the other two women on the airboat.

Growing up among so many women, after throwing a glance at this women, Zhang Tie had caught an information and indication from the eyes and qi of this woman which could only be identified by experienced guys.

Zhang Tie caught the same information and indication from that beautiful female first lieutenant's eyes when he returned to Blackhot City last time.

However, this woman was far better than that female first lieutenant in terms of both look and figure.

Touching his bald head in an amazed look, Zhang Tie thought, 'It'd be acceptable if I were a handsome toyboy or in my original look. I've not imagined that my current look is still attractive. What the hell—a beauty and a wild beast or a tough man and a

sexy woman?'

As the woman revealed a sweet smile, Zhang Tie had to force a smile too.

He then nodded, "Right, I'm heading for the earth-elements realm!"

"That's great. I'm going to the earth-elements realm too. I've not been there before. Therefore, I'm a bit scared. Can you take me there, brother?" Just be my partner..." The woman asked as she moved closer to Zhang Tie in a tender way.

Although knight's real age had nothing to do with their look; especially for female knights, after hearing the woman who might be his grandma calling him brother, Zhang Tie's fine hair stood at once while he quivered all over at the same time.

——Shameless——the two female knights on the airboat replied with a cold harrumph at the same time before turning around.

——Junior sister apprentices, don't be angry, people are always different although they eat the same food——a man on the airboat opened his mouth in a mild way.

"Do you bear fucking?" Zhang Tie asked in a loud, coarse tone.

"What?" The woman asked as she blinked her eyes as if she didn't understand Zhang Tie's question, "What do you mean..."

"I mean, can you bear being fucked by me naked on the bed?" Zhang Tie raised his voice at once as he started to look this woman up and down with hot eyes like selecting slaves in the slave market, "I like women who could bear fucking. I don't care whether you have various gestures on the bed; they are useless; the key is that you should bear fucking. If not, please don't waste my time in case of getting me bored on the bed!"

'What rolling thunders!'

After hearing Zhang Tie's question, tens of thousands of

thunders rolled over. As a result, it became quiet in the surroundings in a split second. Even the man who had opened his mouth on the airboat started to cough heavily like having been choked up by his own saliva...

The beauty in the imperial dress changed her face greatly. Even though she was open, she had not encountered any man who dared ask this question the moment he uttered. Even if her face was 10 times thicker, she could not "bear" this question either...

Zhang Tie broke her bottom line in a split second...

This woman had met someone who had a low emotion quotient and could burn lyre to cook red-crowned crane; however, this one directly cleaned his butt by peony blossoms...

"I was...I was just asking you the way...how...how could you...be so rude, shameless!" The beauty in the imperial dress swung her sleeves and directly flew away without even throwing a glance at Zhang Tie...

"Young sister, young sister, don't leave..." Zhang Tie shouted.

After hearing the appellation "Young sister", the woman quivered all over and accelerated her speed away...

After it became quiet once again. Zhang Tie hushed.

After sensing the weird atmosphere in the surroundings, Zhang Tie turned around and saw that those men and women on the airboat beside him were watching him with dumbfounded looks.

Zhang Tie exposed his teeth towards them, the two women who had replied with cold harrumphs instantly turned pale as they hurriedly turned around. Even the entire airboat moved a bit farther from Zhang Tie...

When a person reached a degree in a certain aspect, he would be unrivaled in the world.

...

The sun finally set while the cyclone at the huge entrance of the cave disappeared. After that, it gradually turned darker, a great suction came into being in the cave together with a new hurricane which revolved in a clock-wise manner. The air in the sky then started to pour into the cave...

A black spot rushed downwards as fast as a light, closely followed by all the other black spots and airboats in the sky, including Zhang Tie...

Chapter 905: Arriving at the Earth-elements Realm

After entering the huge cave for over 10 minutes, Zhang Tie felt a great suction, which was not caused by the air flow but by the changing magnetic fields in the cave. Zhang Tie felt like riding a magnetic elevator. Without using any strength, Zhang Tie had been led and wrapped by that strength and dove towards the underground world as fast as a lightning bolt.

The secret to accessing the earth-elements realm was to stay relaxed. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't control his body on purpose. Just like flowing towards the lower reach of a river by boat, Zhang Tie enjoyed traversing in the exotic tunnel.

In such a state, Zhang Tie had to be relaxed as he couldn't even move at all. Just like those in a running elevator could not jump out of it, Zhang Tie could not slip the leash of this tunnel either.

Even knights could not disobey the great, mysterious power of the mother nature.

Zhang Tie had read an article in the Mountain of Brightness—even a knight who had formed 4 chakras could not move inside, not to mention a common black iron knight.

Zhang Tie made an attempt and found that even his spiritual energy had been frozen in this exotic tunnel.

After making attempts a few times in vain, Zhang Tie gave up his attempt absolutely.

Nobody knew why there was such a tunnel just like nobody knew why all the planets in the universe were round. This tunnel was as old as this planet. It seemed to be one of the original looks of this world. Just like the sunken part between the upper part and the lower part of an apple, which was carried by most of the fruits, people would think it was determined by genes. But who

determined the genes of the fruits? Whether the shapes of fruits were caused by the evolution and duplication of this planet or not?

After the Catastrophe, the magnetic poles of this planet rotated, causing great changes. After the thick ice layer and snow completely melted, this tunnel was exposed. Before the Catastrophe, this place was not called Force Province; instead, it was one of the poles of this planet. The greater part of the Eastern Continent were polar regions before the Catastrophe.

...

In this tunnel, Zhang Tie felt being still as the relative distances between him and the other knights and airboats remained unchanged. Everyone seemed to be still. However, in such a relative still state, everyone could see exotic lights rushing towards them and penetrating through them in a split second from the underground world...

Due to the super high speed, Zhang Tie could not see clearly the surrounding scene at all. All the surrounding scenes became shadow and light.

Zhang Tie tried his utmost efforts to look around by concentrating his spiritual energy and consciousness a few times and felt that he was penetrating through a hollow layer being filled with lightning bolts which were as thick as hundreds of miles. Zhang Tie was confused why there were lightning bolts underground.

It took him dozens of seconds to penetrate through the layer being filled with lightning bolts as thick as hundreds of miles.

Besides, Zhang Tie saw some other strange things during this period...

Time in this tunnel seemed to be slower than that outside...

Whether it was in the Dragon Cave or in the tower of time which Zhang Tie discovered beneath Kalay Mountain Range,

theoretically, they were both in the earth's crust or being close to the earth's crust and earth mantle. However, Zhang Tie reached the most mysterious internal region of this planet, which was in the depth beneath the earth's crust.

The journey lasted over 3 hours. Zhang Tie didn't know how many miles had he dived. All of a sudden, he slowed down. After another 10 minutes, everybody felt relaxed while the binding force from the tunnel suddenly disappeared. At the same time, all the knights and airboats recovered their maneuverability and stabilized themselves.

They were then blown into a vast space by the heavy air flow.

What entered Zhang Tie's sight was the red clouds at the dome of this space. There were undulating mountains below the clouds. Right on the horizon in the distance, Zhang Tie caught sight of looming lamplights.

All the airboats and knights were flying towards the lamplights in the far, followed by Zhang Tie leisurely.

When he drew close to the lamplight, Zhang Tie found that it was a huge fortress which was much more magnificent than a Class A city on the ground.

It seemed that the fortress had been standing there since ancient times as it carried a time-honored yet mysterious qi.

The walls of that fortress were as high as thousands of meters. The entire fortress was composed of many stories covered tens of thousands of square miles in a key region. Zhang Tie could not even see its border. There were various, dense high pagodas in the fortress, which looked like spines on a hedgehog. Pointing at the sky one after another, they were very terrifying.

This fortress could never be built by humans. Because the entire fortress, including the pagodas inside it, was shining metallic luster. It was completely composed of metal.

Until today, people could still not accomplish such a magnificent, metal fortress covering tens of thousands square miles even after combining the scientific abilities of humans before the Catastrophe. It was completely out of people's imagination.

Zhang Tie even doubted that the total of steel storage among all the Class A cities in Taixia Country would not match that of this fortress in weight, not to mention building it.

Humans in this age or before the Catastrophe could never build such a magnificent complex.

Undoubtedly, this fortress was a prehistorical relic in the earth-elements realm. It was left by a far-ancient civilization.

There was the highest metal pyramid in the center of the fortress. The mysterious and borderless world—Earth-elements Realm was facing this fortress in the far.

This was the Lion Fortress, the most magnificent human fortress, the prototype of human battle fortresses in this age and the firmest fortress of humans across the entire Eastern Continent and Taixia Country in the underground world. It was both the portal for humans to enter the Earth-elements Realm and the throat from the Earth-elements Realm to the Eastern Continent.

If this firmest fortress and shield was broken through, it meant that the contingent of demons would directly appear on the ground of Eastern Continent and attack the core region of human countries. On the opposite, this fortress would also serve as the firmest bridgehead for humans to explore the underground world.

From a certain perspective, the Lion Fortress was the beacon of hope that encouraged humans to defend demons.

This was the world and the battlefield of knights!

Chapter 906: Receiving Another Crystal Plate

Zhang Tie was really shocked by the magnificence of the Lion Fortress. When Zhang Tie was watching the Lion Fortress in the air, he saw a red shadow flashing by. It was the beautiful "young sister" who had been flying towards the Lion Fortress. After a short while, all the airships had landed outside the Lion Fortress.

All the knights were flying towards the Lion Fortress, closely followed by Zhang Tie.

After drawing closer, Zhang Tie found that there was a huge piece of diamond-shaped crystal floating above the top of the huge metal pyramid, the dim luster which covered the part above the exterior wall of the fortress in a translucent energy field. Being similar to the energy field in the tower of time, this energy field was a safety cover of the entire Lion Fortress. Of course, knights could not fly above the Lion Fortress. Therefore, all the knights could only land outside the Lion Fortress and enter it from the gate.

Standing on the ground, Zhang Tie found that this fortress was amazingly magnificent.

'It's more like a terrifying steel mountain than a fortress.

However, the metal of this fortress was definitely harder than steel.

The gate of the fortress was hundreds of meters high and dozens of meters wide. Two lines of guards in black helmets and armors were riding an exotic and fierce beast which was higher than 20 m outside the gate with spears in hand.

Undoubtedly, given the qi of the two lines of guards, they were knights!

Their mounts were watching everyone who was entering the gate

with their aggressive golden pupils while exposing their sawtooth-like fangs. Some mounts were drooling while their saliva corroded the sands on the ground, causing curls of cyan smoke.

As for these living beings, those people who entered the fortress were like snacks crawling in front of them. As a result, these beasts became a bit restless while drooling. The knights were controlling and soothing their impatience.

"They're underground dragons..."

Zhang Tie heard someone whispering in front of him.

'They're underground dragons?' Zhang Tie threw a glance at the underground dragons out of curiosity and found that their sturdy hind legs were pretty powerful. It indicated that this mount was good at long-distance running at a possible, terrifying speed. The sharp claws on their forelimbs implied a strong destruction and aggressivity. The squamous layer over their skins indicated that they had very thick and coarse skins along with a great defensive capability. Their corrosive saliva indicated that the underground dragons had a very good appetite and digestive ability. This was a mutated beast which might be omnivorous.

A thought occurred in Zhang Tie's mind. Zhang Tie then ran his spiritual energy to check their level.

'Level 15, they're battle spirit-level mutated beasts!'

As they had reached level 15, the underground dragons might have other special abilities.

No wonder they could be the mount of knights.

The moment Zhang Tie entered the gate, a restless underground dragon had stomped towards Zhang Tie's head forcefully.

"Watch out!" Zhang Tie heard an emergency warning while everybody entering the gate turned around out of curiosity...

'F*ck! You think that this father is more delicious than others?'

Zhang Tie directly punched the sole of the underground dragon without even looking at it.

With a thunder, the 20 m-high underground dragon uttered a short, urgent sad moo like blowing a conch. Closely after that, it was sent over 10 m above the ground and flying backward and finally fell down like a 'collapsing' mountain and pillars, causing an earthquake. The knight on its back had long flown away...

Everybody was dumbfounded.

Zhang Tie didn't use his battle qi at all. He just used his sheer animal strength and made a face-to-face collision with the underground dragon.

The result was that Zhang Tie was safe and sound except that his feet sunk a few centimeters in the ground while that huge underground dragon was sent flying backward by Zhang Tie.

'F*ck, what a weirdo! Is that a human or what? Even if he's a knight, he was too exaggerated.

The underground dragon was struggling to pick itself up. Although Zhang Tie's blow was not fatal, it had to be crippled for a few days before recovery. Of course, it was impossible for it to be bouncing in its rehabilitation period.

The owner of the underground dragon hurriedly flew over and landed on its side. After that, he started to check its wounds.

Zhang Tie threw a glance at them before entering the gate.

"Hold on!" With a muffled sound, a sturdy knight directly jumped off another underground dragon.

"What?" Zhang Tie stopped as he turned around and looked at the knight with a cold impression, "You only allow beasts to beat people; yet don't allow people to fight back?"

"As my brother has just captured the underground dragon and has not tamed it yet. Sorry for what happened! Please forgive us!"

The sturdy knight cupped his hands towards Zhang Tie.

Realizing that he was not looking for trouble, Zhang Tie became relieved and waved his hand, "It's fine. I've not dropped a hair!"

The sturdy knight then threw an appreciative glance at Zhang Tie, who was about 7 m higher than him and said, "I'm Wu Guanhai, the leader of the No. 7 Squad of the Black Armor Army of Taixia Country in the Lion Fortress. May I know your name?"

"Cui Li!"

"Is it the first time for you to come here?"

"Yes!"

"Are you interested in joining Black Armor Army?" Wu Guanhai put it straight, "Our Black Armor Army is powerful with a good treatment and rich human resources. How about that?"

"I've been used to be free, no interest!" Zhang Tie refused directly.

After hearing this reply, Wu Guanhai became dumbfounded. Closely after that, he burst out into laughter, "It doesn't matter if you're not interested in it for the time being. If you want to join us, you can consider my suggestion! If you met someone tricky in the Lion Fortress, you could go to the Black Fortress of Black Armor Army to seek for my help..."

"Okay, thank you!"

Closely after the conversation with Wu Guanhai, Zhang Tie turned around and entered the gate.

Watching Zhang Tie's amazing performance in the distance, the "young sister" flickered her eyes. However, the moment she recalled what Zhang Tie asked her above the ground, she gritted her teeth and stomped to the ground before leaving away...

After entering the Lion Fortress, Zhang Tie caught sight of the map of Lion Fortress on the metal wall being not far from the gate

of the fortress.

After throwing a glance at the map, most of the new arrivers would head for the Task Center of Knights in the fortress, except for Zhang Tie who walked towards another direction after bearing the map in mind.

Although it was pretty cold outside, it was warm inside. In the fortress, many underground plants and woods were standing on both sides of the broads streets, which looked pretty vigorous.

It was pretty boisterous in the fortress. After entering the fortress, the 100-odd new knights instantly became trivial like a drop of water entering the ocean.

Besides knights, many logistical personnel and subsidiary fighters were inside the fortress, none of them were below Class 6 according to Zhang Tie's observation.

People came and went on the streets. Logistical personnel was in red military uniforms with military ranks. Their identity was also a soldier. By contrast, those subsidiary fighters were in grey-green uniforms. The two kinds of soldiers were very easily distinguished.

Besides the above two kinds of servicemen, there were all sorts of knights who were riding underground dragons, in helmets and armors, in exotic costumes or in common clothes across the Lion Fortress who came from Taixia Country and all the other subcontinents or continents.

Most of the human knights were gathering in the Lion Fortress. However, even though there were so many human knights, plus the logistical personnel and subsidiary fighters, this fortress could still not be as bustling as common human cities unless it contained millions of people. However, there were only a bit more than 1 million people in the entire Lion Fortress.

The holy war was like a raging fire. The number of human knights in Lion Fortress also reached a peak. According to Zhang

Tie's knowledge, a lot of knights of Taixia's armies had been dispatched to the Lion Fortress to fight demons in turns. At this moment, the number of human knights in the entire Lion Fortress had broken 50,000 for the first time.

As for the human knights here, besides those from Taixia Country, the others were coming from subcontinents or the Western Continent. From a certain perspective, Lion Fortress was the center of human knights.

The fortress was filled with a powerful and mysterious strength that originated from the golden pyramid. Even earth knights and shadow knights could not fly in the fortress. The entire fortress was a no-fly zone. Those who could fly in this fortress were all heavenly knights who had formed the chakra of the wind element. They were the most powerful humans in this world.

In this situation, Zhang Tie could only walk towards his destination.

In the fortress, Zhang Tie also caught sight of the prototype of Jia land in Class A Cities of Taixia Country. In the fortress, the wide area of Jia land in the fortress was like woods and was taken care of by logistical personnel in red uniforms.

The crops above the ground could not grow in the fortress. Therefore, mainly three crops were planted inside the fortress: the first crop was about 3.5 m in height which looked like coconut palm. Its fruit was like a long bread; the second crop was a huge mushroom which looked like sunshade above the ground; the third crop was lower, whose fruit was like a grey watermelon. Zhang Tie didn't know what they were.

Zhang Tie felt everything was strange inside the fortress.

...

After twenty minutes, Zhang Tie stopped in front of a huge 21-storey tower.

There was a brand hanging outside the tower, which wrote Mountain of Brightness.

Many people were accessing this tower hurriedly.

After entering the lobby of the tower, Zhang Tie looked around before coming to a hathpace.

"I want to join the Mountain of Brightness!"

An old man with white eyebrows and mustache raised his eyes and threw a glance at Zhang Tie, "Name?"

"Cui Li!"

"Age?"

"51!"

"Background?"

"I was born in Cui family, Liuying Town at the foot of Coiling Dragon Mountain, Yongzhou Province, Taixia Country. I've not joined any sect and doesn't have any byname yet!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's reply, the old man flickered his eyes behind the hathpace and threw another serious glance at Zhang Tie, "Do you know the rules of receiving the knight's crystal plate from here?"

Zhang Tie replied with a smile, "Of course, the price of the knight's crystal plate is millions of gold coins. Although the revenue of the land at my home is not small, it will cost me at least 10,000 years to afford a knight's crystal plate. Although I don't know how to make money, I don't want to do evil things either. Therefore, I came here. I was told that the knight's crystal plate is free here. However, I have to defend the Lion Fortress for 3 years after receiving the crystal plate!"

"Do you agree?"

"Of course, I agree. I'm here to strive for my bright future."

"Show me your right hand..."

Zhang Tie stretched his right hand. Like how the old man in the pawnshop of Tianfang City did, this old man started to pinch each finger and joint of Zhang Tie's right hand carefully.

When Zhang Tie accepted such a check last time, he didn't know the old man's purpose; later on, he finally understood that the old man was confirming his bone grains.

The one who had already received the knight's crystal plate would not receive another one anymore.

However, Zhang Tie was not worried about that. Of course, with his body-changing immortal bloodline, Zhang Tie could change his bone grains completely.

As was imagined, after pinching Zhang Tie's bone grains, the old man turned around and moved his lips as if he was talking something to the one behind him in a secret way or let the buddy behind him inquire and verify that Zhang Tie's bone grains were exclusive. After waiting a few minutes quietly, the old man nodded as he took out a knight's crystal plate from behind the counter and pierced Zhang Tie's finger with a needle, squeezing a drop of blood onto the dragon's eye of the knight's crystal plate. Closely after that, the knight's crystal plate turned blue.

"Inject your spiritual energy into the crystal plate!"

Zhang Tie injected some spiritual energy into it. After the knight's crystal plate became illuminant, a looming dragon-shaped light image appeared. After flying around the crystal plate for one circle, it entered the crystal plate and lit 28 scales on the crystal plate at once.

As for a black iron knight who had just received the knight's crystal plate, it was not an exaggeration that he had lit 28 scales. Many lonely cultivators didn't join the Mountain of Brightness until they promoted to earth knights.

——West Mountain Barbarian.

It was Zhang Tie's new byname in the Mountain of Brightness.

After leaving the Mountain of Brightness, Zhang Tie directly walked towards the Task Center of Knights in Lion Fortress...

Chapter 907: Zhang Tie's Counter-attack

"As a Class 1 garrison knight of Lion Fortress, one could gain 6 earth-elements crystals per month. However, if you choose to be a Class 2 garrison knight, when you gain the maximal freedom, you could only gain 2 earth-elements crystals per month. Precisely, if you just stay in Lion Fortress for 3 days per month and spend 27 days outside, your effective time is only 3 days while the rest 27 days could not be included into the effective time for you to receive earth-elements crystals. Am I clear? Only when you stay in the Lion Fortress could you be regarded as fulfilling your duties and receive your gains. If you left the Lion Fortress, your work would be ineffective. Of course, if you like, you could apply for degrading to Class 1 garrison knight in the Task Center of Knights at any time. As Class 1 garrison knights have to execute their tasks each month, they would have less freedom. As a reward, they would have more earth-elements crystals. Additionally, many tasks being distributed to Class 1 garrison knights are matched with extra rewards of earth-element crystals..."

"In Lion Fortress, we have to follow the military laws of Taixia Country. Although the contents of the laws are over complicated, you only need to keep a sentence in mind——Life for Life, money for money. The logistical personnel and subsidiary fighters in the fortress enjoy the same human rights as knights. There were many cases that knights from other subcontinents killed logistical personnel and subsidiary fighters due to various reasons. As for such cases, no matter how many chakras had the knights formed, they had to die without any exception or preferential treatment. Even a Hua commoner could not be insulted by knights from other subcontinents, not to mention the soldiers of Taixia Country in the fortress."

"Female is a scarce resource in Lion Fortress. Therefore, after you fall in love with any beauty among the logistical personnel,

although you have the right to pursue her, don't violate her will; otherwise, you would face a tragedy for sure. It's not worthy for you to do that."

"As for the three fruits that you've already seen, they are breadfruit tree, nutritious mushroom and watermelon. They're the food of all the people in the fortress. As a Class 2 garrison knight, you could have one breadfruit, 0.5 kg nutritious mushroom and 0.5 kg watermelon a day when you stay in the fortress. From tomorrow onward, you could receive them from the supply point. If you have your own food or could gain food and materials from outside the Lion Fortress, you could exchange these fruits for consumption points in the fortress. With consumption points, you could consume in the bars of the fortress or purchase some daily-use products such as clothes and shoes. Many items and materials in the fortress are in relatively urgent demand. Because these items should be carried from the floating airboat above the ground, they would not be provided for knights freely."

"There are two general currencies in the fortress: consumption points and elements crystals such as earth-elements crystals, water-elements crystals and wind-elements crystals, the exchange rate between every two kinds of element crystals from low to high is 1:6. Golds and silvers are not available in the fortress, those who could come here would not lack those common objects above the ground!"

"The earth-elements realm is very large, it's almost like a complete world. The Lion Fortress is the pass from the earth-elements realm to the Eastern Continent. If you want to leave the Lion Fortress, I suggest you to study the map of the earth-elements realm near the fortress. Before being completely familiar with the map, you'd better not deepen into the region being far away from the Lion Fortress. Even if you want, you'd better go there with the other knights. The topography in earth-elements realm is very complex, besides plains which are similar to those above the

ground, there're various abysses and underground caves. Compared to the earth's surface, more regions in earth-elements realm have not been explored, which might contain precious mineral resources and pre-historical items. This is also why many people are attracted to the earth-elements realm."

"In the Tower of Brilliance, you could see the tasks distributed to Class 2 garrison knights, which are always matched with three rewards: earth-elements crystals, consumption points and meritorious deed points. There're many kinds of tasks. As for Class 2 garrison knights, the fastest and most effective way to gain the above three rewards is to kill demon knights in the earth-elements realm. Of course, besides demon knights, there're many dangerous things in the earth-elements realm too. Since the beginning of the holy war, over 20 Class 2 garrison knights disappeared out of no reason each year. Watch out yourself."

After hearing that even knights would disappear out of no reason, Zhang Tie stopped walking, closely followed by that man in a red military uniform with the rank of major who had been introducing for him all the way. After turning around, he asked Zhang Tie, "What's wrong?"

"Class 2 garrison knights disappeared out of no reason when executing common tasks?" Zhang Tie repeated with an emphasis.

"Yes!"

"Haven't you investigated that?" Zhang Tie frowned.

"We did; however, we got no result. The only conclusion was that they might have died. After all, we're in the earth-elements realm. There're many fatal factors such as being ambushed by demon knights, a sudden encounter with senior demon knights or high-level mutated beasts or being in dilemma, etc.. Of course, we didn't exclude other possibilities. After all, too many knights come here from all walks from life. Wherever there are humans, there will be conflicts. If there're disputes between garrison knights in the Lion

Fortress, they could seek for a solution in courts of arbitration. If the courts of arbitration could not handle their disputes, they could fight in the Heavenly Ball of the Battle Simulation Tower. If they don't feel it's cool, they could have a real duel in the public. If someone wants something special, as long as they leave the fortress, they will have fewer shackles under less supervisory control. If there's no evidence, there would be no punishment. Therefore...you know, oh, I've forgotten to introduce myself to you. I'm Liu Xing, a logistical major in the Task Center of Knights in the Lion Fortress!"

"Liu Xing...the xing in haixing 1?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Yes, the xing of xingzhen 2 !" Major Liu Xing pushed his spectacle-figure upwards as he emphasized in a poetic way, "Undoubtedly, the xing in xingzhen is much more advanced than the xing in haixing."

Zhang Tie didn't pay attention to the persistence of Major Liu Xing. After hearing this name, Zhang Tie became absent-minded while a late face loomed in his mind. The owner of the face in his mind was also called Liu Xing, the first lieutenant in the Iron-blood Camp of the No. 39 Division of Iron-horn Corps of Norman Empire. He was Zhang Tie's comrade-in-arms!

After coming out of the Task Center of Knights, it took them over 10 minutes to enter a region being filled with dense metal high towers.

All the towers were higher than 200 m. Like chess pieces on the checkerboard and sharp swords and javelins pointing at the sky, they were sitting in the square exterior region of the Lion Fortress. At the sight of them, Zhang Tie knew there were at least 1,000 towers.

This was the residential area of black iron knights who defended the Lion Fortress.

In a farther place, there were some towers higher than 500 m,

which were the residences of earth knights who defended the Lion Fortress.

The closer they were to the core region, the higher the towers would be.

When Zhang Tie passed by this region, he saw a piece of metal number plate at the entrance of each tower.

Major Liu Xing soon led Zhang Tie to a high tower marked Black D 1607.

Pointing at it, Major Liu Xing said, "Here's your residence. The key to this residence is the metal plate that you've got from the Task Center. Besides, the metal plate is the receipt of your consumption points in the Lion Fortress and your identification certificate to access to the fortress. When you enter the fortress, don't forget to register outside the gate. If not, you will have less earth-elements crystals than you could imagine. By then, you'd better not complain about others."

When Major Liu Xing introduced, Zhang Tie had already taken out that palm-sized metal plate and inserted it into the metal gate. He then screwed it like screwing a key, causing the gate to open quietly.

The moment the gate was opened, a familiar qi of element-gathering matrix had spilled out of the tower. Zhang Tie was slightly shocked.

Zhang Tie entered it. However, Major Liu Xing just stood outside the tower, "Whether do you want to take a rest or continue to let me show you around the Lion Fortress? Besides the Battle Simulation Tower and the Knight's Bar, there're many more places where knights would be interested in..."

"No need, thank you. I've been tired after traveling for a day. I want to take a rest. I will visit the other places myself when I'm free. Oh, how do I find you?"

"When you're in the Lion Fortress, if you have any problem that needs to be handled by the logistics department of the fortress, just leave a memo in the memo box behind the gate. The logistical personnel would collect it everyday. The logistics department could meet all your reasonable demands!"

Zhang Tie caught sight of the tiny memo box behind the metal gate right away. The memo box had two mouths, one outside, from where memos could be put in and be seen by Zhang Tie from inside, one inside, from where memos could be put in by Zhang Tie and be seen by logistical personnel such as Liu Xing who had the key of the box.

This design was convenient and practicable.

"Okay, I know! Zhang Tie nodded. The logistical personnel of the Lion Fortress was a bit like the butlers in the fortress or servicemen in hotels, who could help knights solve many trifles.

"What else can I do for you?"

"Nothing else, oh, you've got a good name!"

After being slightly shocked, Major Liu Xing replied, "Thanks!"

"Well, I will enter cultivation for a few days." Zhang Tie revealed a faint smile on his fierce face. Closely after that, he closed the gate from inside.

After revealing a smile, Major Liuxing left...

In his knight's tower, Zhang Tie dropped the luggage that he had been holding all the way and looked around the tower in a customary way.

The knight's tower was composed of 3 floors. The area of each floor gradually decreased starting from the first floor. The first floor was the parlor being covered with a lot of items; the second floor was his bedroom and washroom while the third floor was a cultivation room.

All the furnishings in the room were brand new and simple. There was nothing but basic daily-use products in the room. Zhang Tie could not even find a dagger.

In the cultivation room, Zhang Tie felt that the qi of elements-gathering matrix was passed downwards from the triangular top of the knight's tower, which looked like a very special elements-gathering matrix. Additionally, this elements-gathering matrix was much more powerful than Zhang Tie's private one.

Many basic structures in the knight's tower were made of metals just like the materials of the tower. They were so solid that they could not even be destroyed by knights. It seemed that those basic structures directly grew out of the knight's tower. For instance, Zhang Tie didn't see any pipe in the knight's tower even across the fortress; however, the moment he opened the fusiform water faucet, he would see limpid water flowing out of it.

Water would not come out of the void. Therefore, the water pipes must have been inlaid in the knight's tower, the walls of this fortress and underground in advance.

Therefore, Zhang Tie guessed that each building and the high tower across the Lion Fortress must have been integrated with this fortress in an organic way. Just like how the trunk was connected with the tree leaves, each building and the high tower was a part of the precision system.

Zhang Tie could not imagine how was such a magnificent complex be accomplished.

Among all the things that Zhang Tie had ever seen, only the Palace Tree was similar to the Lion Fortress. All the things inside the Palace Tree were integrated with each other, which grew out of there themselves, leaving no artificial trace just like many places in the Lion Fortress.

'Did the Lion Fortress also grow out of an exotic seed like the Palace Tree?'

Zhang Tie felt it was amazing when this whim occurred to his mind.

After being familiar with the internal environment of his knight's tower, Zhang Tie went upstairs to the cultivation room on the 3rd floor.

In the cultivation room, Zhang Tie took out the knight's crystal plate from Castle of Black Iron which belonged to his original body and had the byname of Chakra's Lion.

'It's time to make a counter-attack...'

Zhang Tie didn't have any concern at this moment...

'Eye for eye!'

'Those people and forces who framed me could never imagine that I would survive their trap.'

'As long as I'm still alive, they have to pay for what they did.'

'The Supreme Court of Taixia Country implement laws strictly. They declare people guilty only by evidence. Although I could not present any evidence for my innocence, it doesn't matter, as sometimes evidence is not that important. The Supreme Court is just one power of Taixia Country; there are powers which are greater than the Supreme Court in Taixia Country.'

'For instance, does my master Zhao Yuan need any motherf*cking evidence if he wants someone die?'

'Of course not, they would make choices according to their own judgments instead of relying on evidence.'

'Big figures rely on personal judgments instead of evidence!'

'Evidences are stagnated and might be false; however, judgments are transcendental, which are the combination of one's wisdom and experiences.'

'All the big figures are very confident.'

'That's enough!'

Zhang Tie logged on the Mountain of Brightness by his knight's crystal plate and accessed to the forum of knights.

'Only when human knights who have been confirmed to betray humans could the link between the knight's crystal plate and the Mountain of Brightness be canceled off and terminated. Although I've been wanted, I didn't betray humans; therefore, my identity as the Chakra's Lion is still available in Mountain of Brightness.'

It was Zhang Tie's first time to post on the forum of knights in Mountain of Brightness.

After recovering his composure, it took Zhang Tie a few hours to finish a sentimental article.

Before releasing it, Zhang Tie named it—"The Truth of the Tragedy in Fuhai City".

"Castle Lord, please change one title!" Heller's voice sounded in Zhang Tie's mind.

"Change one?"

"Yup, although this title points to the purport of this article, it's not eye-catching. We need an attractive title so that those who had noticed the title would continue to read its contents out of curiosity. What you're doing was like someone posting on an online forum before the Catastrophe. Do you know that a party was also rampant online before the Catastrophe?"

"What's that?" Every time Zhang heard the word "party" would he recall the Gobbling Party.

"Title Party!"

"Title Party?"

After listening to Heller's serious introduction about the Title Party, Zhang Tie thought through right away...

'What a party!'

After thinking for quite a while, Zhang Tie finally fixed the main title.

"The inscription on the gravestone of the despicable: from the dean of a provincial court and a gentleman to a major criminal and obscene devil in Taixia Country——my half year in Taixia Country"

Followed by a subtitle below——"Being attached with a lot of first-hand precious secret news and the secret of a shadow demon in Heavenly Reaching Church"

Author: Zhang Tie, Zhang Mushen, the Chakra's Lion.

Reading mode——free

...

This article soon appeared in the Mountain of Brightness...

After absorbing 4 earth-element crystals in 2 hours, Zhang Tie reviewed the article and found it had been browsed over 500 times...

Chapter 908: The Inscription on the Gravestone of the Despicable——Excerpt 1

I was born in a remote place in Waii Subcontinent——Blackhot City of Andaman Alliance.

Andaman Alliance was a very small alliance of cities. The total urban area of this alliance might not even match that of Class A city in Taixia Country. Of course, you could not find knights in this alliance.

Before the holy war, Andaman Alliance had been annexed by Norman Empire. My hometown Blackhot City also became a Class D city in Brunswick Province under the governance of the governor of the north border of Norman Empire. Even though before Andaman Alliance was annexed, many people who lived in the prosperous cities of Waii Subcontinent still didn't know about the location of Blackhot City of Andaman Alliance.

Not to mention those Hua people who lived in the prosperous and powerful Taixia Country.

I was a grassroots knight who grew up from a trivial person in such a remote place.

Why do I feel that I'm a grassroots knight? The most important point is that I didn't know that there was any relationship between me and Huaiyuan Palace which shocked the entire Waii Subcontinent until I was 16.

When I was young, a copper coin meant half a bowl of rice brew. My mom supported our family by making and selling rice brew. My dad worked in a steel mill. I remember that my dad's one year's salary was 12 gold coins at that time, which could barely survive the family of 4 even in Blackhot City. Our family was very frugal at that time.

Previously, we should have five family members. Pitifully, before

I came to this world, one of my elder brothers had sacrificed in a battle between Andaman Alliance and the surrounding forces in the status of a common soldier of Andaman Alliance. After that guy left our family in a very irresponsible way, I came to this world.

I think they might want me to have a longer longevity instead of just leaving the family like my elder brother; therefore, they named me Zhang Tie.

Compared to the official name Zhang Mushen, I prefer the pet name. The name Zhang Tie is very basic.

Although tie is not valuable, it's very hard. Therefore, this word reflects my life experience since I was born to the present.

...

My mom used to instruct me—to be a good person; instead of being a big figure!

I have been trying my best to be a good person since I was young.

When I was young, I didn't even understand the meaning of a good person. However, when I sent the remaining rice soup to the orphanage in Blackhot City by tricycle for the first time and saw the naive smiles of those orphans and my mom's reassuring smile, I had learned a preliminary definition of a good person—a good person was like those who could send remaining rice soup to orphanage.

The Grandma Teresa in the orphanage also touched my head and said I was a good person.

At that moment, I was confident that I would be a good person for the rest of my life.

I've not imagined that my wish to be a good person would be shattered after I came to Taixia for less than half a year. I'm now a totally heinous bad guy.

...

It's too difficult to be a good person; especially a good person who's favored by everyone else. Additionally, a good person wouldn't necessarily win people's respect or praise.

Sometimes, I wanted to be a bad guy too.

It was also in Blackhot City when I wanted to be a bad guy for the first time. It was in the Iron Thorns Fighting Club.

...

After finding out that I could bear being beaten at school, Captain Kerlin the military representative and director of the Seventh National Male Middle School in Blackhot City introduced a promising job to me in the fighting club out of pity and "kindness".

I still remember Captain Kerlin's words which he said that day.

"I have a precious part-time social practice position for you. It's highly paid. Besides, you could touch many rich and influential figures and broaden your horizon. If you could do a good job, you will improve your battle strength greatly. You could even have a chance to contact with those beauties over there. Many people begged me for that job; however, I disagreed; I find you're the most proper person for this job!"

When I heard these words at the beginning, I felt that Captain Kerlin was the most lovable person in this world. I felt that the halos of a good person finally brought me a good luck and I saw a narrow chance for me to improve my poor life.

At that moment, I was doing a part-time job in a grocery as an apprentice in Blackhot City. The boss of the grocery was a miser. I didn't gain any pay after 2 years of job.

When in the Seventh National Male Middle School in Blackhot City, all the male students in their puberty became wild animals being dominated by male hormone.

At school, we didn't call each other students; instead, we called each other animals.

Therefore, I desired about this job through which I could make money, enjoying beauties and "have an intimate contact with beauties".

The location of this job was Avenue Bright, the most prosperous place in Blackhot City.

I felt that I was going to have a bright future.

...

On the next day since Captain Kerlin introduced that job to me, with a nervous yet ambitious feeling, I came to the Avenue Bright. Holding my breath, I entered the gate of the Iron Thorns Fighting Club which was guarded by warriors in armor.

A beauty was standing behind the counter of the lobby. At her 20s, she wore a black tight vest and a pair of white tight sweatpants with a ponytail. At the sight of her genial smile and air of youth, my heart had started to pound.

This woman was called Mary, the first female who drove me to be a bad guy.

After knowing that I was here to apply for a job in the fighting club, she came out of the counter and led me to the manager's room.

Walking behind her and watching her "twisting" butt, a wildfire of hope to be a real man started to burn in my heart. Closely after that, I stammered, "Hi...hello, I...I am Zhang Tie, what's your name?"

I think my voice must be trembling at that moment.

Mary stopped as she threw a glance at my face and my clothes which indicated my identity and background, with an icy and ironical eye light she said, "Actually, you don't have to know my

name. Although we're all here to make money, you should know that there would be no relationship between you and me for the rest of our lives. Stop daydreaming..."

What a shame!

After hearing this reply, my face turned pale. My heart ached as if it was stabbed by someone. In a split second, I didn't know how should I respond to her. Perhaps, I should face her in a mild and calm way; however, with a complex mood combining fury which was caused by being despised and braveness, I forcefully caught her shoulders and pushed her against the wall. When she was scared so much that she even became flurried, I thrust my waist and hit her twice in the form of "piston movement". At the same time, I told her furiously that I would definitely let her crawl to me and beg me to f*ck her one day.

This obscene movement could never be made by a good person.

Such words could not be told to a 20-year old beauty by a good person either.

I felt that I was a bad guy; therefore, I was pretty scared inside.

Luckily, Mary didn't shout loudly. Although she despised me furiously, she still led me to the manager's office.

It was my first time to be a bad guy who let such a beautiful girl feel shameful and hide her distant and derisive face.

In the manager's office, I saw the manager of this fighting club and learned about the "promising job"—highly paid, improving physical health, having intimate contacts with big figures and broaden my horizon in a high-end place.

It was called a ladder player, which had another name in the fighting club—human flesh bag! Those rich people in the fighting club didn't feel cool to only hit sandbags; they required a mobile sandbag for their exercise. I was the very mobile sandbag.

The working time of this part-time job was 6 pm to 11 pm on

Monday, Wednesday and Friday. The compensation per hour was 70 copper coins. If I was late on the very day, the compensation for the very day would be deducted. The compensation would be paid weekly. I might get a tip from guests.

On the day I went there, a human flesh bag had just resigned; therefore, in order to keep me, the manager added 10 more copper coins per hour for me.

80 copper coins per hour! I adopted it willingly even though my job was to be beaten by others!

It was my first paid job.

During the first time, I was hit and passed out in the fighting club the moment the training started. I gradually woke up after being carried out of the training room.

It was too late when I went back home that night. My father asked me the reason.

I told him that my teacher introduced a highly paid part-time job for me. I could contact a lot of rich and powerful person through this job. When I was free, I could even do physical exercises. Additionally, there were many beauties over there. I even met a beauty who praised me that I was ambitious and a daydreamer!

My dad and mom burst out into laughter at the same time.

...

Now, I see, this encounter with Mary in the fighting club might be the premonition of my current encounter, through which, the Almighty God wanted to show me a point.

—At a point in my life, a woman changed me from a good person to a bad person.

Mary was the first one, but not the last.

Chapter 909: The Inscription on the Gravestone of the Despicable——Excerpt 2

When I saw Mary last time, she was more beautiful than ever. After I left the fighting club for a few hours, everything had changed.

That woman might have not fully understood the significance of the status of an officer of Norman Empire in a place being occupied by Norman Empire.

The young master of Gregory family didn't know about that a few hours ago; however, he understood it too after a few hours.

It was too late that night while almost nobody could be seen on the streets. The night wind felt chilly.

Quivering all over, Mary stood in front of my apartment like a princess who was going to attend a ball and a gift being wrapped by a crystal bobtail. Together with her was Pawano the old butler of Gregory family. The old man looked elegant and meticulous in a black swallowtail.

In the eyes of commoners in Blackhot City, the status of the butler of Gregory family was paramount, which could shatter a commoner's life and family easily.

On behalf of Gregory family, Pavano apologized to me a few hours ago and expressed that Mary was Gregory family's gift to me.

Under the gaze of the dignified old butler, Mary quivered and stammered what I expected her to say in front of me, which was shameful for a woman.

Previously, I thought that I should be pleasant at that moment; however, when that woman entered my apartment and dropped her tears like a lamb entering the slaughterhouse, I found that I was not cold-blooded enough; neither could I gain any sense of achievement or pleasant sensation from her sadness and despair.

Actually, when I saw her standing outside my apartment, I had already forgiven her. The conflict between me and her was a bit ridiculous——when a woman was selling her youth and beautiful look at a high price in the counter, all of a sudden, she received the inquiry of a poor lad. Being afraid of lowering her level, of course, the woman would feel disgusting. Her reply to me at that moment could be simply translated as "You cannot afford me!" It was more straightforward than being impolite. Just like how one was forbidden in a high-end restaurant in shabby clothes.

It had nothing to do with self-esteem; it was just a matter of personal habit.

I thought it through. Therefore, I made a cup of liquor for her to make her warm up. Under her unbelievable eyes, I even apologized to her for my rude behavior in the fighting club. We were on a tie.

That evening, I told her to sleep overnight in the guest room of my apartment. I slept in my own bedroom.

When I woke up on the second morning, I found she had gone, leaving a sentence on the glass of my guest room by her lipstick——Thank you, but I hate you!

By then, I realized that women were like strange animals. Sometimes, when you wanted to have sex with her, she would feel being insulted; sometimes, when you didn't want to have sex with her, she would feel being insulted too.

I felt that women were all sick.

The more beautiful the woman was, the sicker she would be.

...

...

Later on, I didn't see her anymore even though I left Waii Subcontinent after the blackhot City and Norman Empire were ruined by demons.

To tell the truth, I had to appreciate her. It was she who drove me forward.

Later on, I learned from another woman whom I loved yet finally lost that—One would feel happy with the beloved one on your side; one would grow mature after losing the beloved one. No matter whether one could gain or lose one's love, just take it a blessing in one's life.

Mary was a blessing in my life.

Therefore, no matter whether she could read this article or not, I have to bless her and hope her to meet the one who could indeed treasure her and buy her away in terms of happiness.

Until I came to Taixia Country did I understand another truth—not everything that one loses is a blessing.

If you treated losing something as a blessing, you've already relieved your vigilance. Someone would set a fatal trap for you by this blessing.

...

...

When I fought demons fiercely in Selnes Theater of Operations of Waii Subcontinent and insisted on fighting them in the north of Kalay Mountain Range of Waii Subcontinent after the defense line of Selnes Theater of Operations was collapsed, my family members had safely and smoothly arrived at Yingzhou Province, Taixia Country and settled down in Fuhai City for the time being.

I have 3 babies.

The marriage between Fan family's daughter and I was also engaged by our parents on both sides at that moment.

...

...

On March 2nd, the 900th year of Black Iron Calendar, my family

members bid a farewell to me in the Zhang manor in Golden Light City, waiting for me to marry the daughter of Director Fan's daughter in Fuhai City, Yingzhou Province.

With my excellent performance on inflicting heavy losses in the Heavenly Reaching Church and in the competition for the provincial governor of Youzhou Province, the name of Zhang Tie, Zhang Mushen, the dean of provincial court in Youzhou Province spread out of Youzhou Province for the first time. My mother said that Fan family was urging the marriage.

As for such an engagement, the male party could not feel sorry for the female party; additionally, the female had waited for me so many years. This marriage was destined to be accomplished.

I was too ambitious and pleasant at that moment because I didn't fall in the wrestle with the Gobbling Party and the demons.

I just took this journey to Yingzhou as a chance to relax myself.

I had not seen the look of Director Fan's daughter. Whatever, as long as she was virtuous and not ugly.

In the last few years in Waii Subcontinent, the all-purpose medicament produced by Zhang family played a great role in the holy war. It was even taken as strategical storage and hard currency by many countries. Therefore, I intended to extend the business of Jinwu Business Group in Yingzhou Province by chance. As the old saying went, benefits should always be kept for one's own people, now that I would marry the daughter of Director Fan, Fan family would be our ideal agency in Yingzhou Province for selling all-purpose medicament. I went there with 200,000 vials of all-purpose medicament as a gift.

As it was a personal affair, I didn't keep it a secret. Therefore, the moment I left Youzhou Province, those who paid attention to me should have known it.

...

...

The moment I arrived at Fuhai City, I was told that the Gobbling Party had a very great influence in Yingzhou Province.

When I arrived at Fuhai City, I lived in the Heavenly No. 7 suite of Guanlanhu Hotel in Fuhai City. The moment I prepared to take a rest, a head of the Morality Association of the Gobbling Party in Fuhai City called Yang Yushan had arrived at the hotel and intended to pay a visit to me.

I knew it was a threat. Therefore, I felt sick.

After ignoring Yang Yushan for a few hours, I finally received him.

Until now, I could still tell you frankly that I disliked him even though that guy was already dead.

The moment Yang Yushan saw me, he had started to blame me for being ill-mannered.

I was a knight; Yang Yushan was not even a LV 9 fighter. How could a guy below LV 9 blame a knight for being ill-mannered the moment he saw the latter? Is this the etiquette advocated by the Gobbling Party? How audacious he was! How could a guy who was not even qualified to raise shoes for a knight on the battlefield blame a knight in a domineering manner in the name of the Gobbling Party?

Except for Taixia Country, which head of a nongovernmental organization below LV 9 could blame a knight across all the human countries?

Ignoring one's respect; offending the superiors; borrowing power to do evil. If such a Gobbling Party could represent the heavenly laws, the heavenly laws are nothing but sh*t in my eyes.

Yang Yushan brought me the solution of the conflict between the Gobbling Party and I—I had to join the Gobbling Party and take responsibility for rebuilding the morality association in Youzhou

Province as the head of new morality association in Youzhou Province on behalf of the Gobbling Party.

As the offspring of Lord Huaiyuan, I gave Yang Yushan a solution too——tell the leaders of the Gobbling Party to kowtow three times in front of the memorial tablet of Lord Huaiyuan and admit that they were wrong loudly before dissolving the Gobbling Party!

You wanted to bargain with me or boast with me?

...

...

It was not a compromise, it was just a plan that the force of the Gobbling Party in Yingzhou Province made to smack my face.

If you were me, would you promise him?

Of course, Yang Yushan left angrily.

Soon after Yang Yushan left, I had received a message from Director Fan's mansion——Director Fan felt uncomfortable. He didn't want to see me tomorrow.

I had already foreboded that this marriage might be ruined at that moment.

...

2 days later, I went to see Director Fan in his mansion.

As I had predicted, this marriage was ruined.

Facing the great stress of the Gobbling Party, Fan family in Yingzhou Province chose to break off the engagement. I was not shocked by such a result at all. As an elder of Huaiyuan Palace, I knew what a choice clan would make in this situation——Unless being foolish, the clan elders would never agree with such an engagement at the risk of standing on the opposite side of the Gobbling Party.

I understood Fan family's choice very well.

However, it didn't mean that I was happy.

Although being infuriated at that moment, I didn't feel ill. I was infuriated about being smacked by the Gobbling Party in Fuhai City. I didn't feel ill because I had not seen the daughter of Director Fan at all. That woman was just a strange symbol in my mind. I didn't involve any affection in her. To be honest, after experiencing so many things, although it's a bit shameless and exaggerated to say I've read a lot of women, I was not that innocent teenager who would feel depressed because of a woman's words in the fighting club anymore.

I just felt that a good business was blown by someone; of course, I would revenge the one who had blown the good business.

After staying in Fan Mansion a few minutes and making Director Fan reassured, I had left Fan Mansion. After that, I went to the Morality Association in Fuhai City and smacked their face.

As the old saying went, it's never too late for a gentleman to revenge. However, if the target was right in front of me, I would think about revenging him all day long.

It was a loud smack on the Morality Association in Fuhai City. Outside the pavilion of Morality Association, I stomped to the ground in front of the backbones of the Morality Association three times, collapsing the pavilion. Two people of Qin family were in the Morality Association, Qin Wu and the young master of Qin family.

When the group of people was escaping in an embarrassed way, I burst out into laughter. After leaving Fuhai City, I felt a bit pleasant as I had already revenged the Gobbling Party.

I was just forced to break off the engagement with a woman whom I had not met at all. It was nothing serious for me.

It's hard to get a lover in the world.

I treat the power as sh*t and ignore the ridicule of the powerful

ones.

You're just passers in my life, I will not return when I leave.

If I could marry beloved ones, I prefer to be a farmer.

I will graze cattle in the morning and come back with wildflowers.

Inserting flowers on your grey hair, I will watch the sunglow together with you.

Chapter 910: The Inscription on the Gravestone of the Despicable——Excerpt 3

In a split second, I saw a person as same as me and the one whom I had been chased all the way there from the airship being engulfed by black flames. The two people soon reduced to ashes. My heart froze at once. Before I recovered from the sudden shock, Qin Wu and the other two knights had appeared in the air and started to launch an attack towards me!

Besides Qin Wu, I even didn't know who were the other two knights, why they appeared there and attacked me.

I asked Qin Wu the reason.

Qin Wu wanted to kill me for the late young master of Qin family.

When I collapsed the pavilion of the Morality Association, Qin Wu and his young master were both there; however, until I left Fuhai City, I didn't hear that anyone was killed by the falling pavilion. Why would Qin Wu kill me for the death of his young master?

I felt something was wrong!

Especially when I recalled the one who looked as same as me and suddenly reduced to ashes in front of me.

I realized that I might've fallen into a terrifying trap.

I didn't want to fight a knight of Taixia Country to death, as I defended Qin Wu's mad attack, I kept retreating.

I thought that Qin Wu was fulfilling his responsibilities as an employed elder of Qin clan; however, the fact was that I made a ridiculous fault.

When your opponent suddenly exerted his utmost efforts to attack you with boiling battle qi, you had to launch a counter-

attack so as to protect yourself; however, in a split second, the knight who was having a close combat with you removed his protective battle qi and moved closer to your punch on purpose, have you met that?

I met that. That was what Qin Wu did to me. I wanted to defend his punch with my own punch; however, I punched his body into pieces. Actually, I've already removed 80% of my strength the moment I hit him. The remaining 20% of strength could only severely wound Qin Wu; however, Qin Wu revealed a weird flier towards me before splitting into pieces.

Qin Wu committed suicide. However, in that situation, all the other knights thought that Qin Wu was killed by me.

The moment Qin Wu died, I had heard a roar "stop..." from the sky.

Closely after that, a powerful earth knight launched an attack towards me.

After Qin Wu's death, I lost my last chance to clarify my innocence.

Until a furious earth knight wanted to kill me, I still didn't know why I suddenly mired in such a dilemma and was besieged by strange knights when I was eating hotpot in the airship. What made me more confused was that the earth knight said he was cleaning up the dreg for Huaiyuan Palace.

I wanted to swear whether this father had abducted your daughter or dug your ancestral grave and where the motherf*cking did he come from.

Later on, I knew that earth knight was Feng Yuelun the Cheji General of Yingzhou Province.

However, with his one blow, I had been heavily wounded.

Before his second blow arrived, I released an explosive light bomb from my portable space-teleportation equipment and

escaped at the critical moment.

...

I hid in a secret place as I didn't want to die out of no reason.

After recovering my wounds, I changed a look and came to Fuhai City. I wanted to figure out what happened in Fuhai City after I left there and why I suddenly became a public enemy in Taixia Country.

As to what happened later, you've already known.

I also figured out why the two knights suddenly reduced to ashes in front of me.

Is it ironical? I should learn what "I" did in Fuhai City from others.

After that, I became a heinous wanted criminal, an abnormal guy who was possessed by the devil after being forced to break off the engagement with Fan family.

There were all sorts of evidence about my crimes everywhere.

However, I didn't have any evidence to prove my innocence. Just like how a lion falling into the trap could not have a ladder to climb out of there, I also couldn't prove that the one who made the crimes was not the real me.

The two knights had been applied with the Bloody Demon Imitation Method; therefore, they suddenly reduced to ashes in front of me. I'm already satisfied to be attacked by a knight who has formed three chakras.

However, I am not the criminal, no matter how similar he looked to me.

...

Director Fan, as you're still alive, do you remember how that b*stard insulted your daughter?

Although I was not at the scene, I'm sure that the criminal was not naked at that moment! Do you know why? Although he could imitate my look, he could not imitate my skin. As he didn't know whether I had a birthmark, scar or tattoo on my skin, he dared not expose his skin in case of any loophole.

Neither did he leave any body liquid which could be used to authenticate his identity in case of any loophole. Therefore, I lost another chance to prove my innocence.

Yes, I was possessed by the devil. I was lunatic. However, I stood to not ejaculate at that moment. Do you admire me?

The b*stard penetrated through your left chest by his battle qi; however, as your heart was in the right chest, you finally survived. You were sure that the one was me because you saw his look; however, if I really wanted to kill you, I would never spare any chance for you to survive. Do you know the reason?

Simply, since I joined Huaiyuan Palace and raided the demonized puppets in the Heavenly Cold City to the Selnes Theater of Operations, I had fought numerous demonized puppets and formed a battle habit, namely, If I wanted to kill someone, I would never attack his heart; instead I would shatter his main body into pieces so that he would completely lose his moving ability or directly chop off his head.

This habit has already become my instinct just like my breath after fighting numerous demonized puppets. Common perforating wounds are not fatal to the demonized puppets. Only when you destroy their heads and main bodies could you kill them. Any veteran who has rich experience in fighting demonized puppets would form such a habit. Do you know how many demonized puppets have I killed in Heavenly Cold City, Selenes Theater of Operations and in the process of preventing the contingent of demonized puppets from moving southwards in Kalay Mountain Range?

At least 500,000 demonized puppets. Believe it or not! At the cost of the lives of 500,000 demonized puppets, this habit has been deeply branded in my bones.

As I've been possessed by the devil, I almost forgot how to kill people.

I killed your whole family; however, I didn't take off my clothes when raping your daughter? When I was thrilled by your naked daughter, I didn't leave any semen fluid? I hated Fan family so much; however, I kept your body complete? Because that b*stard looked as same as me, I became the criminal? This is the so-called fatal evidence.

...

Green Flute Hermit and the young elder of Lancang Sect, when you were attracted by the battle qi totem of Qin Wu and followed him to chase the criminal out of the Fuhai City, are you sure that the criminal was always in your sight? Whether Qin Wu was dominating the entire chasing process? Whether the criminal had gotten rid of your sight for a short while before you met me? Finally, through Qin Wu's search, you found me once again and started to launch an attack towards me without any hesitation, right?

Because you chased the criminal all the way from Fuhai City to the wilderness, when you caught sight of me, you thought I was the very criminal. In that situation, you both thought that there wouldn't be any 2nd Zhang Tie, right?

Therefore, I became the very criminal.

...

General Feng, I knew you abhor evils as deadly foes; however, when you thought that you were purifying Huaiyuan Palace, have you considered why Qin Wu died the moment you arrived?

When I "killed" Qin Wu, General Feng, Green Flute Hermit and

the young elder of Lancang Sect were all enshrouded by the boiling battle qi of Qin Wu. You didn't see clearly how Qin Wu died at all. You only saw the final result——Qin Wu split into pieces.

Undoubtedly, in your eyes, Qin Wu was killed by me.

I was possessed by the devil; I became foolish too. After escaping out of Fuhai City, I got lost; however, I moved all the way towards your camp. Therefore, after receiving the notice from Fuhai City, the moment you left your camp by airboat, you had blocked me over 500 miles away from your camp.

When in battle, the battle qi totems of knights could be seen from 350 miles away on a sunny day. Is it different than fighting and killing people outside your home?

...

I didn't know why Qin Wu and the young master of Qin family suddenly appeared in Fuhai City, because the two people should be patrolling in Yulin City, the private city of Qin family. As Qin Wu said that the young master of Qin family was killed by me and I killed Qin Wu, therefore Qin family thought the young master of Qin family was killed by me.

There was something wrong with Qin Wu!

However, I couldn't prove it because he had committed suicide.

I just want to remind the Qin family, as Qin Wu had served you for so many years, he must have known a lot of secrets of Qin family and participated in many actions of Qin family. You could completely trust Qin Wu; however, suppose Qin Wu was a member of demon or the Heavenly Breaking Church, do you know what he was going to do during these years and how many preparations had he made in Qin family?

After coming to Taixia Country, my only enemy was the Heavenly Reaching Church and the Gobbling Party.

...

Finally, I want to talk about the Gobbling Party. Fan family made the decision to break off the engagement with me under the great stress of the Gobbling Party. This is the cause of this tragedy. That night, why would Yang Yushan summon the backbones in Fuhai City after losing their face in the daytime and wait to be cleaned up by me? As a result, my crime was confirmed and Qin Wu had a chance to chase me out of Fuhai City.

Grand tutor of the heir apparent, can you prove that this event is not a gunning test that the Gobbling Party designed to kill me?

I believe that the Gobbling Party will never be so heinous because this has surpassed your bottom line after fighting Huaiyuan Palace for such a long time. I know that many members of the Gobbling Party expect me to die and uproot Huaiyuan Palace, however, this is not your style. You excel at evident plots, such as encouraging the imperial consorts in Xuanyuan Hill to attack me with words. You're thinking about catching a chance to shatter Huaiyuan Palace according to the rules in Taixia Country.

However, can you prove that no member of the Gobbling Party has taken advantage of this event or colluded with the Heavenly Reaching Church or demons in this event?

Of course, you don't need to prove it. Because you're the leader of the Gobbling Party, a heavenly knight in Taixia Country, the current grand tutor of the heir apparent and one of the top three lords in Taixia Country in the future. However, I'm just a fugitive, a guy who's lunatic and should not be trusted. You don't need to prove or make any response to my words. I'm just talking rubbish and framing you.

...

When I inflicted heavy losses on the Heavens Breaking Church in Youzhou Province at the beginning of this year and killed Master Jiang, this shadow demon who might have hidden in Taixia Country so for many years uttered a pleasant and mad sentence

before death——Your Hua people's doomsday is coming, I'm waiting for you in the hell.

Only I heard this sentence at that moment. I thought it was just a curse from a demon who was going to die. Therefore, I didn't keep it in mind.

After listening to his will, I stomped his head into pieces.

Lately, his will always rang in my ears.

...

A powerful knight who mastered the Bloody Demon Imitation Method and could not be resisted by the entire Huaiyuan Palace...

A powerful force which could let Qin Wu frame me at the cost of his life...

A terrifying force which knew that the heart of Director Fan was on his right chest through the official difference engine database of Yingzhou Province.

A former dean of the provincial court of Youzhou Province suddenly became a hot figure on the wanted list of the Supreme Court of Taixia Country...

A former gentleman suddenly became an abnormal devil...

After coming to Taixia Country for half a year, what happened to me and what was exposed to me were completely out of my imagination.

...

Being despicable is the passport of the despicable ones while being noble is the inscription on the gravestone of the noble ones.

I'm despicable; however, I have no passport. If I was killed by the powerhouses of Taixia Country one day, this article would be the inscription on my gravestone.

If there's one more Zhang Tie who proves that he has betrayed

the humans and could not use his knight's crystal plate to contact the Mountain of Brightness or leave any words in the forum of the Mountain of Brightness, don't be too amazed, because it's not difficult for them.

Who are they? Where are they hiding in?

Besides being sure that they're malicious to Taixia Country, I knew nothing about them.

Even if the sky collapsed, someone would support it for us;

I have fallen into the pit and almost been buried alive. Even though I tried my best to jump out, I could only make this far.

Well, that's all I want to say. As I have some strength left, I'm going to escape from the rest of the world...

Chapter 911: Leaving the Knight's Tower

"If I could marry beloved ones, I prefer to be a farmer.

I will graze cattle in the morning and come back with wildflowers.

Inserting flowers on your grey hair, I will watch the sunglow together with you..."

On October 11th, a woman in a brilliant red skirt was standing on the highest floor of an 18-storey brilliant pavilion in Snowblowing City, the capital city of Threespring Prefecture and watching the colorful clouds fading away in the sunset. At the same time, she kept muttering the poem that Zhang Tie released in the forum...

When she muttered the first line of the poem——It's hard to get a lover in the world. She dropped off her tears.

If not a sentimental person, how could he write such a heart-broken line?

When the wind blew, the woman's red skirt danced on the side of the handrail of the pavilion...

The youth told what he had experienced since he was in Blackhot City to the present in a casual tone in his article. The woman was like an elder sister who watched the neighboring bashful youth gradually growing mature.

Last night, when she read that "I even met a beauty who praised me that I was ambitious and a daydreamer!", she simmered with laughter.

When she read that he let the woman who had once hurt him stay one night in his apartment safe and sound before leaving, she became relaxed——thank you, but I hate you——only a woman could understand the mood of another woman at that moment. She knew that the youth was telling the truth.

How could such a mentally mature person reduce to be a devil after being forced to break off the engagement?

The front part of the article was relaxed as if he was traveling among mountains and rivers. She also accompanied the teenager all the way from Blackhot City. However, when she read what the teenager experienced in Fuhai City, she felt a killing qi—that was a terrifying, fatal trap...

After knowing that the teenager escaped successfully, she became relaxed too. By now, all the contents of that article had faded away in her mind, except for the poem and the look that she had seen in Youzhou City lately...

Watching the sunset and the stars rising, she finally let out a faint sigh before returning to the pavilion. Sitting in front of the dressing table mirror, she touched her hair on the temples with a sad look.

Although being a knight, she still had black hair all over and a brilliant face. However, where's the one who could insert flowers on her grey hair and watch the sunglow together with her? If she couldn't meet him anymore for the rest of her life, how lonely she would be and who would appreciate her beautiful look.

Taking up a white diamond and pearl headwear, she inserted it into her hair near the temple. After looking into the mirror for a short while, she changed to a more beautiful one. After taking another look at it, she picked it off once again...

After trying over 20 beautiful, luxurious diamond pearl headwears consecutively, the woman still felt lacking something.

Finally, the woman rubbed all the diamond and pearl headwears into powders. At the sight of this, the two female servants who were serving her hurriedly knelt down...

After feeling the sudden, vigorous qi in the pavilion, a figure instantly flashed in her room like a ghost.

The woman's voice turned icy at once while the majesty as the head of a family reappeared on her body.

"Go tell the sister apprentices...the event of Zhang Tie, Zhang Mushen is a bit weird, stop hunting him. Such a person will never be possessed by the devil..."

"Additionally, all the cities in Threespring Prefecture have to include all-purpose medicament of Jinwu Business Group into their storage!"

After saying that, the woman thought about something else while her voice suddenly turned resentful, "Tell Guo Wu to take someone to smash the Morality Association in the Snowblowing City..."

"Erm...the Morality Association has been smashed by people a few days ago, it's not been renovated yet..." The black shadow coughed twice before reminding her.

"Smash it again..."

"..."

...

Xuanyuan Hill, Taixia Country...

A person in a white robe was feeding golden fish leisurely and delicately on the side of a lotus pond. He didn't say anything for an hour as if he had not seen the three people behind him...

The old man was dropping lifeless doughs, which turned into tadpoles and swum vividly in the water the moment they touched the water. As a result, a shoal of golden fish constantly chased after them, arousing ripples...

Standing behind this old man, the three people's backs had been fully wet in the past hour...

After feeding the golden fish, the old man clapped his hands as he turned around and asked the three people, "Have you thought it through?"

"I...I will go to Yingzhou Province...to investigate it..." The man who had sweated most answered in a trembling voice.

The old man didn't lose his temper; however, he looked more terrifying than losing his temper when he was silent.

He had not been silent for so long in front of them.

"The manor of the Gobbling Party is too large. We should clean it. A black iron knight from Huaiyuan Palace makes me universally condemned; even the Xuanyuan Hill is shocked. Do you want me to be the laughingstock of the people?" The old man let out a sigh.

The three people oozed sweat all over as they kept quivering, "We dare not!"

"Lord Huaiyuan really has a good inheritor!" Shaking his head, the old man turned around and entered the small courtyard...

...

Shrine Palace of Fan family, Tianshui Prefecture, Yingzhou Province...

Director Fan, who had been more than 10 years elder only after a few months, was recalling what he saw that night in front of the clan elders.

"When I saw Zhang Tie, although...he was indeed raping my daughter in clothes..."

The Fan elders exchanged a glance with each other before letting out a long sigh in unison...

...

"Investigate it..." The head of Qin family was infuriated as he smashed the emerald table in front of him by one palm...

...

After a few days later, some brand girls in the brothels across Taixia Country had composed a piece of music and started to sing

the song named "The Beloved Ones" by playing pipa, a plucked stringed instrument...

"It's hard to get a lover in the world.

I treat the power as sh*t and ignore the ridicule of the powerful ones.

You're just passers in my life, I will not return when I leave.

If I could marry beloved ones, I prefer to be a farmer.

I will graze cattle in the morning and come back with wildflowers.

Inserting flowers on your grey hair, I will watch the sun glow together with you."

This song made many girls in brothels across Taixia Country to drop off their tears. They all wanted to know who created such a wonderful poem...

After reading this poem, the sentimental ones would feel more lonely...

...

After becoming a member of Title Party in the Mountain of Brightness and calmly describing his experiences in one article, Zhang Tie had started to enter cultivation.

Zhang Tie didn't feel that he was literary. This article was just a reflection of his life experience and feelings. Even though the poem originated from his true feelings.

It was useless for him to cry out a grievance. Zhang Tie didn't do that. He just wanted to show others what a man he was and had people make judgments themselves. As he could not prove that he was innocent, he could only influence others' judgments.

All those who read the article were knights in the Mountain of Brightness, all of whom had a great influence in the reality and were more above average in intelligence.

It was enough.

A knight with more than three chakras who had mastered the Bloody Demon Imitation Method.

The background of Qin Wu.

The force who could easily know the secret that Director Fan's heart was on his right chest...

All these were clues.

The evidence was not definitely the truth; however, the truth could arouse resonance among people.

This time, Zhang Tie exposed all those who had framed him to the public.

He couldn't resist those people because his ability was trivial in front of them. However, those people could only move in the dark as their power was also trivial in front of the righteous power of the humans across Taixia Country.

That was a terrifying, malignant tumor among humans in Taixia Country.

This was not only the personal resentment between Zhang Tie and those people; it was more like a public resentment between humans in Taixia Country and demons. It was unnecessary for Zhang Tie to shoulder it himself. Additionally, he couldn't shoulder it for the time being. Therefore, he shared it with other people.

As the old Hua saying went, there must be a loyal and faithful people among 10 households.

Even if 1 out of 10 knights who had browsed the article could be vigilant about those insurgents or 1 out 100 knights wanted to seek for the truth of the even in Fuhai City, they would be much more powerful than Zhang Tie and Huaiyuan Palace.

Whether Fan family or Qin family in Yingzhou would be vigilant

and reflect themselves after browsing this article. After all, whatever Zhang Tie had exposed was all genuine.

It was a pattern of self-protection and counter-attack and a warning about the crisis facing Taixia Country from a Hua knight.

It could protect Zhang Tie from two aspects: first, it could make him less wanted by the knights and Supreme Court in Taixia Country; at least they would not beat him like a rat crossing the streets; second, all the people in Taixia Country would focus on Huaiyuan Palace and his family members. If anyone wanted to revenge Huaiyuan Palace and his family members, everybody else would recall that that one was probably backed by demons; as a result, the possible attacker had to consider about the outcome of his deed.

Zhang Tie didn't expect that he could prove his innocence only by an article, the authenticity of which could not be verified. If not, it would be a laughingstock and the laws in Taixia Country would be ineffective. He hoped that he could turn into "grey" from an extremely "dark" guy in Taixia Country through this "public notice".

The Gobbling Party would make a response to this article. Although the Gobbling Party couldn't prove that they're innocent, the knights who had read the article would definitely doubt the Gobbling Party for sure. They would imagine about the role of the Gobbling Party in this event. The Gobbling Party had to prove their innocence. After all, no force could stand being framed as colluding with demons even if they were standing on the side of the top three chancellors in Taixia Country.

It was also the price that the Gobbling Party had to pay.

After all, none of the contents about the Gobbling Party in the article was fabricated. Zhang Tie's suspicion about the Gobbling Party was justified. Perhaps, the Gobbling Party would not care about Zhang Tie's opinion; however, they had to concern about the

opinion of all the knights in the Mountain of Brightness.

By the way, Zhang Tie also made an advisement for the all-purpose medicament in the article.

It was a family strategy of Zhang family to have all-purpose medicament enter the purchasing storage contents of the nationwide six warehouses in Taixia Country. It was related to the benefits of numerous generations of Zhang family. Even though he was still wanted, this strategy would be firmly executed. If this generation couldn't make it, the next generations had to make it. They would not make any compromise to that.

...

On October 10th, after coming to the Lion Fortress for 12 days, Zhang Tie ended his cultivation and opened his eyes in his knight's tower.

The reason was that he had consumed all of his earth-elements crystals.

Zhang Tie picked himself up in the cultivation room and relaxed his limbs, causing his muscles, tendons and bones to quiver and rub like plucking strings of musical instruments.

After the last earth-elements crystal turned transparent, Zhang Tie directly threw it into Castle of Black Iron. After throwing a glance at the Cui Li's crystal plate, he found that the 30th golden scale had just been lit on the new knight's crystal plate.

After putting away the new knight's crystal plate, Zhang Tie went downstairs. He took a bath in the washroom on the 2nd floor and put on a clean set of field suit, a multi-purpose tactical armor and a pair of metal battle boots. After that, he went downstairs and walked out of the knight's tower.

The Lion Fortress was still covered with a layer of exotic, transparent energy while the mysterious clouds above the energy cover radiated a dim white light, which indicated that it was

daytime above the ground.

Zhang Tie watched the sky and the awe-inspiring huge pyramid as he touched his bald head and trotted towards the other gate of the Lion Fortress facing the earth-elements realm.

That gate was called Earth-elements Gate, the real portal towards the Earth-elements Realm.

By contrast, the gate towards the earth's surface was called Force Province Gate.

The entire Lion Fortress only had two gates.

When he exited the Lion Fortress, he needed to punch the metal identity plate too.

There were also two lines of knights riding on their underground dragons outside the Earth-elements Gate.

Knights were leaving the Lion Fortress for the mysterious world of the Earth-elements Realm constantly while lights constantly arrived at the Lion Fortress from the Earth-elements Realm.

The moment Zhang Tie exited the high tunnel-like doorway, he had flown towards the distance.

The terrain outside the Earth-elements Gate had a downward inclination and was borderless. Like a fortress at the highest point of a huge valley, the Earth-elements Gate overlooked the entire shell-shaped valley...

The barren entire valley covered hundreds of thousands of miles. There was nothing but shiny things among rocks and sands in the valley under the dim daylight which was common Class 1 and Class 2 crystals

If on the earth's surface, this place could be a treasure land. Although those crystals were in low class and of high value, nobody in the earth-elements realm would care about the common crystals. The price of these crystals could not even offset the

freight from this place to the world on the earth's surface by airship...

Zhang Tie's destination was the first abyss outside the Lion Fortress...

It was the underground battlefield between human knights and demon knights...

...

Chapter 912: The First Abyss

The first abyss in the earth-elements realm was the main battlefield of human knights and demon knights.

Demons were constantly pouring out of the hollow earth; if they wanted to arrive at the land of the Eastern Continent, they had to break through the Lion Fortress.

As for Taixia Country, the holy war had two battle lines which were undergoing at the same time.

One was in the first abyss in the earth-elements realm; the other was in other continents and subcontinents from where demon corps were constantly pouring out of the earth surface from the underground world.

As for demons, this holy war also had two battle lines. Demons' attack on the earth's surface could be regarded as a siege of Taixia and the Eastern Continent while their attack in the earth-element realm could be regarded that they were going to collapse Taixia Country from inside.

The two battle lines were both fierce, which could be judged by the increasing treatment that those chaotic subcontinents and the Lion Fortress could provide for the garrison knights.

Compared to the battle line on the surface of the ground, the underground one was fiercer and more brutal. Those who could fight demons in the first abyss were at least human knights, human battle spirits were too weak there.

If the earth's surface was predominated by humans, the underground world was predominated by demons.

The first abyss was very huge that nobody could figure out its border. Generally, the word "huge" referred to the area; however, the first abyss was like a deep well in the earth-elements realm.

The part outside the irregular mouth of the well was over 14,000

miles in width and above 40,000 miles in length.

Zhang Tie received the data from the Lion Fortress. He didn't verify it and didn't need to do that.

Of course, the wall of the well was not smooth. A small grain on the wall of this well might be an exotic region that covered thousands even tens of thousands of square miles; a small coarse bulge on the wall of this well might be an endless mountain range. The profound and deep mountain caves in the first abyss were like the holes on the bricks and slabs, which might lead to other abysses and mysterious lands...

From a certain perspective, the first abyss was more like an open courtyard in the middle of an irregular tube-shaped apartment. There were overlapped platforms, large or small and interconnected maze-like rooms, tunnels and bloody traps in the dark around the courtyard.

After leaving the Lion Fortress one day, Zhang Tie caught sight of a pitch-dark, borderless abyss which looked like a black, huge mouth which could devour everything.

Zhang Tie saw rolling, dense fog in the endless black abyss.

As there was no light inside the abyss, it was more like a black fog.

Some human knights were flying out of the black fog while some flew in. All the human knights had decelerated their flying speed the moment they entered it while they hid their battle qi luster.

It was nothing different than committing suicide by releasing one's battle qi luster like a bulb in the dark of the first abyss.

Besides a lot of black iron knights, many earth knights were also wandering in the first abyss. Even though shadow knights were hiding there. It was not strange if human and demon heavenly knights had passed through the first abyss accidentally.

Of course, Zhang Tie didn't want to show off his battle skills at

this moment. He hid his battle qi luster and entered the dark closely along the edge of the first abyss.

...

As the black fog was ubiquitous, even in his maximal dark visibility, Zhang Tie could only see a few miles forward in the first abyss.

A strange plant covered many places on the ground and the precipices in the abyss.

It was an exotic vine-like creeper which could grow endlessly in the first abyss.

Any common vine of the abyss could extend longer than 1,000 m. The longest one could even extend over 70 miles. In Zhang Tie's eyes, the leaves of the vines were deep purple; each leaf was as large as a pot's cover. Its flower was extremely similar to a necessary musical instrument in the human symphony orchestra——tuba! The fog in the first abyss was released by the flowers of the vine of the abyss in a breath.

The fog purified the strong sulfury, the particulate matters and some toxic substances in the air and provided a necessary condition for the growth of other living beings in the abyss.

Even in the first abyss, the living beings complied with some universal rules of the mother nature——without the plants that could grow out of the earth, none of the senior species would survive.

The moment Zhang Tie entered the abyss, he had caught sight of a finger-sized bee hovering on the flower of the vine of the abyss diligently.

The honey of this bee of the abyss was inedible. It contained a special toxin, which would make people feel especially itchy all over. Those who were allergic to pollen would lose their lives the moment they touched the honey of this bee.

After deepening almost 30 miles into the first abyss, Zhang Tie caught sight of a mountain cave behind a vine of the abyss. He then entered it...

After a few minutes, a little, black beetle flapped its wings and flew out of the same mountain cave and dove downwards in the effect of super hiding skill...

30 miles were like a step downwards from the top of a skyscraper.

...

After 10 days, on the land that covered 700 square miles in the first abyss.

A huge demon knight with double horns landed in the fog.

Its eyes were as red as fire which looked very vigilant. After landing there, he looked around seriously. After finding that no human knight was in the surroundings, it darted into a wood.

The wood was filled with a giant underground plant which looked like a bamboo shoot.

After coming to one side of a plant, the demon knight checked his alert arrangements within 100 m and confirmed that nobody had come here. He then let out a sigh. After unveiling a cave on the plant, it hid in.

...

The long-term battle in the first abyss meant a great test and physical strength consumption for both demon knights and human knights. They could not fly in the sky around the clock. Even knights needed to take a rest. Otherwise, their battle strength would decline sharply after staying in the first abyss for too long.

This wood was one of the demon knight's shelters in the first abyss.

The demon knight didn't notice that a little beetle which was having a rest on another tall plant had caught sight of him the

moment he entered this wood...

...

Chapter 913: Anus Boom

These days, Zhang Tie had been exploring the first abyss meticulously in the incarnation of a little beetle.

After 8 days of exploration, Zhang Tie gradually became familiar with the first abyss.

The biggest benefit for him to incarnate in a little black beetle was that nobody else could find him. The biggest weakness was that the vision of the little beetle was much poorer than Zhang Tie's original vision. If Zhang Tie could see miles clearly in the first abyss, the little black beetle's visual distance was only hundreds of meters.

This was the so-called swings and roundabouts.

Any incarnation could not be all mighty.

According to the description of the "Great Wilderness Sutra", the best, irreplaceable incarnation of people was his own body—it's hard to incarnate into a human body.

Thanks to these days' adaptation, Zhang Tie had known well about the first abyss.

The little beetle was almost invisible for the others.

However, with his original body, Zhang Tie could observe enemies in the distance.

After these days of exploration and serious comparison, Zhang Tie thought that a greater perceiving ability was more important for him than being almost invisible. After all, he was here to kill enemies and improve his battle strength.

Zhang Tie had already prepared to summon his original body out of Castle of Black Iron. However, when the little beetle landed on a huge plant and took a rest over there, he caught sight of the first demon knight since he entered the abyss of the earth-elements

realm.

It was an ox-head demon who had the most balanced battle strength and sensory perceptions. It was also the prototype of the devil in the legends among humans.

Compared to iron-armored demons, ox-head demons had greater viability and battle strength in the first abyss.

Watching the ox-head demon to hide meticulously in the "big bamboo shoot" for a rest, the little black beetle blinked its eyes. Zhang Tie was driven mad.

'It's really out of my imagination that a demon knight could build its base here.'

'As this place is only thousands of miles away from the top of the abyss. This fearless demon knight must have a great battle strength.'

The little beetle just gazed at the place where the ox-head demon hid from dozens of meters away.

Knights could fall asleep in only a couple of minutes. However, after falling asleep, their knight's consciousness would still be sensitive to the surrounding situation although being sharply weaker than that in the normal situation; not to mention that the guy hid in the tree hole...

5 minutes later, the little black beetle arrived behind the tree hole.

After that, the little beetle disappeared. With the effect of a super hiding skill, Zhang Tie appeared behind the tree silently.

With a gold-eaten tri-edged dagger in hand, Zhang Tie's eyes shimmered.

With his eyes on the tree, a strange sneer appeared on his face.

Such a raid felt like a troublemaker throwing a huge rock into the manure pit when someone was in the toilet in Blakhot City.

...

'Go die', Zhang Tie's eyes turned solemn at once...

In 0.01 second, Zhang Tie released his battle qi. At the same time, he forcefully stabbed his gold-eaten tri-edged dagger into the tree by his right hand and launched a heart-breaking palm of the "Big Sun Fire Dragon Palm" by his left hand towards the tree...

When Zhang Tie's attack touched the tree, the demon knight who was resting inside had woken up. However, due to such a short distance, even though he had realized what happened, he had no chance to make a response to it anymore.

As for a knight, the bamboo shoot-like huge tree was as weak as a bunch of cotton. Zhang Tie stabbed into it with his gold-eaten tri-edged dagger like breaking a piece of paper. The dagger directly penetrated through the plant and entered the body of the ox-head demon knight.

Zhang Tie felt that his heart-breaking palm hit the back of the ox-head demon knight while his gold-eaten tri-edged dagger...

"Howl..."

With the furious and painful howl, the ox-head demon knight shattered the tree in a split second. At the same time, it released an indifferent attack while tens of tempestuous battle qis swept over dozens of surrounding trees in the shape of a semi-lunar blade. As a result, dozens of trees fell down like ears of wheat being cut off, causing booms.

Although the opponent was trying its best to survive itself in the emergency, of course, Zhang Tie would not collude with him face to face.

Before the demon knight released its battle qis, Zhang Tie had stirred up his dagger in the body of the ox-head demon knight, causing a huge wound. At the same time, Zhang Tie had retreated as fast as a lightning bolt while dodging from those tempestuous

battle qis.

With a dark purple battle qi shooting into the air, the ox-head demon knight flew off right away.

In the air, it spurted out a mouth of blood. With a painful and twisted look, it couldn't stand uttering another howl. At the same time, it wanted to catch something from its butt or stop bleeding over there. However, it was in vain. Because Zhang Tie had stabbed the dagger into its weakest and fatal part; especially when Zhang Tie pulled out the gold-eaten tri-edged dagger, he stirred it up, expanding the wound from the fatal part all the way to the interior part of its thigh, causing a 40-cm long grim wound there...

A knight could at least prevent the wound from bleeding only by controlling the neighboring blood vessels of the wound if not heal it right away...

Although the blood on its thigh was immediately stopped; however, the blood on that part...

Those left were not only blood but stinky and smelly things in its belly and intestine...

It was out of Zhang Tie's imagination that he had exploded the demon knight's anus with that strike. In order to avoid from arousing the attention of the demon knight, Zhang Tie didn't lock its precise location in the tree by his spiritual energy; he just stabbed into its body based on his perception.

It was an obscene strike with a surprisingly good effect.

Only after throwing a glance at the furious and painful look of the demon knight and its remains below, Zhang Tie had realized that he had caused the demon knight to lose half of its battle strength at least.

'Plus the effect of my palm, although this demon knight won't die, for the time being, he has been heavily wounded.'

After throwing a glare at Zhang Tie with its bloody eyes and

extremely grim look, the demon knight didn't rush towards Zhang Tie; instead, it turned around and escaped right away.

Although it was dauntless, it was not an idiot. It knew that it had almost lost the battle although having not fought Zhang Tie. Therefore, it chose to escape so as to survive itself.

It was nothing shameful in the first abyss.

However, how could Zhang Tie let it go.

The ox-head demon knight was just a black iron knight. Zhang Tie had not seen any black iron knight who could fly faster than him, not to mention that the demon knight had suffered a heavy wound.

The demon knight released its battle qi luster and accelerated to its maximal flying speed. So did Zhang Tie while a fiery flame rose from his body.

In such a case, now that they had noticed each other, it was meaningless to hide themselves anymore.

The moment the demon knight moved, Zhang Tie had chased after it. Only after a few seconds, with a roar, Zhang Tie punched another palm while a fiery dragon flew off Zhang Tie's hand and caught up with that demon knight in a split second. The demon knight wanted to resist Zhang Tie's attack; however, it was still forced to fall off, causing a huge pit on the ground.

The moment the demon knight flew off once again, Zhang Tie had appeared on his side while Zhang Tie drew a fierce light net using his gold-eaten tri-edged dagger and fully covered the demon knight.

Their battle qi totems rose up at the same time...

On the earth's surface, the moment black iron knight's battle qi totem rose up, it would be seen by others hundreds of miles away. By contrast, due to the ubiquitous fog, there was a low visibility in the first abyss. The knight's battle qi totem could not be seen from

20 miles away.

Therefore, unless they had enemies or friends within 20 miles, their battle could barely be influenced by external factors.

As it was Zhang Tie's first prey, Zhang Tie accelerated his attack in case of troubles.

Zhang Tie only attacked instead of defending. The attacks from the demon knight would be carried by his protective battle qi and body; of course, his attacks would be defended by the demon knight by its own body and protective battle qi.

Even though this demon knight was safe and sound, Zhang Tie didn't fear about fighting it face to face at the risk of wounds, not to mention now.

In the beginning, the demon knight could bear some rounds of face-to-face collisions with its dauntless spirit; however, after a few seconds, it had changed its face.

It was definitely out of the imagination of the ox-head demon knight that Zhang Tie could have such a powerful battle strength, including his protective battle qi and physical strength. It could be said that Zhang Tie was the most powerful human black iron knight that it had ever met. What was more terrifying was the grim dagger in Zhang Tie's hand.

The dagger could easily penetrate through a knight's protective battle qi.

Only after half a minute, the demon knight had gained 7-8 more wounds. However, Zhang Tie didn't even lose a hair.

...

After 4 minutes, Zhang Tie inserted his gold-eaten tri-edged dagger into its collarbone ferociously. With the miserable howl of the demon knight, Zhang Tie suddenly punched his right fist into the part below its chest and caught the demon knight's spine. Closely after that, he lifted up the demon knight like raising a

barbell...

The demon knight thought that Zhang Tie would shatter it into pieces by his battle qi; As for the inevitable death in battle, the demon knight was not afraid of it at all. Whereas, in the next second, the demon knight suddenly felt that his earth chakra which had not been fully formed started to revolve in an anticlockwise manner. Just like the ice in the pond. It was suddenly shattered by Zhang Tie's overwhelming strength and flew into Zhang Tie's body...

The demon knight just watched Zhang Tie with a fearsome look while it gradually lost its strength to struggle...

1 minute later, Zhang Tie suddenly increased his battle qi and shattered its body into a bloody mist. At the same time, two human figures fell in the distance as fast as a lightning bolt. At the sight of the scene, they were both shocked...

Chapter 914: Partners

Coincidentally, although black iron knight's battle qi totem could not be seen by people from afar in the first abyss, two human knights indeed flew here just now. At the sight of the battle qi totems, they flew towards here.

When they drew closer, they saw Zhang Tie lifting up an ox-head demon knight and shattering it into a bloody mist by his battle qi.

Although Zhang Tie was tall and sturdy, the ox-head demon knight was one head higher and sturdier than him. It was more like a fierce ox. Anyone would be shocked when they saw a human knight to lift up a demon knight who was much bigger than him and shatter it into pieces.

After landing in the distance, the two knights' hearts pounded at the same time. After throwing a glance at each other, they flew towards Zhang Tie at the same time.

"Friend, we saw two battle qi totems rising up from here; therefore, we hurriedly rushed towards here. Do you need any help?"

The two knights were both Hua knights at their 40s. One carried a saber, the other carried a sword. Given their qis, Zhang Tie knew that they were also black iron knights. The moment they drew close, the man with a sword asked in a polite way.

"Thanks. But I've already killed the demon knight!" Although the blood rain sprayed over, it was blocked by Zhang Tie's protective battle qi. After moving his punch back, Zhang Tie said in a hoarse voice while watching the two people, "F*ck, I was just resting here; however, this demon knight launched a sudden strike towards me. Now that we encountered, I had to kill this b*stard, peh..."

Zhang Tie spat onto the ground.

Standing several meters away from Zhang Tie, the two Hua

knights glanced over the neighboring messy battlefield before moving their eyes back onto Zhang Tie. After finding that Zhang Tie didn't even suffer a wound, the two human knights' eyes gleamed at once.

'Now that this human knight could kill a demon knight without suffering any wound, it indicates that this knight is overwhelming to the demon knight.'

"Friend, great battle skill and braveness!" The middle-aged man with a saber praised Zhang Tie before cupping his hands towards Zhang Tie, "I'm Gong Ziyao, he's Zhou Shufan. We both came from Qingzhou Province. May I know your name?"

"I'm Cui Li from Youngzhou Province!" Zhang Tie replied as he cupped his hands.

Hebrews always greeted each other by shaking hands; while Hua people greeted each other by cupping their hands. Shaking hands meant that they had no weapons in hands while cupping hands meant that they covered their right hand which was most aggressive by their left hand. Both etiquettes represented peace. When two people met each other for the first time, cupping hands was more intellectual than shaking hands. Although the identity Cui Li was a bit brutal, he was not absolutely a boor.

"We have stayed in the Lion Fortress for 2 years. But we've not seen younger brother Cui!" Gong Ziyao asked.

"I've just come to Lion Fortress about 10 days ago!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's reply, Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan were more stunned.

Zhou Shufan said with a solemn look, "I've not imagined that younger brother Cui has killed a demon knight and made a meritorious deed only after entering the first abyss for a few days. If this demon knight dared to come here alone, it was definitely fiercer than common demon knights. Younger brother Cui is really

admirable!"

"Heh...heh..." Zhang Tie touched his bald head with a smirk, "He's unfortunate. As I've been here ahead of him. After this guy arrived, he found a hidden tree hole and took a rest inside. When he fell asleep, I stealthily moved to the back of the tree hole..." Zhang Tie raised his gold-eaten tri-edged dagger and simulated the movement of stabbing it into the tree hole forcefully, "With such a poke, I exploded his anus. As a result, he could only exert 50-60% of his full strength and was finally killed by me!"

At the sight of the grim, sturdy tri-edged dagger and hearing the words "exploded his anus", Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan understood it right away as they couldn't stand contracting their anuses.

After exchanging a glance with Gong Ziyao, Zhou Shufan slowly nodded his head. They had formed a privy after a long-term cooperation. They could exchange many information only through eyes.

Through Zhang Tie's simple reply, the two people felt that Zhang Tie had a great battle strength and was open-minded and aboveboard. The other knights would definitely not expose the obscene means of exploding anus to them so frankly. Therefore, they liked Zhang Tie from inside.

"Demon is human's public enemy. As you have killed a demon knight, you have made a meritorious deed for humans. Whatever means you have used, younger brother Cui Li is a hero and a tough man as you caught this chance to kill this demon knight sharply!"

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter...

"We should not stay here, if any earth knights were fighting in the distance, they might have been attracted by the battle here. Earth knights could see clearly the battle qi totems from over 70 miles away in the first abyss. How about changing the place?" Zhou Shufan suggested.

"Good!" Zhang Tie ran towards the pair of ox horns which had inserted into the earth and picked them up before putting them into his battle armor. Closely after that, he rose up into the air.

Presenting amaranth, this pair of ox horns proved that Zhang Tie had killed an ox-head demon knight. With this meritorious deed, he could enjoy many benefits in the Lion Fortress. Pitifully, this ox-head demon was a poor thing as it had no more equipment but a broken leather armor.

In the air, Gong Ziyao asked Zhang Tie, "Young brother Cui Li, do you want to fight a few more days in the first abyss or return to the Lion Fortress?"

"What about you?"

"We're going back to the Lion Fortress for some supplies and then we will come back!" Zhou Shu fan answered in an implicit way.

"We can come back together..." Zhang Tie answered, "We can take care of each other on the way back..."

"That's great!"

Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan nodded at the same time...

Although Zhang Tie looked calm, his heart was racing crazily. It was his first time to use the Purgatory Samsara Method. He felt having made a great achievement this time. He was thinking about digesting the energy of the earth chakra of the demon knight somewhere. Additionally, with this pair of ox horns on his back, he didn't feel convenient in the first abyss; if he didn't want this pair of ox horns, it would arouse the doubts of the two human knights; if he put it away in his space teleportation equipment, he would expose his secret; therefore, he chose to go back to the Lion Fortress together with Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan. He would exchange this pair of ox horns for some benefits before digesting the achievements.

As there were many powerhouses in the first abyss, black iron

knights were a basic battle strength here. Zhang Tie felt that he'd better not use his portable space teleportation equipment and Castle of Black Iron so as to match his performance with the image of Cui Li. Otherwise, he might incur troubles and crises. The identity of Cui Li fit him pretty well, which was also very useful in Taixia Country. If he changed another identity, he might have to spend more time to deal with it.

Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan were well known as Saber and Sword Partners in Qingzhou Province. They had been bosom friends for dozens of years. They had been in the earth-elements realm for 4 years. When the group of three hid their battle qi luster and flew towards the entrance of the abyss, they kept chatting. After introducing themselves, the Saber and Sword Partners started to inquire about Zhang Tie's background.

Of course, Zhang Tie told them about the background of Cui Li—I lived in a rich family in Liuying Town at the foot of Coiling Dragon Mountain, Luye Prefecture, Yongzhou Province. I have been obsessed with battle skills since I was young. Therefore, after my parents passed away, I traveled among the famous mountains and rivers in Taixia Country and learned from masters everywhere. Later on, I experienced something special in a famous mountain and finally promoted to a knight.

I have just returned home a few days ago and ended some secular affairs at home. Before my powerful memorial gateway was built in my hometown, I have come to the earth-elements realm and prepare to fight demons so as to live up to what I've learned in the past years.

"Young brother Cui, do you think about making meritorious deeds for the country?" Zhou Shufan asked.

"I've not thought about it yet. No matter what, I can't waste my battle skills; especially in the holy war. As demons are thinking about devastating Taixia, I should do something as a tough man. I don't care what meritorious deeds will I make; no matter what, I

can't stand being a knight who only thinks about cultivation indoors everyday. No pay, no power, no woman, no dignity! It's boring! If it's in peaceful times, it's understandable for you to close your doors and enter cultivation everyday; however, the holy war has broken out, if you did the same, it's nothing different than being a timid rabbit!"

Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan burst out into laughter at the same time. They felt that Zhang Tie had verified the feelings of most of the knights in the Lion Fortress.

After 3 days, the group of three started their trip back. On the way, they met some human knights; however, they didn't meet any demon knight. Therefore, they returned to the Lion Fortress smoothly.

At the gate of the Lion Fortress, at the sight of the pair of ox horns, the line of garrison knights threw "admiring" eyes towards Zhang Tie.

"Tough man with ox horns, will you join our Feathers Army? Our Feathers Army is powerful with good treatment and rich human resources above and underground, how about that?" An officer shouted towards Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie was stunned as it was the second time for him to listen to the words. 'Did all the top four armies of Taixia Country recruit soldiers in the same way at the Lion Fortress?'

Chapter 915: Samsara

"Thanks but I don't want to join the army for the time being..."

"Tough man, may I know your name?"

"Cui Li, from Yongzhou Province!"

After having a brief conversation with the officer just outside the gate, Zhang Tie immediately entered the Lion Fortress with Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan.

The metal plates indicated their identities; besides, by punching a card, they could accumulate their effective service time in the fortress and gain earth-elements crystals as a reward.

"Young brother Cui, we have to say goodbye to you. We will meet in the Iron-blood Tower at 8 pm two days later!" Gong Ziyao told Zhang Tie.

"Yes, two elder brothers, I have to handle with these booties too, see you at the night two days later!" Zhang Tie nodded.

After cupping hands towards each other, the three people headed for different directions.

Over the past couple of days, the group of three had learned a lot about each other. Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan had made an appointment with Zhang Tie to meet in the Iron-blood Tower, the knights' bar in the Lion Fortress 3 days later. They said that they had something to negotiate with Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie agreed with them.

Watching Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan leaving, Zhang Tie recalled the map of the Lion Fortress for a second before running towards the Knights' Tower of Brilliance.

It was where tasks were released in the Lion Fortress and where knights could exchange their booties for resources.

The pair of ox horns on Zhang Tie's back indicated that Zhang

Tie had killed an ox-head demon knight, which could be used to exchange for many items.

By now, Zhang Tie was still a poor guy. Besides a residence in the Lion Fortress, he didn't even have enough clean clothes. Besides that gold-eaten tri-edged dagger, Zhang Tie didn't have any more weapon. Therefore, this pair of ox horns could greatly improve Zhang Tie's "dilemma".

Besides being good-looking, the pair of ox horns also had a great medicinal value. Through the working of pharmacists, this pair of ox horns could clear heat, cool the blood, arrest convulsion, detoxify and collect qi. It was the most precious and the main ingredient of tranquilizer for fighters below knights when they were possessed by the devil. Tranquilizer was a very precious medicine of great value. Three pills of tranquilizer might save one human fighter from being possessed by the devil on average. However, the main ingredient came from the ox-head demon knight in the Earth-elements Realm.

Cups or kettles being made of ox horns were also expensive because they could detoxify and alleviate a hangover.

Demons and humans were eating each other. The winner must have sharper teeth.

As the portal for humans to enter the Earth-elements Realm, the Lion Fortress should not only be defended by humans but also serve as a base for humans to gain resources in the Earth-elements Realm.

Zhang Tie ran all the way towards the Knights' Tower of Brilliance. On the way, at the sight of that pair of ox horns on Zhang Tie's back, all the knights, logistical personnel and subsidiary fighters threw admiring looks at Zhang Tie.

The real powerful ones would gain respect wherever they were; especially those on the battlefields.

Even by now, less than 20% of the human knights in the Lion Fortress who had fought demon knights had ever killed a demon knight.

"What a tough man!"

"What a hero!"

Zhang Tie heard all sorts of praises on the way there.

Zhang Tie ignored the eye lights of the passers-by; neither did he feel conceited. Perhaps, it was very difficult for others to kill a demon knight. Actually, Zhang Tie had killed dozens of demon knights and knights of Three-eye Association. Therefore, he didn't feel thrilled at all.

...

Being very eye-catching in the Lion Fortress, the Knights' Tower of Brilliance was higher than 2,000 m.

Human knights were accessing to the Knight's Tower of Brilliance. Besides Hua knights, Zhang Tie saw many other knights of different skins.

At the sight of the pair of ox horns on Zhang Tie's back, all the knights accessing to the high tower threw a serious look at Zhang Tie.

After going up over 100 metal steps, Zhang Tie came to the task lobby which covered tens of thousands of square meters.

The moment he entered the task lobby, Zhang Tie had seen a metal curtain higher than 20 m which hung various task boards and clear introductions. On both sides of the metal curtain were counters and backrooms which were used to serve knights. It was similar to that of the Golden Roc Bank. Perhaps, the structure of the lobby of Golden Roc Bank originated from here.

Zhang Tie muttered inside as he strode towards a counter. After putting the pair of ox horns on the counter, causing a sound "pah",

he shouted in a hoarse tone, "Task delivered!"

"A pair of ox horns of an ox-head demon knight. Not bad, not bad, it's not even 5 days old. Fresh enough. It's not picked from the Far-ancient battlefield in the first abyss!" An old man in red uniform checked Zhang Tie's booty seriously as he nodded and put it into the counter, "This pair of ox horns weigh over 30 kg. A green-robed pharmacist could make over 800 pills of tranquilizer and save hundreds of human fighters' lives with it..."

Zhang Tie grinned. As a human knight, he indeed felt a great sense of achievement at this moment...

"Show me your identity plate, please!" The old man's tone turned politer.

Zhang Tie passed his identity plate to the old man. The old man took it and inserted it into a machine on his side. After a series of operations, the old man drew it out of the machine in a few seconds. After that, he took out 18 golden earth-element crystals from the counter and pushed them to Zhang Tie.

"Here's your reward, 18 earth-elements crystals, 5 meritorious points and 1,000 consumption points in the Lion Fortress!"

Touching his bald head, Zhang Tie asked, "What are the meritorious points used for?"

The old man threw a glance at Zhang Tie, "There are many resources in the Lion Fortress that could not be enjoyed by earth-elements crystals and consumption points. You could only exchange for them with your meritorious points, such as simulative training in the Heavenly Ball..."

'Heavenly Ball?' Zhang Tie was shocked. He remembered that an elder of Huaiyuan Palace mentioned that there was indeed a Heavenly Ball in the Lion Fortress. It was not exclusive to the Heavenly Fortune Sect.

...

After taking his identity plate which had been recharged, Zhang Tie left the Knights' Tower of Brilliance.

After that, Zhang Tie went to the latest supply point and received 7 days' supply, which included 7 breadfruits, 3,500 grams of nutritious mushroom, 3,500 grams of watermelons. After loading all of them into a metal supply case, Zhang Tie carried the supply case and returned to his knight's tower marked as No. 1607.

As for Zhang Tie, the supply in the fortress was not dispensable. However, after having been in the Earth-elements Realm for so many days, if he didn't go to receive some supply, he would arouse others' suspicions. Even knights required energy supply. Nobody could gain them out of nowhere without a space-teleportation equipment.

After closing the gate of his knight's tower from inside, Zhang Tie found that everything remained unchanged in the knight's tower, leaving no dust at all.

Although he couldn't wait to experience the first achievement from the purgatory samsara in the cultivation room, Zhang Tie tried to recover his composure and prepare a supper for himself.

The ingredients of the supper were the supply that he brought back.

Actually, it was a bit exaggerated for him to make supper. As the three fruits could be eaten directly, they didn't need to be processed at all. Zhang Tie just took out a plate, a knife and made an assorted fruit dish. After that, he took a seat and leisurely enjoyed them.

Since he got the Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie had always tried to be patient whenever he couldn't wait to do something.

The greater the plan was, the calmer he needed to be.

The more anxious he was, the more relieved he should be.

This was also a sort of cultivation.

The breadfruit was indeed like a bread; however, it was more like a half-dried coarse bread. It was a food with thick fiber which didn't taste good at all.

The nutritious mushroom tasted like a dried squid, which was fishy and salty. They didn't taste good either.

The watermelons contained too much water and tasted a bit sweet. However, after eating them, Zhang Tie felt a bit sour.

Although knights had powerful nerves, Zhang Tie wondered whether he would be driven mad if he ate such a food consecutively for a few years.

After eating up the food on the plate and putting away the rest fruits, Zhang Tie recovered his composure. After that, he went upstairs and entered his cultivation room.

...

After sitting in the cultivation room cross-legged, Zhang Tie entered meditation while his perceptions gradually became sensitive...

The pure, golden earth elements were slowly rotating around the first chakra like satellites on the tracks...

Zhang Tie ran his spiritual energy while those pure earth elements directly entered the first chakra. After being grounded by the first chakra, they poured into those mysterious, complex and huge geometrical patterns in the earth chakra, lighting those geometrical patterns one after another...

The efficiency of this method was dozens of times higher compared to that if Zhang Tie directly absorbed earth elements. Zhang Tie directly linked the main water supply pipeline to his own home.

When Zhang Tie was quietly fixing and absorbing the essence of the chakra of the demon knight, the 31st dragon scale on his dragon crystal plate was lit after one hour...

Chapter 916: The Power of An Emperor-level Secret Method

The Purgatory Samsara Method was a top-secret method, which was pushed by the chakra of the major secret skill that the knight was cultivating.

Due to the difference in the level of cultivation methods, the Purgatory Samsara Method had different effects. From a certain perspective, Purgatory Samsara Method was completely a powerful auxiliary secret skill, which also verified an early speculation of Zhang Tie——In the far-ancient times, humans had various auxiliary equipment and methods to accelerate the formation of their chakras.

As the secret methods for fighters to promote to knights were classified into 7 levels, the effects of the Purgatory Samsara Method were also classified into 7 levels.

There were 50 universal laws while 49 of which were derivatives, the rest one fit humans. 7 multiplied by 7 was 49, which was the necessary condition for forming seven-strength fruits. Nevertheless, the base of Purgatory Samsara was 7. It seemed that there was a mysterious connection between the Purgatory Samsara and the seven-strength fruits. They might follow universal laws.

Being pushed by a baron-level chakra, the Purgatory Samsara could help the knight absorb $\frac{1}{7}$ of the elements of the opponent's chakra.

Being pushed by a viscount-level chakra, the Purgatory Samsara could help the knight absorb $\frac{3}{7}$ of the elements of the opponent's chakra.

Being pushed by a count-level chakra, the Purgatory Samsara could help the knight absorb $\frac{4}{7}$ of the elements of the opponent's chakra.

Being pushed by a marquis-level chakra, the Purgatory Samsara could help the knight absorb 5/7 of the elements of the opponent's chakra.

Being pushed by a prince-level chakra, the Purgatory Samsara could help the knight absorb 6/7 of the element of the opponent's chakra.

Being pushed by an emperor-level chakra, the Purgatory Samsara could help the knight absorb all the elements of the opponent's chakra.

Zhao Yuan thought that Zhang Tie was cultivating a viscount-level "Five-elements Ground-look Sutra"; actually, Zhang Tie was cultivating an emperor-level "King Roc Sutra". Therefore, as for Zhang Tie, it was the "King Roc Sutra" that pushed the Purgatory Samsara. With the terrifying power of an emperor-level secret method, all the earth elements in the earth chakra of that ox-head demon knight which had not been formed were absorbed by Zhang Tie.

When Zhang Tie was rapidly digesting this achievement, the dragon scales on the knight's crystal plate of Cui Li were lit one after another...

The 31st, the 32nd, the 33rd, the 34th, the 35th, the 36th...

When the 36th dragon scale was lit, an unexpected change occurred...

A golden feather-shaped seed rune of "King Roc Sutra" flew out of the center of the chakra in Zhang Tie's chest. Hovering above Zhang Tie's head, it started to radiate brilliant luster. Zhang Tie then slowly rose up cross-legged and hovered in the air in the cultivation room...

This seed rune was a bit different than the former seed rune of the "King Roc Sutra" before he formed the chakra. Under the golden light of the seed rune, all of Zhang Tie's surging points

started to resonate and radiate luster together with his qi sea. The runes flew out of the surging points and flew around Zhang Tie like almost 1,000 golden fireflies...

After that, Zhang Tie released his battle qi from all of his surging points. Closely after that, the spiritual energy in his mind sea spilled out of his forehead. Four elements in the elements realm then appeared out of nowhere and poured into those firefly-shaped runes, making them more brilliant. The battle qi then intertwined with those mysterious runes and gradually formed a golden, huge shell being covered with mysterious grains around Zhang Tie...

The entire cultivation room became quiet at once, except the mysterious lusters which flashed by the surface of that huge egg floating in the air from time to time...

...

After over 10 hours, with a muffled thunder in the huge egg, more cracks started to appear on the surface of the huge egg as if something was going to be hatched. Finally, with a thunder, the mysterious eggshell was completely shattered while releasing numerous golden light spots, causing a brilliant, golden light rain in the entire cultivation room in a split second...

...

Zhang Tie opened his eyes while being cross-legged in the air. The moment he put down his feet, he had stood on the ground with a confused look...

Zhang Tie didn't know what happened just now at all.

About 3-5% of the total earth elements of the demon knight had not been absorbed.

Zhang Tie felt that he had lit another 5-6 dragon scales. At that moment, Zhang Tie was in ecstasy. All of a sudden, he felt that the first and the second chakra which had not been formed rocked at the same time while releasing a strong luster, sending Zhang Tie

into an absolute, empty chaotic state physically and mentally...

Zhang Tie didn't know what happened to him just now. He just felt being in an empty, chaotic state while all of his surging points were exchanging energy with something else. It seemed that he had opened one deeper level of his surging points.

After that...

He didn't know how long had passed when all the surging points rocked. Closely after that, a thunder occurred in the chaos along with a light. Then, the sky and the ground were divided while everything became clearer. Zhang Tie finally woke up.

He found that he was floating in the air.

After sensing his body, Zhang Tie widely opened his mouth. He felt wholly new as this body was utterly different than that before he entered the cultivation room.

Zhang Tie attempted to make some movements and control his battle qi but he felt evidently different than before.

He could feel an overall increase of 10% in the capacity and power of battle qi, physical strength, reaction speed, defensive and anti-strike ability, even the surging spiritual energy in his mind sea.

It meant that his battle strength had increased by 10%, which was a new stage and progress for a knight; especially the incremental part of spiritual energy was even much more than the total spiritual energy of a common black iron knight.

After taking a free walk in the cultivation room, Zhang Tie felt so light that he almost floated in the air.

'Why?'

Zhang Tie was both shocked and confused.

Before he fully accepted the surprise brought by the Purgatory Samsara Method pushed by the "King Roc Sutra", Zhang Tie welcomed another surprise.

All of a sudden, something occurred to Zhang Tie's mind. Zhang Tie took out the Cui Li's crystal plate and found 36 dragon scales had been lit.

'36 scales were 1/10 of the total 360 scales required to form a chakra.'

'Does it mean that the sudden change just now was caused by the "King Roc Sutra" after forming 1/10 of the earth chakra?'

'Wait, 36 scales...'

Something occurred to Zhang Tie's mind once again.

A few years ago, when Zhang Tie had promoted to a knight in Waii Subcontinent and received the knight's crystal plate, he thought that the power of black iron knights was divided by the number of scales that they had lit. Later on, as he deepened his understanding of knights, he knew more secrets about them.

The scale was the most objective unit of measurement that represented the cultivation base and progress of a knight. However, in the knights' world, especially in Taixia Country, the center of the human world, each knights' level was further divided into ranks. It was too general to regard 360 scales as a realm. If each scale was taken as a realm, it was too sophisticated, which sometimes could not reflect the genuine battle strength of knights who cultivated different secret methods. Therefore, they needed a more objective and easier division standard to measure ranks.

Actually, each level of the knights, black iron knight, earth knight, even shadow or heavenly knight could be divided into 9 small ranks, which were called "changes", 36 scales were called 1 change; 360 scales were called 10 changes. After 9 changes, when one lit 36 more scales, one would completely form a new chakra and promote to the next level of the knight.

Take black iron knight as an instance, the progress from 0 to 35 scales was the consolidation period.

When one lit 36-71 scales, one was called 1 change black iron knight.

When one lit 72-107 scales, one was called 2 changes black iron knight.

...

When one lit 324-359 scales, one was called 9 changes black iron knight, which was also called great perfection stage of a black iron knight and was the last stage for a black iron knight to promote to a higher level.

After lighting the 360th scale, of course, the black iron knight would advance to the next level as he had formed a new chakra.

'36 scales, I've just lit 36 scales...'

'Change——wasn't I "changing" just now?'

Being shocked immediately, Zhang Tie figured out something at once, 'Is the standard of "change" based on the emperor-level classic?'

According to the viscount-level classic "Five-elements Ground-look Sutra", Zhang Tie remembered that after lighting each $\frac{1}{4}$ of a chakra, one would gain a chance to strengthen one's five-elements battle qi; it was also mentioned in the marquis-level classic "Fire Dragon Sutra" that, after lighting each $\frac{1}{6}$ of a chakra, one would gain a chance to strengthen one's overall strength. ' $\frac{1}{4}$ of a chakra match 90 scales while $\frac{1}{6}$ of a chakra match 60 scales; however, I could strengthen my battle strength only after lighting 36 scales. Does it mean that one could strength one's overall strength 10 times if one cultivates an emperor-level secret method? Additionally, do people strengthen their overall strength at different times due to different levels of secret methods?'

Take viscount-level secret methods as an instance, only after one promoted to 2 changes black iron knight could one strengthen one's overall strength. Similarly, those who cultivated baron-level

secret methods could only gain 3 chances to strengthen their overall strength at each level...

...

After throwing a glance at the clock hanging on the wall of the cultivation room, Zhang Tie found that one day had passed. It was already 6 pm. After remembering that he had to meet Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan in the Iron-blood Tower two hours later, Zhang Tie recovered his composure for a short while before leaving his knight's tower...

Chapter 917: Meeting Pandora Once Again

After walking out of his knight's tower, Zhang Tie looked up at the dull red sky and took a deep breath. After that, he strode towards the Iron-blood Tower...

The sky in the Earth-elements Realm reminded Zhang Tie of Castle of Black Iron. In the Earth-elements Realm, it would also turn dark in the evening while the weird clouds in the sky caused a low visibility just like that in the evening on the earth's surface.

On the earth's surface, at night, sometimes the moons were bright and the stars were few when the visibility was very high; sometimes, the moons were covered with black clouds when it was pitch dark. In the underground world, the exotic clouds in the sky of the Earth-elements Realm seemed to reflect the climates on the earth's surface too.

Besides day and night, the Earth-elements Realm was exchanging atmosphere with the earth's surface, causing alternative four seasons and various climates.

After Zhang Tie left the knight's tower for less than half an hour, the sky outside the Lion Fortress had completely turned dark.

Bang...

A loud sound drifted from the sky.

Zhang Tie looked up and caught sight of a golden lightning bolt which flashed across the top of that huge pyramid in the middle of the Lion Fortress. In a split second, it started to rain heavily.

It was Zhang Tie's first time to see the rain in the Earth-elements Realm.

It was marvelous to see it raining in the Earth-elements Realm. Due to the existence of the transparent energy cover, all the raindrops would slide off the energy cover, causing a layer of exotic ripples on the dome of the Lion Fortress. It felt just like enjoying a

heavy rain in the dining hall on the top floor of a skyscraper with a glass dome.

The heavy raindrops slid off the glass dome; however, the dining hall was dry. Sitting in such a dining hall, listening to the melodious performance of violin and piano, sniffing the fragrance of rose blossom, and having a candlelight dinner with a beauty in bobtail. How romantic it was...

However, Zhang Tie was in the Lion Fortress, which had nothing to do with romance.

Although there was no rose here, there were a lot of grim demons. The beauties here were a scarce resource. It depended whether you could have a dinner with a beauty. The fortress was filled with high-end eternal fluorite lamps. Zhang Tie thought that few candlesticks could be found here. Additionally, there was a river of magma with stimulative sulphuric smell being not far from the fortress. There was no feast here. All the resources on the earth's surface were relatively scarcer here. Breadfruit, nutritious mushroom and watermelons definitely posed a great test to your palate...

Zhang Tie didn't know whether the beauty would feel romantic when eating breadfruits, nutritious mushrooms and watermelons. No matter what, Zhang Tie didn't feel that it was necessary for him to eat those fruits. By having those fruits, you would not starve to death and could maintain your physical strength to move; however, your palates would suffer a lot. As there was a lot of tasty food in Castle of Black Iron, it was unnecessary for Zhang Tie to endure hardships in his knight's tower.

In the evening, Zhang Tie found fewer passers-by on the streets of the Lion Fortress. Besides knights, many logistical personnel and auxiliary fighters in the fortress had started to relax themselves. Only a few people were on duty.

Both humans and demons should comply with the universal rule

of the balance of yin and yang. Sun would rise and fall; oceans would ebb and flow; plants had ups and downs. As living beings, how could humans and demons become intense around the clock like having dozens of kgs of viagra?

At this moment, perhaps, some human knights were still wandering and fighting demons outside the Lion Fortress and the first abyss while some others were still cultivating in their own knight's tower; however, it was time for most of the human knights to relax themselves after one day's busy work.

There were many bars on both roadsides of the streets in the Lion Fortress. As this place lacked resources on the earth's surface, many people in the Lion Fortress chose to relax themselves in the bars, where they could enjoy music and laughter.

In the evening, Zhang Tie felt the Lion Fortress became more like a market. Walking on the streets and sensing the reassuring qi, Zhang Tie, who had been restless since he started to escape, gradually recovered his composure. As a person who grew up in a small city, this qi made him comfortable like bathing the spring wind and raindrops. The burst of laughter from roadside bars made him feel especially safe and genial.

Not every knight liked this atmosphere. Therefore, the bars in the Lion Fortress were all far away from the knights' towers. However, Zhang Tie felt as free as fish in water in such an atmosphere. He didn't feel bored at all.

Generally, there were two kinds of bars in the Lion Fortress: first, being exclusive for people in certain classes and circles such as logistical personnel and knights. Although there was no stipulation in explicit terms, those customers basically stuck to this game rule. Outsiders would not enter a bar which was exclusive to a specific group of people in case of arousing others' attention. Additionally, it was impolite; second, they were open to people regardless of their identities. They just drank, chatted, bragged, accosted girls, exploited connections and learned from others, etc...

Iron-blood Tower belonged to the first type of bar. Only knights consumed there.

The Iron-blood Tower was over 1,000 m in height, making it outstanding among the other knights' towers whose height on average was only about 500 m.

Under the heavy rain and rumbling thunders, Zhang Tie came to the Iron-blood Tower on time.

Compared to the exaggerated gates of the other high towers, the gate of the Iron-blood Tower was much smaller. At the sight of its gate, Zhang Tie had known that it was a private place. If Zhang Tie was a bit taller, he had to stoop down.

After entering the gate, Zhang Tie came to a vestibule. After passing the vestibule, Zhang Tie entered a metal tunnel, both sides of which were carved with various rough reliefs. There were blue fluorite lamps in the tunnel, creating a pretty good atmosphere. Zhang Tie could hear the melodious piano tune in the tunnel from the bar. The ornaments below the crystal floor of the tunnel were earth-elements crystals...

This tunnel was luxurious enough even for knights.

The moment he exited the metal tunnel, Zhang Tie's sight had been expanded. He caught sight of a woman, whose black hair was covering her shoulders, playing a melodious piano tune on a music stool...

At the sight of the woman, Zhang Tie had felt getting an electric shock; he almost forgot how to walk...

The woman raised her head and threw a glance at Zhang Tie. The pair of eyes were like black gemstones. How familiar and unforgettable they were...

...

Being late at a heavily rainy night in the common bus station in Blackhot City...

The girl was watching him while her face was covered with tears...

"...when I grow as beautiful as Miss Daina, if you're still alive, will I marry you on behalf of her?"

The boy burst out into tears...

...

In a split second, Zhang Tie felt like returning to the past while that girl's words rang in his ears...

After so many years, the girl had been even more beautiful than Miss Daina...

Although Pandora had changed her look, Zhang Tie could still recognize her. The boy had changed his look too; however, he could never be recognized by Pandora.

'Why is she here?'

In a split second, numerous whims flashed by Zhang Tie's mind.

...

"Young brother Cui Li, here..." Gong Ziyao stood up from a cassette at 9 am direction and waved his hand towards Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie revealed a smile and waved his hand towards Gong Ziyao before striding towards Pandora...

Pandora wore a black longuette. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't know whether she was working here or having a rest. However, each of the two identities was out of Zhang Tie's imagination.

Right under the gaze of Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan, Zhang Tie stopped in front of Pandora who was playing a piano tune and glanced at her right hand.

He caught sight of the very black seal ring on her fair, plump, smooth and slim fourth finger of her right hand.

"Young sister, do you have a boyfriend?" Zhang Tie watched

Pandora with his glittering eyes while asking her in a hoarse voice.

With a sound of "Huala", before Pandora replied, 8-9 knights had sprung up while staring at Zhang Tie with malicious eyes...

The greater part of the 8-9 knights were Hua knights while the rest two were Hebrew knights.

...

"Audacious..."

"How dare you be so rude to Miss Pandora?"

"Does this guy treat us as farts?"

...

Along with the furious reprimands, two Hua knights were just gazing at Zhang Tie silently with sharp killing qis.

Pandora stopped playing her piano as she faintly raised her head and threw a glance at Zhang Tie. Closely after that, she asked, "Who're you?"

"Cui Li, from Yongzhou Province!"

"I've already got a boyfriend!"

"When I caught sight of you, I fell in love with you immediately. Pitifully, I'm one step later!" Zhang Tie shrugged while he threw another glance at Pandora. After that, he directly walked toward Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan.

Watching Zhang Tie leaving so fast, the other knights who had just sprung up sat down...

Chapter 918: Familiar Strangers

"Elder brothers, who's that woman?" Zhang Tie asked straightforwardly after coming to the side of Gong Ziyao and Zhou Sufan.

Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan exchanged a glance with each other. After staying with Zhang Tie a couple of days, they both knew that Zhang Tie was straightforward; however, they had not imagined that he could be so unconstrained. How could he directly ask a girl if she had a boyfriend the moment he caught sight of her? It was their first time to see such a person.

Zhou Sufan forced a bitter smile, "Younger brother, take a seat first!"

Although Zhang Tie sat down, he was still gazing at Zhou Shufan.

After Zhang Tie's interruption, Pandora didn't feel like playing the piano anymore. She stopped and directly walked out of the bar, closely followed by the two silent Hua knights. The other knights just watched Pandora leaving with reluctant looks. Two more guys were throwing furious glances at Zhang Tie as if they were complaining that Zhang Tie had disturbed their good moods.

"This woman has been in the Lion Fortress for over 1 year. She's the princess of the Demon Killing Valley, the granddaughter of the head of the Demon Killing Valley, she's called Pandora!"

Zhou Shufan told Zhang Tie about Pandora's background in a secret manner.

After hearing this message, Zhang Tie widely opened his mouth with an amazed look.

The princess of Sacred Golden Orchid Empire, the daughter of Haiger VII the weird emperor, the granddaughter of the head of Demon Killing Valley. All these identities puzzled Zhang Tie.

'With an evident, foreign look, Pandora had the bloodline of

Hebrews, how could she be the granddaughter of the head of the Demon Killing Valley?'

When Zhang Tie thought about it, he asked this question in a secret manner, "Elder brother Zhou, this woman has a foreign bloodline, how could she be the granddaughter of the head of Demon Killing Valley? Does the head of the Demon Killing Valley also have a foreign bloodline?"

"How could a leader of one of the top 7 sects in Taixia Country carry a foreign bloodline? It's told that Pandora was the daughter of a young daughter of Wu Dingtian the head of Demon Killing Valley and an emperor of a subcontinent who traversed across Taixia Country many years ago. She had been living in a remote place away from Taixia Country. After the holy war broke out, she returned to Taixia Country. As one of the top 7 sects in Taixia Country, the Demon Killing Valley is very powerful and has a lot of secrets!"

"What's this woman doing in the Lion Fortress? I couldn't find a knight's qi from her. She should not be a knight. What does the head of Demon Killing Valley mean by dropping her granddaughter in the Lion Fortress?"

"Younger brother, you're wrong this time!" Gong Ziyao replied Zhang Tie in a secret way, "Pandora is very famous in the Lion Fortress. I was told that she had awakened two top heavenly-rank bloodlines, the dark body and the bad luck curse. With the dark body, she could completely hide her qi. No matter how powerful she is, she just looks like a commoner; as for the bad luck curse, all those who are against her will be in great troubles. The two bloodlines are exclusive top bloodlines of the Wu Clan in Taixia Country. With the secret battle skills of Demon Killing Valley, this woman has killed more than 5 demon knights in the past one year."

After hearing Gong Ziyao's introduction, Zhang Tie was greatly shocked. He couldn't help recalling how Pandora was pushed aside

by the other girls in the Wild Wolf Valley. 'As all the other girls said that they would have a bad luck when they stay with Pandora, Pandora was always lonely in the Wild Wolf Castle. She had no friend at all. Is this caused by the strength of her bloodline? After encountering Pandora a few times, I also suffered from some dangers. Pandora felt very sorry for that. Perhaps, Pandora had already realized that she had awakened some special bloodline at that time. Therefore, she became increasingly lonely and sensitive...'

Additionally, Zhang Tie knew that many major families, even common families in Taixia Country forbade their Hua girls to marry foreign people; otherwise, it was always regarded as a humiliation. When he recalled that Pandora, as the princess of Sacred Golden Orchid Empire, had to dwell in Blackhot City instead of returning to Taixia Country, Zhang Tie doubted that this might be because that her mother was a daughter of the head of Demon Killing Valley. Due to some unknown reason or the stress from Demon Killing Valley, the emperor Haiger VII who dreamed to build a powerful mechanical troop in the black iron age had to take Pandora away from the imperial palace and hide her in a secret place.

Zhang Tie remembered that Pandora had never mentioned about her mother.

It was completely out of Zhang Tie's imagination that Pandora could be a knight. 'However, given the terrifying resources and powerful backgrounds of the top 7 sects in Taixia Country and the fact that Pandora had awakened her powerful heavenly-rank bloodlines, it was not difficult for Wu Dingtian the head of the Demon Killing Valley to help Pandora promote to a knight in a few years. Even I could promote to a knight, not to mention a princess of one of the top 7 sects in Taixia Country, whose identity is much nobler than the princess of Sacred Golden Orchid Empire. Additionally, I was told that the top 7 sects in Taixia Country had

private towers of time, which were an extremely scarce resource. Of course, they could produce knights very fast...'

Zhang Tie thought through many things at once.

However, although Zhang Tie could not get her for the time being, he had been satisfied too much after knowing that Pandora lived pretty well with such a powerful background. After the demonized puppets disaster on subcontinents and witnessing hundreds of millions of people dying miserably, Zhang Tie just hoped Pandora to survive herself for a very long time until the moment just now.

Therefore, after knowing that Pandora was still alive, Zhang Tie became reassured.

Seeing that Pandora was still wearing the finger ring that he had gifted her, Zhang Tie became reassured and pretty moved. However, neither he nor Pandora could be as capricious as before.

Being once young and frivolous and having made an unalterable oath of marriage and always being moved by each other, Zhang Tie wondered how important he still was in Pandora's heart.

Due to the growth, changing environment, time and space and status, the innocence might have gradually faded away.

Given his current situation——being wanted by the Supreme Court in Taixia Country and being hunted by the official and mysterious powers of Taixia Country at the same time, Zhang Tie felt like being an alchemist's bomb which was going to explode at any time; therefore, he dared not expose his original look to Pandora in case of unpredictable troubles and dangers to the latter.

At this moment, he could only hold back even though he had too many words to say.

The previous performance of Zhang Tie was not out of his whim or impulsion. It was a decision that Zhang Tie made in a split second after consideration. With this start, if he was close to

Pandora again, or protected her or made good overtures to her, it would be regarded as a normal deed of a man who wanted to court Pandora.

Zhang Tie loved Pandora. Many times, one cared about and loved another in his own pattern.

As a princess of Demon Killing Valley, Pandora could easily gain a lot of suitors in the Lion Fortress due to her power, background, even the distinctive look. What happened just now was nothing strange to Pandora at all. As all the knights were very confident, not only Zhang Tie who was straightforward in the Lion Fortress.

Of course, Pandora didn't know that the suitor was Zhang Tie.

However, Zhang Tie knew that she was Pandora...

Although they had met each other, they could not recover their former ties.

Zhang Tie didn't withdraw his full attention from Pandora until her footsteps completely disappeared.

After departing for so many years, Zhang Tie suddenly re-encountered Pandora and departed with her in such a calm manner just like strangers.

Although Zhang Tie became spirited, his mind was still filled with the look of Pandora and the warm moments between them...

——Am I still your beloved one?

Zhang Tie asked inside, although he didn't expect that Pandora could hear it.

Pandora who had come to the outside of the Iron-blood Tower slowly stopped her footsteps while she faintly frowned her beautiful eyebrows. She suddenly felt melancholy like having missed something precious the moment she left the Iron-blood Tower. At the same time, her heart raced for a second...

Right then, a lightning bolt flashed across the skyline, closely

followed by a rumbling...

Pandora looked up and watched the rain curtain above the Lion Fortress——

After a long while...

"Am I still your beloved one?" Pandora muttered while her eyes became blurred.

That night, the rain was as heavy as this, however, that person was not on her side anymore. She was concerned about him so much.

"Miss..." One of the two knights who followed her walked forward and asked her what happened...

Closing her eyes for a few seconds, Pandora opened her eyes which had turned distant and decisive, "Let's go to the first abyss..."

After 10 more minutes, three lights rushed out of the gate of the Lion Fortress and disappeared in the heavy rain...

...

After being apart for so many years, Zhang Tie suddenly re-encountered Pandora and departed with her in such a calm manner just like strangers.

Chapter 919: Alluring Secret Items

After Pandora left...

Some more knights entered the Iron-blood Tower Bar. It was still boisterous over there; especially when some female knights entered the bar, they made the surrounding men restless at once. As a result, men queued up to invite those girls for a drink...

After throwing a glance at those female knights, Zhang Tie withdrew his eye lights.

The liquor in the bar was brewed by watermelons. It tasted like beer. Although it tasted a bit bitter and strange, this liquor would still cost one consumption point a cup.

Zhang Tie's mood was like the watermelon liquor in his hand. Watching Pandora leaving, Zhang Tie also felt a bit bitter. Besides, he felt a bit enraged inside...

However, he could only bury these feelings deep inside.

The surrounding knights were drinking and chatting. As for those usual contents, they directly talked with each other; however, even the usual contents were major events for commoners.

Some foreign knights being not far away from Zhang Tie were chatting that someone was going to be a No. 1 knight of a country in a subcontinent in a usual tone while the other knights at a farther table were discussing the advantages and disadvantages to be a corps leader at this moment.

In front of commoners, the topics such as becoming a No. 1 knight or a corps leader were all major events that could influence numerous people's fates. However, in Iron-blood Tower of the Lion Fortress, these contents were casually discussed and determined by knights.

This was the knights' world!

Zhang Tie sighed with emotions. Looking around these people, Zhang Tie knew that if a knight became famous in the Earth-elements Realm or in the Lion Fortress, he or she would have a great influence and reputation in the entire human world. If these knights could survive here, when they exited the Earth-elements Realm, they would be No. 1 in a region. They were on the top of the pyramid of human rights. If someone could become outstanding among these human knights, he or she would leave a brand in the top circle of humans. In the future, he or she would have an inestimable influence for sure.

Now that Pandora became famous in the Lion Fortress within such a short period, she must have a very powerful battle strength.

What happened just now was just a small episode for Gong Ziyao and Zhou Sufan. They didn't care about that at all. Actually, they had something to negotiate with Zhang Tie.

After having some cups of watermelon liquor and chatting, Gong Ziyao exchanged a glance with Zhou Shufan. Gong Ziyao then opened his mouth once again.

"Young brother, have you heard about silver secret items?"

Gong Ziyao asked in a secret way. Therefore, nobody else could hear that except for Zhang Tie.

"Yup, it's said that silver secret items are very marvelous. When in need, they could come out of nowhere after extracting four elements from the elements realm. They're very powerful!" Zhang Tie replied in a secret way too.

As for knights, only silver secret items that came from the underground world could be the exclusive equipment of knights. After promoting to knights, being affected by the black iron effect, most of the equipment for knights produced by rune equipment masters and alchemists were actually dispensable. It was not determined by someone, but by the difference between civilizations and levels in the long river course of history. Some

civilizations had been on the peak while some civilizations were still in the valley and remained unchanged.

"As young brother has just been here, I wonder whether you have gotten your exclusive silver secret item yet?"

"Elder brother Gong, you must be kidding. I'm new here, how could I have any silver secret item?" Zhang Tie replied with a smile.

Zhang Tie indeed got a silver secret item from the demon general. As he had not made it legitimate, Zhang Tie wouldn't expose it easily.

"To tell you the truth, brother Zhou and I have got a chance to gain silver secret items in the first abyss, therefore we came back to make some preparations for that. As we both like you and admire your battle strength very much, after negotiating with each other, we want to know whether young brother Cui would like to have a try with us and get a silver secret item for yourself so that you could have a self-protection in case of greater dangers in the future!"

Zhang Tie straightened up and put down his glass.

Gong Ziyao looked very solemn. It didn't look like a joke.

How could Zhang Tie refuse the chance to have a silver secret item aboveboard?

"Are you sure we can have some?"

"Not sure. Silver secret items are precious wherever they are. Anyone who got it would not like to expose it to the public; additionally, the more the better. However, as we've been staying in the Lion Fortress for a long time, we're well-informed. Additionally, we've met some friends. This time, we've got a chance to gain silver secret items. If young brother could join us, even if there's any danger, we three could form a 3-in-1 matrix and have a greater chance to survive ourselves."

"Are we going to the first abyss?"

"Yes, not only three of us. A team of knights in Lion Fortress would go there under the leadership of an earth knight. Those who will go there tonight would meet in the Iron-blood Tower! If young brother has determined to join us, we can go and meet the other knights after a while."

"Right in the Iron-blood Tower?"

"Yup, in a private room above us at 9 pm!"

Only after considering it for half a second, Zhang Tie had nodded and made his decision, "Sure, thanks to your appreciation, I will have a try with two elder brothers this time regardless of a mountain of swords and a sea of flames!"

Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan burst out into laughter at the same time.

"That's our friend, hahaha..."

...

After Zhang Tie fixed the plan with Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan, the group of three waited for the rest of the team while drinking and chatting in the bar. Only after a short while, some knights came to the lobby of the bar. After throwing a glance inside, one of them caught sight of Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan. He then pointed upstairs before going there from the staircase on one side.

Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan then exchanged a glance with Zhang Tie at the same time. The group of three then left their cassettes and went upstairs after the rest of the team...

Chapter 920: Mountain Lifting Hermit

The private room upstairs was more brilliant. Covering over 300 square meters, it was as resplendent and magnificent as an imperial palace.

Soon after Zhang Tie, Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan arrived here, the other knights constantly entered this private room.

It was a secret party for some knights in the Lion Fortress. Therefore, they all arrived here on time. After entering the private room, they exchanged a glance with each other and nodded at each other before taking a seat quietly.

Before 9 pm, 11 knights had arrived in the private room. They were in 4 groups, three groups were composed of 3 knights respectively while the rest two Hua knights were a couple given their genial looks and behaviors. One group was composed of three foreigners—a black tough man, a white tough man and a blonde woman.

The 4 groups of knights were destructive to a city or a nation in any subcontinent.

All the knights here had strong qis. They were at least more capable and vigorous than common black iron knights. Many of them had a bloody sense of oppression.

Many knights here threw a glance at Zhang Tie in spite of themselves because of Zhang Tie's sturdy figure and height and dowdy look.

Compared to the other knights, Zhang Tie was completely like a migrant worker from a slum as he only wore a set of common battle uniforms without any special weapon. However, the other knights' helmets, armors or portable weapons were all senior commodities which had broken the black iron effect. Given their looks, Zhang Tie knew that they were all elaborate works which

were worth millions of gold coins. Even the Hua couple in white and golden boa silk robes with white-sheath longswords at their waists looked like an immortal couple.

All the knights arrived at this private room a few minutes earlier than the regulation. After that, they just waited here and communicated with each other in a secret way.

A black tough guy constantly threw a glance at Zhang Tie. As his figure and height were outstanding among all the knights at present, he had not imagined that Zhang Tie was taller than him; additionally, Zhang Tie's muscles were as firm as steel which revealed an explosive strength faintly.

Watching the black tough man glancing at him, Zhang Tie grinned towards him.

This black tough man reminded Zhang Tie of Bagdad. Such a knight was definitely the idol of Bagdad.

At 9 pm, the door of the private room was pushed open from outside while a man entered.

Watching this man entering the room, all the knights who were sitting in the private room stood up at once so as to greet him.

Zhang Tie stood up together with Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan too; meanwhile, he glanced at the man out of curiosity.

That was an old man at his 60s. He was not tall and was even a bit thin. Besides two strands of silver hair near his temples, his hair looked pretty smooth and tidy. With bulgy nose and forehead and slim legs, his eyes glittered.

Given the sense of oppression which was overwhelming to black iron knights at present, Zhang Tie knew that this guy must be an earth knight. Given the other knights' response to him, Zhang Tie knew that this guy must be extremely dignified among these people.

"Mountain Lifting Hermit..." They all greeted him.

Mountain Lifting Hermit was the official name of this earth knight, which also represented his background in Taixia Country. Given his official name, he didn't serve the imperial palace or any major clan in Taixia Country. Otherwise, they would add Lord plus official positions such as General, Provincial Governor ahead of Mountain Lifting. However, if this guy originated from a major clan, he would be called Elder or Clan Head Mountain Lifting. The official name Mountain Lifting Hermit indicated that he was a lonely knight who used to cultivate himself or a member of a sect in Taixia Country.

Zhang Tie's current identity was also a lonely knight.

Mountain Liting Hermit nodded as he threw a glance over the knights at present before saying, "Please take a seat!"

After the Mountain Lifting Hermit issued an order, he walked to a long table in the private room and sat on the main seat. At the sight of this, the other knights in the corners and sofas of the private room also came to the long table and sat down.

As the table was longer than 10 m, it was available for over 20 people, not to mention the 12 knights in total.

Zhang Tie walked over there with Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan and sat inferior to them, also the end of the left side of Mountain Lifting Hermit. As Zhang Tie was tall and sturdy, he sat there with ease. On his opposite were the three foreign knights.

It felt like a mini-conference among knights. If being led by a black iron knight, this team was already destructive in Waii Subcontinent, not to mention that it was led by an earth knight.

Zhang Tie sighed with emotions inside, 'Lion Fortress is really a capital city of knights.'

It seemed that all the knights at present had known about Mountain Lifting Hermit; however, they were strange to each other. Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan were just a bit familiar with

that knight who greeted them in the lobby of the bar just now. They had heard about the others at most. Take the immortal couple as an instance, Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan heard that couple came from Huizhou Province, Taixia Country, who excelled at the combined strike. They had killed some demon knights in the Lion Fortress.

"Now that you came here, you must have known our purpose. I will put it simply. Our destination is a pre-historical relic in the first abyss. Due to the hurricane in the abyss, that pre-historical relic was accessible every 3 years. Last time, someone found the Mountain of Weapons in the pre-historical relic and gained a lot of silver secret items from there. Someone even gained nanobeads and space-teleportation equipment from there. My first target is nanobead and space-teleportation equipment!" The Mountain Lifting Hermit said in a muffled voice.

The moment the other black iron knights heard "Mountain of Weapons", they were in uproar at once.

"If so, Mountain Lifting Hermit, why do you summon us to go there? Based on your battle strength and skills, you could easily gain nanobead and space-teleportation equipment over there alone." The male of the couple on the right hand of Mountain Lifting Hermit posed his question. As knights, they all had their own concerns and benefits, especially in such an action. Even though Mountain Lifting Hermit was an earth knight, he was on equal footing with the other black iron knights on rights. He had no right to order the other black iron knights to do anything.

"That pre-historical relic is in a space like a Shangrila. It's a hieron. According to the knights who entered the pre-historical relics for the first time, some powerful battle puppets were safeguarding the pre-historical hieron inside. It would take a long time for one person to repel those battle puppets. Before the hurricane in the abyss sealed the pre-historical relic once again, I alone might not have a chance to gain any silver secret item or

other space-teleportation equipment. Therefore, if we go there in a team, we could share the stress and benefits together. It's a win-win situation!"

"You mean we might encounter enemies in the pre-historic relic?" Zhou Shufan asked after thinking for a second.

"Yes!" Mountain Lifting Hermit nodded immediately, "Additionally, the pre-historical relic is in a very deep place of the first abyss, which is crisscrossed with the frequent forces of the demons. We probably need to fight demons there. Even though we could enter the pre-historical relic, we might face competitions from other knights from the Lion Fortress. Therefore, it's a very dangerous action; plus, we cannot ensure that everyone at present could gain a silver secret item!"

"How do we allocate the booties?" The white knight on the opposite of Zhang Tie asked.

"Before entering the pre-historical relic, the booties and meritorious points that you gain from killing demon knights belong to yourselves. After entering the pre-historical relics, we will join hands to break the battle puppets in the hieron. The first space-teleportation equipment that our team gains belong to me, nanobead or others. If there's no space-teleportation equipment, the first silver secret item that our team gains belong to me. I enjoy the right of selecting one item at first. As for the rest, it depends. I don't need anything else from you!"

Mountain Lifting Hermit revealed his plan of allocation in an arrogant look yet fair way. As an earth knight with greater battle strength, the convener and the leader of this action, of course, he enjoyed a greater right of distribution.

After thinking for a second, everybody else nodded.

"As this action is very dangerous, I hope everybody at present is a powerhouse who has at least killed one demon knight." Mountain Lifting Hermit said as he focused on Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie was a newbie in the Lion Fortress. Therefore, few people knew him here; plus his dowdy look, no wonder Mountain Lifting Hermit paid more attention to him.

Hearing Mountain Lifting Hermit's suggestion, all the other knights moved their eyes onto Zhang Tie.

"Although young elder Cui Li has been in the Lion Fortress for less than 1 month, he has just killed an ox-head demon knight a few days ago!" Zhou Shufan said calmly.

All the others gleamed their eyes before moving their eyes away from Zhang Tie...

Mountain Lifting Hermit then moved his eyes away from all the other knights one after another before saying with absolute certainty, "Now that we've made a decision, we will set off at 9 pm tomorrow..."

Chapter 921: Becoming a Celestial Being

As knights treasured time so much, they did everything at a high efficiency.

The entire process of Mountain Lifting Hermit entering the room to leaving lasted less than 5 minutes. After a short meeting with each other, the 12 knights left the Iron-blood Tower respectively.

As they were going to set off at 9 pm tomorrow, they only had 24 hours left for making preparations in the Lion Fortress.

When Zhang Tie, Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan left the Iron-blood Tower, the heavy rain had not stopped yet. It was still pitch-dark outside the fortress.

"Brother Cui, we might encounter many accidents in this action, you'd better prepare some equipment in case of possible dangers!"

"Thanks, brother Zhou, I'm thinking about preparing something!"

"If you don't have enough consumption points and earth-elements crystals. Just tell us, we've got 10 more earth-elements crystals, you could exchange them for many items!"

"I've not used up the earth-elements crystals that I've exchanged with the horns of that ox-head demon. Additionally, I've got 1,000 consumption points left. It's enough!"

"Which weapon are you good at, brother Cui?"

"Spear!"

"Spear!" Zhou Shufan glanced at Zhang Tie's tower-like figure seriously as if he was imagining how Zhang Tie looked when he used a spear, "It's a popular weapon. You could buy it in the equipment stores in the fortress. Top-quality spears need to be customized which requires longer time. I'm afraid that you might not have enough time to customize spears."

"No problem, I will take a look in the equipment stores. By the way, I will buy some other items!"

"See you tomorrow then!"

"Yes, see you tomorrow!"

Gong Ziyao, Zhou Shufan and Zhang Tie then cupped their hands towards each other before separating from each other.

Seeing Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan off, Zhang Tie recalled Pandora's look once again...

Standing outside the Iron-blood Tower for a few seconds in an absent-minded way, Zhang Tie shook his head. After recalling the locations of the equipment stores on the map of the Lion Fortress, Zhang Tie strode away...

...

3 hours later, Zhang Tie returned to his private knight's tower with a senior metal field operations bag which was longer than 70 cm. A knight's battle spear which had been folded into three sections was inserted to one side of the bag.

It was a snapping-up, in which Zhang Tie spent 80% of his earth-elements crystals and consumption points.

The most expensive one among the commodities that he had purchased was that knight-level foldable battle spear, which was called abyss battle spear. It was 178 kg in weight and 3.8 m in length. The entire battle spear was made of abyss iron. Additionally, the body of the spear was attached with a Class III consolidating effect; the head of the spear was also granted with a rune effect of accelerated bleeding. This battle spear was made by an artisan master in the Lion Fortress. It cost Zhang Tie 11 earth-elements crystals.

As Zhang Tie was also an artisan master, at the sight of the spear, he had known the superb craftsmanship of the artisan master who made this abyss battle spear. Its maker was even better than

"Master Jiang" and Zhang Tie himself. It would take Zhang Tie at least 1.5 months to make a battle spear which was faintly dwarfed by this one.

In peacetime, abyss battle spear was portable as it could be folded into three sections. When in need, it would only take its owner a couple of seconds to assemble the three sections and play its role as a knight's battle spear.

Besides the abyss battle spear, Zhang Tie bought a pair of high metal tiger-claw shaped battle boots, which was waterproof, fire-resistant and pierce-resistant and carried the effect of Class II consolidating skill and a Class I cleaning effect. The Class II consolidating skill was common; however, the Class I cleaning effect was considerate for knights. With this rune effect, even if Zhang Tie constantly fought for months in the wild, he would never scare others away by his foot the moment he took off his battle boots.

This pair of battle boots cost Zhang Tie 6 earth-elements crystals. As a result, Zhang Tie only had 1 earth-elements crystal left.

Actually, there were better battle boots and battle spears. However, given his ability, Zhang Tie could only buy the two items.

As for others, the senior metal field operations bag and the sets of combat uniforms in the bag cost Zhang Tie more than 700 consumption points.

After returning to his knight's tower, Zhang Tie put down his belongings in the bedroom before entering Castle of Black Iron...

Since being wanted, Zhang Tie had not entered Castle of Black Iron.

...

"Ah..." The moment Zhang Tie entered Castle of Black Iron, he had heard a jarring exclamation instead of a Heller's greeting.

Right in the lobby of the palace tree, two girls of about 15 years were startled by Zhang Tie's sudden appearance as they exclaimed at once.

Zhang Tie was also stunned as he had not imagined that someone else was here. However, he instantly remembered that he had promised Heller to have some youngsters go up the mountain last time.

When he took his parents in, he didn't see the two girls. It was really out of his imagination that he could see them this time.

"This is the God of Karma whom you're worshipping. The God could freely access to the secular world and his own immortal country in his incarnation. No panic!"

Heller always appeared in time. After hearing that this one was the celestial being that they had been worshipping, the two beautiful girls hurriedly knelt down.

Heller blinked his eyes towards Zhang Tie. After understanding Heller's meaning, Zhang Tie instantly triggered his body-changing immortal bloodline and recovered his original look. At the sight of Zhang Tie's original look, the two girls immediately lowered their heads and almost touched the ground. They dared not glance at Zhang Tie anymore as if they were very guilty...

Zhang Tie only recovered his original face; however, his figure remained unchanged. As Cui Li's figure was much larger than Zhang Tie's, if he recovered his original figure, his pants would rip off at once. He could not continue to disguise as a celestial being by pulling his pants.

However, it was enough for him to just change his face. Watching the two girls being so scared and thrilled, Heller told them to leave...

'God of Karma?' Zhang Tie blinked his eyes towards Heller as he wondered when did he become the God of Karma of those residents

in Castle of Black Iron.

...

Chapter 922: Golden Lotus Flowers over the Magma Lake

"Castle Lord!" Heller bowed towards Zhang Tie after the two awe-stricken and exciting girls left.

Zhang Tie asked Heller, "What's the God of Karma?"

"It's the official appellation of Castle Lord given by the residents in Castle of Black Iron. Karma represents reprimand and redemption. It's both a start and an end. Karma is the top rule, the source of all the strengths, nature and all the rules. All the rules are the concrete manifestation of karma. The God of Karma is the top celestial being and the Creator. The appellation indicates that the residents in Castle of Black Iron worship and respect you!" Heller said with a solemn look.

"Is that real?"

Zhang Tie touched his bald head in a bashful way as he felt the appellation was something great.

"Erm...is it okay?" Zhang Tie asked Heller in a faintly shameful way. It might be a bit exaggerated for a mortal to be worshipped as a celestial being.

"What are you concerned about, Castle Lord?" Heller asked.

'Hmm, whatever, it's just an appellation. Nothing to be worried about it.'

'Could a wanted man also be worshipped like a celestial being?' Zhang Tie smiled in a self-deprecatd manner. Closely after that, he walked towards the small tree which was covered with fruits.

After so many days, the small tree was covered with leakless fruits.

Besides, two fruits of redemption from the gratitude of gulf shrimps and hairy shellfish were also hanging over the small tree,

which looked pretty brilliant...

——Fruit of Redemption from the gratitude of gulf shrimps. It's already ripe. Usage: Pick and direct eat it. Notice: The fruit cannot be taken out of the Castle of Black Iron. After twelve hours of having been picked off the tree, its energy and vitality will gradually decline.

——With this fruit, Castle Lord could accelerate the healing and recovering ability by 18.7% and increase the upper limit in endurance capacity in the hypoxic environment by 9.3%.

——Fruit of Redemption from the gratitude of hairy shellfish. It's already ripe. Usage: Pick and direct eat it. Notice: The fruit cannot be taken out of the Castle of Black Iron. After twelve hours of having been picked off the tree, its energy and vitality will gradually decline.

——With this fruit, Castle Lord could increase the defensive capability and anti-strike ability by 4.3%.

The two ripe fruits of redemption indicated that Paul had been carrying out his task by setting free gulf shrimps and hairy shellfish after Zhang Tie left Yanghe Prefecture.

Zhang Tie revealed a big smile before starting to enjoy the fruits.

Rome was not built in one day.

A long journey began with the first step. After taking so many fruits one after another, Zhang Tie gradually climbed up to the higher peaks.

These leakless fruits became the "tonic" of Zhang Tie's battle qi. Zhang Tie ate them one after another like having common fruits. Zhang Tie soon ate up all the leakless fruits that had been accumulated during the past months. After that, Zhang Tie started to take the fruits of redemption. Compared to those leakless fruits, it took Zhang Tie about 3 hours to fully digest the two fruits of redemption, which was a bit longer than that required by those

leakless fruits.

After returning to the Lion Fortress for only 2 days, Zhang Tie had promoted to 1 change black iron knight and gained an overall improvement in power from "King Roc Sutra". After taking so many fruits, Zhang Tie's potential overall strength increased once more.

After digesting these fruits, Zhang Tie got off the sacrificial altar. When he was going back to his private knight's tower, he was stopped by Heller.

"Castle Lord, you might have already forgotten something."

"What?"

"Castle Lord, how did you feel in the first abyss?"

"Nice, but it was too misty over there. I had a poor vision inside it!" Zhang Tie replied with a confused look.

"The garrison knights in the Lion Fortress have to drink one vial of senior night-viewing medicament per year so as to stay in the Earth-elements Realm. I'm afraid that Castle Lord has forgotten that you could have a dark vision ability without taking night-viewing medicament!"

After hearing Heller's words, Zhang Tie became confused at first; after that, he blinked his eyes as if he had recalled something. Closely after that, he was in ecstasy...

Many people have the similar experiences. When making a move, they would suddenly find a passbook in a corner or some gold coins that they once hid. They then felt having a windfall.

That was how Zhang Tie felt at this moment. After being busy fighting demons these years, he might have forgotten about this if not being reminded by Heller.

He remembered that he had one more treasure in Castle of Black Iron—Fiery Flame Lotus.

After taking the seeds of the Fiery Flame Lotus, he could have a dark vision ability which was more effective than night-viewing medicament.

"Oh, how about the Fiery Flame Lotus in Castle of Black Iron now?"

"Why not take a look at them with me, Castle Lord?" Heller suggested as he stretched out his hand to invite Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie immediately rushed into the underground tunnel of the palace tree.

The underground tunnel of the palace tree was linked with the Immortal Mountain.

The inside of the Immortal Mountain had a wonderful scenery.

The hinterland of the Immortal Mountain included the largest warehouse of Castle of Black Iron, Aziz's cellars and Edward's foundry.

As for rune equipment masters, Edward's foundry was really attractive where Edward used dozens of extremely pure underground flames in different temperatures to extract items. Each rune equipment master was desiring about having such a workshop. They could not imagine about having dozens of underground flames in different temperatures in the same workshop at all.

In the past, Zhang Tie didn't understand why Edward chose to build it in the hinterland of the Immortal Mountain. Now, in the eyes of an artisan master, Zhang Tie found that Edward's foundry in the Immortal Mountain was really a DreamWorks for rune equipment masters. He realized that he would not find the second foundry like this in the world outside Castle of Black Iron.

Right at the bottom of the Immortal Mountain, Zhang Tie saw numerous glittering fiery flame lotus on a magma lake which covered tens of thousands of square meters.

Among the glittering lotus leaves were golden lotus flowers. Some golden lotus buds were getting ready to burst; some had been in full bloom; some golden lotus flowers had bred seedpod.

The entire space above the magma lake was filled with an exotic fragrance.

The remaining lotus seeds that he left here had become a wide area of fiery flame lotus leaves, flowers and seeds.

At the sight of such a luxuriant scene in the magma lake, Zhang Tie felt a contradictory déjà vu. Many people might have already seen common lotus flowers covering a lake; however, Zhang Tie bet that they had never seen so many fiery flame lotus leaves, flowers and seeds over a magma lake. Even his master Zhao Yuan might not have seen that before.

This was a top luxuriant scene and the manifestation of the good luck in Castle of Black Iron. It was Castle of Black Iron who was the celestial being instead of him.

"After the first batch of fiery flame lotus become ripe, Castle Lord didn't care about it as if you didn't need fiery flame golden lotus seed for the time being; therefore, I decided all by myself to sow those seeds. After so many years, due to the nourishment of the aura in Castle of Black Iron, they finally reached such a scale. There were 1149 fiery flame golden lotus seeds in this magma lake."

Zhang Tie squatted beside the magma lake as he touched one fiery flame golden lotus leaf out of curiosity. As large as a common lotus leaf, it was not hot but the texture was like a metal. It was like a super alloy leaf. Although Zhang Tie had a terrifying strength, he could still not crumb the fiery flame golden lotus leaf; instead, he could only leave a fingerprint on it. Zhang Tie flicked at it, causing two melodious, silvery metallic sounds.

The subtlety of silicon-based life was really out of Zhang Tie's imagination.

As an artisan master, Zhang Tie instinctively knew that the leaf of this fiery flame lotus was an extremely rare material. Besides being light and firm, the leaf also had some special functions. Battle armors being made of the leaves of fiery flame lotus were definitely rare.

Zhang Tie touched its stem and felt bristles as hard as metal on it. Like lotus leaf, lotus stem was also a rare raw material of equipment.

Zhang Tie picked himself up from the ground and asked Heller, "What's the lotus root of this fiery flame lotus used for?"

"The root of the fiery flame lotus is not available to you, Castle Lord."

"Why?"

"Even after being processed, the effects of the root of fiery flame golden lotus could only be digested by earth knights. After taking its root, earth knights could raise their high temperature-resistant ability to an unimaginable level and could further improve their protective battle qi. As a result, when in a defensive state, earth knights could also harm their enemies."

"Protective battle qi could be aggressive?"

"Castle Lord, you have already seen your master Zhao Yuan perform it!"

Zhang Tie remembered that the moment the LV 10 fighter from Zhen Clan in Heavens Cold City touched Zhao Yuan's clothes, his arms had burned into ashes...

Watching these lotus flowers, Zhang Tie wondered what effect would he gain after taking all of these fiery flame lotus seeds.

"After 3 days, Castle Lord could try the taste of these fiery flame golden lotus seeds. Castle Lord will have a big surprise by then!" Heller said leisurely.

...

When Zhang Tie exited the Castle of Black Iron, he had been fully confident about the coming action.

One day flew past...

...

At 8:50 pm, November 3rd, after putting away his belongings, Zhang Tie carried his metal field operations bag with an abyss spear on its side and a gold-eaten tri-edged dagger in a metal sheath beside his waist in a soft armor and a pair of metal tiger-claw shaped battle boots and came to the outside of the gate of Lion Fortress.

As the old saying went, a fair bird had fair feathers. With such a wholly new set of equipment, Zhang Tie looked much more powerful than that a few days ago. He was filled with killing qi at the moment.

Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan had arrived here a few minutes earlier than Zhang Tie. Besides carrying a knight-level field operations bag respectively, Gong Ziyao wore a set of half-body metal armor, Zhou Shufan wore a set of senior grey knight-level soft armor with a short sword at one side of his waist. Watching Zhang Tie punching his card and striding out of the gate, Gong Ziyao's and Zhou Shufan's eyes gleamed at the same time.

"Brother Cui, you look extremely brave. If you were in a senior armor, you would look more dignified!"

"Ha...ha...brothers, you don't look bad, either!" Zhang Tie burst into laughter.

In only a few minutes, those whom Zhang Tie had met in the Iron-blood Tower had arrived one after another. Almost each of them was carrying a knight-level field operations bag.

Without a space-teleportation equipment, even being knights, they had to take enough food and water with them. With one

kettle of water, the knight might survive the dilemma. Therefore, nobody dared be careless at this critical moment.

The garrison knights at the gate of the Lion Fortress were not shocked by such a team of knights as they could catch sight of many teams of knights going on expeditions everyday. No matter what these knights were going there for, as long as they left the Lion Fortress, they might encounter demons. In that case, they had to end the battles by forces. Objectively, these teams of knights going on expeditions safeguarded the Lion Fortress.

Mountain Lifting Hermit also arrived here on time with a metal bag on his back. After ensuring that everybody had arrived, Mountain Lifting Hermit nodded and issued the order, "Let's go!". Closely after that, he rose in the air, followed by all the others.

As an earth knight, Mountain Lifting Hermit moved very fast in the air. Only after a short while, Zhang Tie felt that he had reached almost 800 km per hour. The others hurriedly followed him up.

As for common black iron knights, it was a bit difficult for them to constantly fly at such a high speed for a few hours.

As Mountain Lifting Hermit flew, he kept observing the performance of the others. Actions spoke louder than words. If a black iron knight could have an excellent performance in the air, his battle strength would not be too bad.

Although all the knights in this team had killed demon knights and were elites in the Lion Fortress, they were also different than each other in battle strength.

Only flying 1 hour at such a high speed, the differences between the knights in battle strength had been exposed.

The couple was still closely following up Mountain Lifting Hermit while the three foreign knights had gradually lagged behind.

Zhang Tie, Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan were close to each

other. Although being in the middle of the team, Zhang Tie's leisure look won more glances from Mountain Lifting Hermit. As a result, Mountain Lifting Hermit nodded inside...

...

As for Zhang Tie, through this action, he might get silver secret items or kill demon knights. Even if they did not encounter a demon knight, it would also be a big achievement for a newbie to explore a mysterious region in the first abyss under the leadership of so many veterans. He just took this action as a knights' travel in the first abyss.

Therefore, Zhang Tie was the most relaxed one among them...

Mountain Lifting Hermit enjoyed a great dignity among this team of knights, which was not formed in a short period. Instead, it was gradually formed through long-term contacts with him. For example, Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan once fought together with Mountain Lifting Hermit in the first abyss a couple of years ago. Therefore, they believed in him very much.

According to Zhang Tie's observation, although Mountain Lifting Hermit was a bit solemn, his moral standing was reliable. Without personal charisma, he would not easily organize such a team.

In Lion Fortress, the moral standing of an earth knight could easily become a widely accepted secret among black iron knights in a very short period.

...

After leaving the Lion Fortress for less than 1.5 hours, someone in the team had already been exhausted. Mountain Lifting Hermit noticed that; therefore, he landed, followed by the others. They started to run on the ground...

As for knights, as long as they were not flying but were running rapidly on the ground, it was almost like taking a rest.

After landing, their running speed was about 200 km per hour.

While running, they could adjust their breaths.

As for Zhang Tie, running was a piece of cake.

After 4 hours, Mountain Lifting Hermit rose in the air once again, closely followed by all the others...

After one night's travel, they finally appeared in front of the first abyss on the next morning when it started to break in the Earth-elements Realm...

Mountain Lifting Hermit landed in a valley less than 10 km away from the first abyss. There were some plants and a brook in this valley. It was the ideal place for supply and resting before entering the first abyss. It seemed that Mountain Lifting Hermit was familiar with this route very much.

"After resting 3 hours here, we will enter the first abyss!" The moment they landed here, Mountain Lifting Hermit had issued the order.

After that, Mountain Lifting Hermit found a place and entered cultivation calmly with eyes closed.

Zhang Tie came to the lower reach of the brook and washed his face.

"Hello, I'm Filton, a knight from the Grims Republic on the Western Continent. What's your name?" The black knight walked to Zhang Tie and greeted him...

Filton spoke Hua language fluently...

'Grims Republic?' Zhang Tie became stunned for a second. He remembered that he had heard about this nation before, 'Oh, yes, it's the trading partner of Ms. Olina's Navyblue Castle on the Western Continent.'

Zhang Tie picked himself up from the ground as he casually cleaned his hand on his clothes before saying straightforwardly, "I'm Cui Li, from Yongzhou Province..."

Zhang Tie stretched out his hand towards Filton; however, Filton cupped his hands towards Zhang Tie...

After being stunned for a second, they changed their gestures at the same time.

This time, Zhang Tie cupped his hands; however, Filton stretched out his hand.

After exchanging a glance with each other, they burst out into laughter at the same time.

"Cecilia made a bet with me just now. She said I was destined to be snubbed!" Filton smiled.

"Ah? Why?"

"Because all the Hua knight that we've known in Lion Fortress before were too arrogant or too reserved. Additionally, you don't look like a kind-hearted man!" Filton threw a glance at the blonde female knight who was looking at them from hundreds of meters away.

That female knight called Cecilia was hot in terms of both figure and look. Although her oval face was not extremely beautiful, she looked valiant, heroic and elegant. Plus her long blond hair, she looked pretty charming.

"Hahaha, you could tell that tomato, besides arrogant and reserved ones, there are also sincere ones like me who'd like to make friends with others among Hua people!"

After hearing the word "tomato", the female knight replied with a cold harrumph.

"Do you think that I'm sincere?" Filton pointed at his own nose.

"I have a brother who looks similar to you. You remind me of him! In the saying of your black guys—if someone liked to be friends with you even though you didn't have any beautiful younger sister, he would not be too bad. I've not got any beautiful

younger sister..."

Filton burst out into laughter...

When the two people were making fun of each other, the other knights kept that in mind. Nobody could imagine that Zhang Tie would have fun with that foreign knight. Even Mountain Lifting Hermit had opened his eyes and thrown a glance at Zhang Tie once again...

Chapter 923: Sects and Team Members

Even though they didn't know each other before, after staying with each other for 3 days, they had become familiar with each other.

At least, Zhang Tie had known all of them after 3 days.

Of course, the head of this team was still Mountain Lifting Hermit who always looked serious.

As for the immortal couple, the male was Lu Zhongming while the female was Lin Huanxi. They both came from Guzhou Province, Taixia Country. They usually lived in the Minling Mountain, Guzhou Province, Taixia Country seclusively. Additionally, they were the heads of Minling Sword Sect in Minling Mountain and had over 1,000 disciples over there. Therefore, they were well-known in Guzhou Province.

In Taixia Country, if any knight did not want to be an official or a hermit, could establish a sect in a famous mountain. Of course, the top 7 sects were the most eminent in Taixia Country. Below the top 7 sects, there were numerous sects established by knights in each province or prefecture. This was an implicit rule in Taixia Country. In Waii Subcontinent, many sects were developed in places such as fighting clubs. Over there, even a great battle master or battle general might establish a sect in a country, not to mention a knight. However, in Taixia Country, besides gangs in streets, all the sects should be at least established by a black iron knight. This indicated that any sect in Taixia Country at least carried forward the battle skills and knowledge of a black iron knight. The disciples in these sects could have chances to promote to knights.

Those below knights, even battle spirits were not qualified to establish a sect in Taixia Country. If someone dared violate the implicit rule in Taixia Country, his sect would be destroyed by

someone else in only a few days. Without a black iron knight on their back, how could they defend their undertaking?

This was why Taixia Country was full of powerful ones. Besides the huge population, the cultivation environment in Taixia Country was pretty good. Any youth who had a rich family and was decisive and strong-willed would have a greater chance to join a sect in Taixia Country and carry forward the knowledge of a knight-level powerhouse if they could travel across Taixia Country.

Although there were a lot of sects in Waii Subcontinent, none of them could provide a chance for commoners to carry forward the knowledge of a knight.

The couple Lu Zhongming and Lin Huanxi were most careful in the team. They always maintained cleanliness all over. Each time they landed and took a rest, they would clean themselves. Before having a rest on the ground, they would take out a piece of cloth from their bag and pave it over the ground. After that, they would sit on the cloth. In the term before the Catastrophe, they were petty bourgeois in the team.

However, they were qualified to be petty bourgeois, although Lu Zhongming and Lin Huanxi were black iron knights, they had entered 8 changes black iron stage at the same time. At least they were the best ones below Mountain Lifting Hermit from cultivation base.

By contrast, according to Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan, Mountain Lifting Hermit had entered 2 changes earth knight stage two years ago. Of course, it was impossible for him to enter 3 changes earth knight stage in only 2 years; however, Mountain Lifting Hermit had consolidated his realm and battle strength much more.

In Lion Fortress, Mountain Lifting Hermit had killed 6 black iron demon knights and fought earth demon knights for more than 3

times. He was an experienced knight.

In the entire team, besides Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan, the three foreign knights Filton, Cecilia and Bolam were familiar with Zhang Tie first. The three foreign knights were all from the Western Continent. Filton came from Grims Republic, Cecilia came from Francia Empire, which was a big country in the center of Western Continent and had over 10 billion population. The total area of Francia Empire was equal to the size of a province in Taixia Country. Its overall national strength was a bit greater than that of Grims Republic. Francia Empire was the core strength of the Western Continent.

After knowing that Cecilia came to Lion Fortress alone, Zhang Tie admired this woman's braveness too.

Bolam was that white knight. Even he didn't know which country did he belong to. For as long as he could remember, he had been traversing across so many countries on the Western Continent. His mother was a performer in a traveling circus. Even his mother didn't know whom his father was. Since he was born, he had been traveling across the continent with the circus. He did not stay at any place for over 1 month. Later on, he left the circus and started to travel everywhere alone. He promoted to a knight in an airship. Bolam was obsessed with fighting skills. He was always silent and would not speak more than 5 sentences a day.

The three people met in a knight's bar in the Lion Fortress. They then organized a group and gradually became familiar with each other.

By the way, it was the commonest form for three knights to organize a group in the Lion Fortress, because three knights could form a 3-in-1 matrix at the critical moment and could greatly increase their viability in the first abyss. The other 6 knights in the team usually worked together in a group of 2.

Among the rest 6 people, 3 of them were respectively elders of

three major clans in Force Province, who were called Yang Zhenjun, Zhao Youxian and Qian Yi respectively. Their clans had at least 5 cities in Force Province. Yang Zhenjun had long known Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan.

As for the rest 3 knights, one was called Tai Rufeng who came from Tai Clan in Yanzhou Province, Taixia Country. Tai Clan was the clan of the provincial governor of Yanzhou Province; one was called Hua Qianxia who came from Songzhou Province, Taixia Country as an elder of Gulao Mountain in Songzhou Province; one was called Ximen Fu who came from Heavens Holding Pavilion, one of the top 7 sects in Taixia Country.

All of these knights, including Cecilia, had killed demon knights. All of them had a deep background or rich experience. By contrast, Cui Li might be the commonest one among them.

Besides Mountain Lifting Hermit, 4 of the 8 knights from Taixia Country were from sects. Therefore, Zhang Tie started to become interested in sects in Taixia Country very much. In the 3 days, as long as Zhang Tie was free, he would inquire about sects in Taixia Country from the couple, Hua Qianxia and Ximen Fu.

Compared to the clan system which was maintained in terms of bloodlines, the sect system in Taixia Country had a greater influence and speed in development.

How long would it take a black iron knight to reproduce a clan of more than 10,000 people? At least several generations. However, it would take a black iron knight less than 1 year to accept 10,000 disciples. Additionally, the development of sects was out of the limit of regions and bloodlines. Many times, when some talents in a clan were accepted by a certain sect, the clan would be bound to the chariots of the sect and become closely related to the sect on interests. The more apprentices the sect had, the greater the community of interests would be.

If two knights with the similar conditions launched a

competition of developing their own forces from the same starting line, one chose clan route, the other chose sect route. In 10 years, the one who chose sect route would have an overwhelming strength than the one who chose the clan route.

In Taixia Country, the cohesive force of sects being maintained in terms of the relationship between masters and apprentices was very powerful. The relationship between masters and apprentices could completely match that between the emperor and the chancellors and between fathers and sons. The leader of a sect could have the right to determine the life or death of his apprentices.

The monarchical power of the country, the power of clans and the power of masters of sects crisscrossed with each other in Taixia Country and determined the fate of Taixia Country.

The sects in Taixia Country were actually the most vigorous systems. Some sects in Taixia Country could last over 1,000 years. Given this point, one would know the power of sects in Taixia Country.

'Why was I framed by people and had to escape everywhere this time? In the final analysis, I'm too weak in both strength and background. If I was a disciple of one of the top sects in Taixia Country or if I had established my own sphere of influence in Taixia Country, the one who framed me would not make it so easily as he had to consider the outcome of it.'

The current situation and prospect of the power of sect in Taixia Country reminded Zhang Tie of something.

'What if I establish a sect in Taixia Country?'

Now that he could not rely on Huaiyuan Palace anymore and didn't want to be restricted too much by being an official in Taixia Country, he had to establish his own sect so as to expand his own influence.

The moment this whim occurred to his mind, it had started to grow up crazily in Zhang Tie's mind.

'However, it is not the right moment to do that now. I don't need to consider it at least before promoting to an earth knight.'

'The influence of a sect being established by a black iron knight is utterly different than that being established by an earth knight. Additionally, my current identity Cui Li is not well-known above ground or underground. It's boring to establish a sect and be a rustic emperor in a remote palace.'

'After establishing an Ancient-God Church in Ice and Snow Wilderness, I have firmly controlled the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness and all the Slavs. If I establish a sect in Taixia Country, perhaps...I will have bright prospects!'

...

After 3 days, the team had deepened thousands of miles into the first abyss and started to enter the main battlefield between demon knights and human knights...

Chapter 924: Encountering Demon Knights

During the past 3 days since they entered the first abyss, this team didn't encounter any demon knight at all.

In the first abyss, the team of 12 human knights moved and rested together. The distance between every two members would not exceed 100 m. Even though, they would have the same probability to encounter demon knights as that a single human knight would have in the first abyss.

As the proverb went, when one usually walked along the riverside, how could his shoes not get wet.

On the 4th day since they entered the first abyss, when they reached the conventional battlefield of the first abyss, they finally encountered demon knights.

...

Mountain Lifting Hermit was flying ahead of the team, closely followed by the other 11 human knights in the shape of herringbone. Everybody had hidden their battle qi lusters and followed up Mountain Lifting Hermit in the black fog along the precipice of the first abyss.

All of a sudden, Zhang Tie caught sight of some lusters flickering in the black fog over 20 miles ahead of them.

Due to the dense fog in the abyss, he could faintly judge that they were knights' battle qis.

However, Zhang Tie remained silent. Through these days' observation, Zhang Tie had realized that he could have a greater vision than the others due to his dark vision ability.

Until the flickering lusters moved another hundred of meters ahead in a few seconds did Mountain Lifting Hermit stop.

Everyone had caught sight of the faint battle qis in the distant

black fog.

Due to the long distance, Mountain Lifting Hermit could not see it clearly. Additionally, the looming battle qis were separating and gathering from time to time. Therefore, it was very difficult to determine how many forces were there.

As the leader of this team, Mountain Lifting Hermit was expected by all the others to work out a plan in such a case.

Generally, battle qis in the first abyss indicated an ongoing battle. Of course, it might also be a fatal trap. The party which thought that they were advantageous in battle strength or had powerhouses on their back might simulate an ongoing battle by releasing battle qis in the first abyss on purpose so as to attract the opponent passers-by and ambush them. Such a trick was usually seen in the first abyss by both demons and humans. The fatal trap was like angling in water. Of course, if the anglers had a bad luck, they might encounter a great white or a billhead, when he might be tragic.

Generally, shadow knights and heavenly knights had disdained playing such a trick. Those who dared play such a trick would always be a team of knights led by one or two earth knights.

Narrowing his eyes, Mountain Lifting Hermit watched the battle qis in the distant fog with flickering eyes. Only after thinking a couple of seconds, he had made the decision, "I need one person to take a look over there with me. The others just hide here! If it's a trap ahead of us, I will send a signal to you. You then retreat to the place where we rested last time. After we broke through their encirclement, we will converge with you over there!"

"I will go there with Mountain Lifting Hermit!" Soon after Mountain Lifting Hermit finished his words, Zhang Tie had jumped out.

Demon knights were definitely "tunics" for Zhang Tie. Although it might be a trap, Zhang Tie still wanted to take a look over there.

It would be better for him if it was not a trap. Before determining to interfere with it, Mountain Lifting Hermit actually could determine to have his team detour that place and the rest of the team would not have any different opinion about that. However, they would feel a bit uncomfortable if they just detoured that place. Because, it might be unkind for them to do that. As human knights, if they didn't stand on the side of their same kind when facing demons, they would face a mental test on being righteous or not.

The boldness of execution stems from superb skill. As his battle strength grew increasingly powerful, Zhang Tie became increasingly bolder.

He might have dangers there with Mountain Lifting Hermit. If it was indeed a trap in front of them, they might be trapped. As for the same trap, an earth knight might be able to escape out; however, a black knight might not. If it was not a trap, after a black iron knight and an earth knight joined the battle, given the scale of the faint battle qis, the balance between both parties would be altered at once. As a result, the human knights would have an overwhelming advantage.

If it was a trap, it would be more convenient for them to break through the encirclement; if not, the trace of their team would not be exposed. This consideration indicated that Mountain Lifting Hermit was very shrewd and righteous.

Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan both wanted to say something; however, now that Zhang Tie wanted to go there, they didn't feel it proper to stop him at this moment. It was improper if they persuaded Zhang Tie that it was too dangerous over there and let others go there.

After throwing a glance at Zhang Tie, Mountain Lifting Hermit nodded. Closely after that, he flew towards the flickering battle qi totems, followed by Zhang Tie.

The moment they left, the other knights of the team had exchanged a glance with each other before hiding somewhere nearby.

Being not far from them was a precipice of the first abyss. In the precipice, there were many vertical, valley-like gullies as deep as hundreds of meters. The gullies had been covered with thick and huge abyss vines. Any gully could hide hundreds of people, not to mention 10.

While hiding his battle qi luster, Zhang Tie flew towards the battlefield closely after Mountain Lifting Hermit...

It only took Zhang Tie and Mountain Lifting Hermit a bit longer than 2 minutes to finish the trip of over 20 miles.

It was not a trap, but a real battle between human knights and demon knights.

3 human knights in uniformed greenish armors were fighting fiercely with 4 ox-head demon knights. As demons outnumbered humans, the 4 demon knights had already been in an advantageous position.

The battle was undergoing pretty fiercely.

Each party had formed a 3-in-1 battle formation, the surplus demon knight was constantly booming the 3-in-1 human formation on one side, causing a great disturbance and stress to them.

"I will assault the demon formation, you deal with that surplus demon knight as soon as possible!" Mountain Lifting Hermit told Zhang Tie in a secret way.

"Okay!" Zhang Tie's heart had long been pounding.

The moment Zhang Tie finished his words, Mountain Lifting Hermit had released his battle qi luster and accelerated his speed by 2 times towards the 3-in-1 demon formation. Zhang Tie also released his battle qi luster and accelerated towards the surplus demon knight.

Due to the low visibility in the first abyss, their sudden acceleration made the four demon knights off-guard at once.

Being hundreds of meters away from the 4 demons, Mountain Lifting Hermit had released his huge virtual image which was hundreds of meters in height.

After promoting to earth knights, knights would manifest the virtual images of their battle skills when their battle qis were extremely vigorous. The virtual images were the symbols of knights above earth knights. Knights' virtual images were illuminant objects which were almost material objects being composed of battle qi, spiritual energy and willingness like that of battle qi totems of fighters. However, knights' virtual images were several levels higher than that of battle qi totems.

The appearance of the virtual image of an earth knight indicated that the earth knight had spent his full effort in the battle.

The virtual image of Mountain Lifting Hermit was an extremely fierce giant who was embracing a hill.

With the appearance of the virtual image, Mountain Lifting Hermit who was not tall previously instantly became much more muscled.

The moment he launched an attack, Mountain Lifting Hermit had exerted his full efforts like how a lion pounced on a hare.

"Go die!" Mountain Lifting Hermit roared like causing a spring thunder.

At the same time, Mountain Lifting Hermit released a light beam by his hand and stroke one of the 3-in-1 demon knight, sending him flying backward...

The 3-in-1 formation was collapsed in a split second.

The demon knights were shocked greatly while the 3 human knights became spirited immediately...

The surplus ox-head demon knight was also stunned. He caught sight of Zhang Tie who was accelerating at him. Therefore, he slashed towards Zhang Tie by his huge saber, being accompanied with a fierce saber qi...

Zhang Tie accelerated once again as fast as a lightning bolt being benefited from the effect of the "Fire Dragon Flowing Light Battle Skill". At this moment, the gold-eaten tri-edged dagger appeared in Zhang Tie's hand and protected Zhang Tie's body from being harmed by the saber qi like a diamond crown.

The saber qi of the demon knight was split up by Zhang Tie's gold-eaten tri-edged dagger into two halves and rubbed with Zhang Tie's protective battle qi as if it was going to cut open Zhang Tie's protective battle qi.

Being pushed by this saber qi, Zhang Tie became faintly absent-minded in a split second when time and space might have paused.

Being pushed by this saber qi, he felt like being pressed by sea water and two undercurrents at the bottom of the sea when in a high-speed flight. If he could take advantage of this stress, he could move faster instead of slowing down. Similarly, when one peeled a banana, the moment one put forth one's strength, one would send the banana flying out of its peel.

In the sky, when he took advantage of the wind strength facing him, his glider would also win an elevating force and driving force. The secret lay in the difference between the upper and lower planes of the wings of the glider...

Zhang Tie had experienced the similar scenes so many times in both sea and sky.

Facing that stress, Zhang Tie ran his spiritual energy while he shrunk his protective battle qi and adjusted it in the shape of a spindle. Closely after that, he rapidly shrunk and rocked his protective battle qi. When sensing the changing stress and friction force, Zhang Tie accelerated once again and rushed towards that

demon knight in an overwhelming way...

In a split second...

The tri-edged dagger split off the saber qi of the demon knight and broke its protective battle qi before stabbing into the demon knight's body immediately...

The demon knight watched Zhang Tie with a dumbfounded yet a pain-free look...

Chapter 925: A Destructive Strike

Nobody had imagined that Zhang Tie could directly break the demon knight's strike and stab his dagger into its body, including Mountain Lifting Hermit, Zhang Tie, even the demon knight itself.

It was out of everyone's imagination that Zhang Tie could break the demon knight's saber qi, his amazing speed and the sharpness of his tri-edged dagger.

If not the powerful gold-eaten tri-edged dagger, Zhang Tie's sensitiveness to air flow and stress after long-term exercise in water and sky and his ability to convert this sensitiveness into his advantage in superb skills, if the demon knight didn't launch a long-distance strike at him when he rushed towards it...Zhang Tie would never do that in a split second.

The speed of the simulated "Fire Dragon Flowing Light Battle Skill" had reached over 70% of that of the real battle skill. The moment Zhang Tie converted the stress of the saber qi into driving force, his speed had reached twice that of the "Fire Dragon Flowing Light Battle Skill" in a split second.

What a destructive blow!

A blow being accomplished with super high speed and strength at a certain time and under specific conditions.

The demon knight had not imagined that Zhang Tie could move so fast and penetrate through its protective battle qi with such great strength.

The protective battle qi of the demon knight could not be penetrated through easily. Although the demon knight felt that its protective battle qi had been extremely pressed and cut open by the sharp dagger, its protective battle qi was still elastic. It was Zhang Tie's terrifying strength that had his dagger break the upper bearing limit of the demon knight's protective battle qi like cutting

through a piece of steel by a dagger.

After being dumbfounded for less than 0.1 seconds, with the secondary harm caused by the dagger's battle qi, the demon knight finally roared. Closely after that, it felt one wrist being tightened. It was Zhang Tie again who gripped its wrist the moment he broke its protective battle qi...

With red eyes, the demon knight chopped its huge pitch-dark saber towards Zhang Tie's head.

"Go die!" Zhang Tie's battle qi grew vigorous as he forcefully cut open a terrifying wound on the side of the lower abdomen of the demon knight. Closely after that, he drew the dagger out of there and stabbed inside ferociously once again...

The demon knight's saber only cut open 2/3 of Zhang Tie protective battle qi. Its saber blade slid off a few centimeters before Zhang Tie's nose...

Zhang Tie's dagger penetrated through the demon knight's protective battle qi once again and inserted his gold-eaten tri-edged dagger into the other side of the lower abdomen of the demon knight before stirring it inside forcefully...

Zhang Tie's other hand kept gripping the demon knight's wrist. In this way, the two knights were chopping and stabbing each other, causing flesh and blood to fly everywhere...

...

When in Blackhot City, Zhang Tie had known that some gangsters in the city would handcuff one hand with each other while fighting with daggers by the other hand ferociously...

This pattern of the duel from the bottom of the society was brutal, bloody and fatal.

Zhang Tie was adopting this combat mode. The winner must be the fiercer and braver one...

Based on rich battle experiences, skills, braveness, battle strength and insight, Zhang Tie could catch the faint chance in a split second and win the combat in the end.

Since he gripped the wrist of that demon knight, the result of this combat had been fixed...

Only after three collisions, the demon knight's face had turned completely pale.

When Zhang Tie launched a strike towards it once again, the demon knight started to block Zhang Tie's strike instead of attacking him anymore.

However, in such a close combat, as Zhang Tie was gripping its wrist, the demon knight had lost its agility. Therefore, it was very difficult for it to defend Zhang Tie's strike, not to mention that it had suffered a heavy wound...

...

After Zhang Tie and Mountain Lifting Hermit joined the combat, the battle situation was reversed at once...

After striking a demon knight and sending it flying backward, Mountain Lifting Hermit forcefully rushed towards that demon knight and kept releasing his battle qi towards it.

The 3-in-1 formation of the 3 demon knights was destroyed at once.

Mountain Lifting Hermit's aggressive qi and Zhang Tie's amazing performance shocked the other two demon knights at the same time. After realizing that human knights outnumbered them and an earth knight had joined the battle, the two demon knights immediately turned around and escaped...

The 3 human knights who were fighting the 4 demon knights immediately chased after the two demon knights and disappeared in the dense fog...

...

After a few minutes, the demon knight who was giving dying kicks at Mountain Lifting Hermit uttered a miserable shriek. At the same time, its entire body [below head] was punched into pieces by Mountain Lifting Hermit...

After hearing the miserable shriek, Zhang Tie streaked his dagger through the demon knight's throat...

The demon knight spurted out its blood from its neck like a fountain.

The demon knight was so shocked that it felt the energy of its collapsing earth chakra was pouring into Zhang Tie's hand which was gripping its wrist like being devoured by a bottomless black hole while it watched Zhang Tie's glassy-eyed expression...

The moment its earth chakra was collapsed, the demon knight's remaining protective battle qi disappeared in a split second. As a result, it had no strength to struggle anymore.

Of course, Zhang Tie didn't grip its wrist only for showing off his fierce battle skills.

The demon knight wanted to roar; however, the moment it uttered, it had spurted out a mouth of dense blood from its broken neck and windpipe.

When Mountain Lifting Hermit flew towards him, Zhang Tie felt that he had already absorbed 80% of the energy of the earth chakra of this demon knight. Therefore, he directly stabbed into its heart and punched its body into flesh...

Zhang Tie instantly caught its black battle saber and the pair of ox horns...

"Great!" Mountain Lifting Hermit hailed Zhang Tie...

Chapter 926: Being Extremely Awkward and Sincerest

Mountain Lifting Hermit was an earth knight. It was reasonable for him to exert his full efforts to kill a black iron demon knight. However, even Mountain Lifting Hermit hailed Zhang Tie's fierce striking skills towards a black iron demon knight.

Mountain Lifting Hermit had noticed how Zhang Tie gripped the demon knight's wrist and stabbed his dagger into its body while resisting the saber of the latter. Although Mountain Lifting Hermit had met so many combats these years, he had not seen such a brutal close duel before.

Although being coarse, this combat made its onlookers thrilled.

Mountain Lifting Hermit had not seen such an intrepid human knight for so long.

The moment they ended the combats, Zhang Tie and Mountain Lifting Hermit had flown towards the direction where the two demon knights had escaped for.

After a few minutes, the 3 human knights who had chased after the two demon knights flew back from afar, one of whom held a pair of ox horns like Zhang Tie and Mountain Lifting Hermit.

At the sight of the ox horns in the hands of Zhang Tie and Mountain Lifting Hermit, the 3 human knights understood that the two demon knights had been killed by Zhang Tie and Mountain Lifting Hermit.

"Thanks to your righteous deed, we're members of the Feathers Army in the Lion Fortress. I'm Zhou Feng; this is Guo Zifang; this is Deng Tianhao. May I know your names?" The moment the three knights arrived, one knight with a square face and dense eyebrows had cupped his hands towards Zhang Tie and Mountain Lifting Hermit.

If not Zhang Tie and Mountain Lifting Hermit, the 3 human knights might be in great danger. Even though they were not exterminated, being besieged by the 4 demon knights, even if they could break out of the encirclement, at least 1 of them would long sleep in the first abyss.

To tell the truth, Zhang Tie and Mountain Lifting Hermit were like their saviors. Therefore, Zhou Feng introduced himself and the other two human knights very politely and solemnly.

Feathers Army was one of the top 4 armies of Hua people in Taixia Country. Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could meet the knights of Feathers Army here once again. Although Zhou Feng, Guo Zifang and Deng Tianhao were not outstanding in the Lion Fortress, they were definitely high-ranking officers in the Feathers Army and corps leaders on the earth's surface.

"As we're all knights in Taixia Country, we had to help you when we found you were in trouble. I'm Mountain Lifting Hermit!" Mountain Lifting Hermit replied with the same indifferent and faintly cold look. Although he was speaking politely, his look still remained unchanged.

This was the temperament of Mountain Lifting Hermit—being glassy-eyed yet kind-hearted. At the sight of dangers facing the 3 human knights, he immediately rushed towards them; however, he was not passionate about others' appreciation.

Zhou Feng, Guo Zifang and Deng Tianhao raised their eyebrows. Earth knights in the Lion Fortress were definitely more outstanding than common black iron knights. As there were so many black iron knights here, they might not know each one; however, he had indeed heard about Mountain Lifting Hermit.

"This one is..." They then looked at Zhang Tie.

They had seen how Zhang Tie raided that demon knight and carried out a close duel with it. Actually, they were more impressed by Zhang Tie than Mountain Lifting Hermit. They could

identify that Mountain Lifting Hermit was an earth knight; however, they were more shocked by Zhang Tie's braveness and terrifying battle strength. Few outstanding valiant generals in the Feathers Army could match Zhang Tie.

"I'm Cui Li, Cui Li from Yongzhou Province!" Zhang Tie grinned as he frankly inserted the pair of ox horns into his metal bag.

This pair of ox horns indicated his exploit, which could be exchanged for many good items in the Lion Fortress. Even Mountain Lifting Hermit would take it, not to mention Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie felt pretty good. Although the booty from killing this demon knight could not match that from the last one, Zhang Tie felt that this one's earth charka could almost light 4 of his scales. The Purgatory Samsara was really the best partner of emperor-level secret methods. If he maintained his previous cultivation speed, he didn't know how long would he take to light 4 scales. However, this time, after coming to the first abyss for less than 5 days with Mountain Lifting Hermit, he had lit 4 scales. Zhang Tie had already been satisfied with this journey even if he couldn't gain anything later on.

This time, Zhou Feng, Guo Zifang and Deng Tianhao were responsible for scouting in the first abyss. After accomplishing their task, on the way back, they encountered the 4 demon knights. Therefore, a fierce battle broke out.

After chatting with Mountain Lifting Hermit and Zhang Tie for a short while, they had revealed a news to the two, "The Tiewei Mountain Range in the First Abyss is abnormal lately; demons' activities are growing increasingly frequent over there. Additionally, high-level demon knights were found there. It's becoming more dangerous to gain element crystals from the mines of Tiewei Mountain Range. The battle over there is growing fiercer. If you want to go there, you'd better take care of yourself. After returning to Lion Fortress, we will report this news to our superior..."

After reminding Mountain Lifting Hermit and Zhang Tie, Zhou Feng, Guo Zifang and Deng Tianhao cupped their hands towards Zhang Tie before leaving rapidly.

The final warning by Zhou Feng should be confidential. Generally, without the consent of the superior, they should not leak this news to others. They broke the rule because Zhang Tie and Mountain Lifting Hermit saved their lives.

Seeing them off, Mountain Lifting Hermit revealed a thoughtful look before nodding towards Zhang Tie, "Let's go back too!"

Zhang Tie nodded silently before following Mountain Lifting Hermit on the way back.

After 1 minute later, Mountain Lifting Hermit suddenly opened his mouth...

"I saw the demon knight to strike you with its saber qi but how did you break its saber qi while accelerating your speed by almost 2 times in a split second?" Mountain Lifting Hermit put it straightforwardly as if he was not good at communicating with others.

Zhang Tie directly drew his gold-eaten tri-edged dagger out of the sheath and threw it to Mountain Lifting Hermit, "This is a sharp weapon that I got by accident. I found that this dagger was greatly penetrative to knight's battle qi; therefore, I had a try just now and broke its saber qi smoothly. As the old saying goes, sword always goes in line while saber always covers a wide area. The demon knight's saber qi had a wide striking scope; however, its saber qi was not as dense as sword qi. Therefore, I broke its saber qi fortunately. When I cut open it, I felt that its saber qi pushed my protective battle qi which reminded me of the experience in the sea when I met undercurrents. Actually, the stress could be converted into a driving force. After adjusting the interactive pattern between my protective battle qi and saber qi, I accelerated immediately. I've not imagined about such an effect too..."

Mountain Lifting Hermit had not imagined that Zhang Tie could explain it to him so clearly. After taking Zhang Tie's dagger, he looked over it while his look gradually turned more solemn, "Your dagger is made of the teeth of gold-eaten boa by an alchemist master. It's priceless given its material and craftsmanship. It's indeed very penetrative to the protective battle qi of black iron knights. You'd better put it away. This item would make people jealous in the Lion Fortress."

After looking over it for a short while, Mountain Lifting Hermit threw it back to Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie put it back into the sheath.

After letting out a sigh, Mountain Lifting Hermit watched Zhang Tie with a tender look at once as he told Zhang Tie in a genial voice, "As for the pattern that you could accelerate your speed by two times immediately under the stress of saber qi, it's your precious gnosis and your trump card. You might even work out another powerful battle skill by it. Remember to not expose this gnosis to the others from then on. You have to watch out in the Lion Fortress and the Earth-elements Realm!"

Touching his bald head, Zhang Tie smirked, "Thanks for your warning, Mountain Lifting Hermit, I've caught sight of your virtual image—an intrepid giant embraced a mountain, may I know your cultivation method?"

"I'm cultivating the "Embracing Mountain Sutra", a count-class sutra!" Mountain Lifting Hermit explained it to Zhang Tie patiently.

After fighting together with Zhang Tie, witnessing Zhang Tie's valiance and finding that Zhang Tie was straightforward and sincere who would stand out immediately when in dangers, Mountain Lifting Hermit who was usually forthright slightly changed his attitude towards Zhang Tie too.

Zhang Tie also found the change in Mountain Lifting Hermit.

Therefore, he sighed with emotions inside, 'The extremely awkward deed could conquer the extreme intelligence; the extreme sincerity could break the extreme hypocrisy.' Being disguised by Zhu Liang the fierce wolf, the role of Cui li was crazy about battle skills in an awkward and sincere way, Zhang Tie inherited the temperament of Cui Li and exerted it to the utmost, namely, being extremely awkward and sincerest. However, Zhang Tie gradually found that the way of being extremely awkward and sincerest was actually a profound life philosophy. It could relax him and pose a great influence on those beside him. Therefore, Zhang Tie gradually found that it was natural for him to behave in an awkward and sincere way...

Chapter 927: The Demon Baron

Watching Zhang Tie and Mountain Lifting Hermit to come back in such a short period with a pair of ox horns respectively, the other 10 human knights of the team were shocked inside.

It was not strange for Mountain Lifting Hermit to kill a black iron knight as an earth knight; however, it was really out of their imaginations that Zhang Tie could also kill a black iron knight in such a short period.

Therefore, many people changed their attitudes towards Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie ignored their amazing eye lights. He directly threw the battle saber that he gained from the demon knight to Gong Ziyao, "Brother Gong, you're good at using sabers, this saber might have a great power in your hand..."

Abyss iron was very precious. Even if it was not a weapon, a piece of abyss iron weighing dozens of kgs would be very expensive too.

"But this is your booty..."

"It's just a saber. I don't use it. By the way, it's heavy. Just take it, brother Gong!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Gong Ziyao took the saber.

The battle sabers of demon knights were fierce and grim, which were very popular in the Lion Fortress.

"As we've already met demon knights here, we'd better watch out..." Mountain Lifting Hermit warned them before setting off ahead of the team once again.

This time, Mountain Lifting Hermit accelerated his speed evidently...

"You've killed a demon knight?" Filton asked Zhang Tie in a secret way.

Zhang Tie turned around and found that Cecilia and Bolam on the other line were watching him.

"Right, when the demon knight wrestled with some knights from the Lion Fortress, I raided it and killed it!"

"Wow!" Filton said while sighing with relief, "You've already killed 2 demon knights after coming to the Lion Fortress for less than 1 month, I feel you might become a trump knight!"

"Trump knight?"

"After killing 5 knights of your level, you would be called trump knight! The target of I, Cecilia and Bolam is to be a trump knight!" Filton explained seriously.

Zhang Tie replied with a smile.

It was really too difficult for a common black iron human knight to kill 5 black iron demon knights. The one who could make this achievement was qualified to be a trump knight. However, Zhang Tie had killed over one dozen demon knights and knights from Three-eye Association; therefore, the reputation of trump knight was not attractive to him. Actually, Zhang Tie was qualified to be a trump out of trump human knight.

"What benefits do I have after becoming a trump knight in the Western Continent?" Zhang Tie asked Filton in a secret way.

"After becoming a trump knight, you would be able to rule the most powerful trump corps in the Western Continent. Even being a No. 1 knight in a country, you could also enjoy a very good treatment and many privileges!"

Zhang Tie replied with a surprised look, "I see!"

"You didn't know that?"

"I didn't know too much about the Western Continent!"

"Even in Lion Fortress, you could also have a lot of benefits as a trump knight!"

"What are they?"

"You can choose highly paid tasks which are especially for trump knights. Additionally, you can practice your battle skill in the Heavens Ball once a month for free! Of course, you will gain more respect. All the earth knights being promoted from trump knights are very sharp. If trump knights could be famous on the Heavens Fortune Namelist, they would be the real nobles among humans!"

"Hahaha, I've not imagined that there're so many benefits for a trump knight. I expect to be a trump knight in a few days!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's answer, Filton became speechless. 'Others have to exert their full efforts to be a trump knight, how come this guy expect to be a trump knight in a few days? How arrogant he is!' However, although Zhang Tie was arrogant, Filton didn't feel sick about that; instead, he felt it was possible for Zhang Tie.

Under the leadership of Mountain Lifting Hermit, the team made turns twice and soon disappeared in the dense black fog in the first Abyss...

...

After they left this region for 4 hours, a tall demon knight appeared silently in the air above the battlefield where Zhang Tie and Mountain Lifting Hermit fought just now. There might be a powerful, invisible tensile force over this figure while the black fog within 20 m rolled away in all directions like being blown away by the wind.

The demon knight's horns looked purple and golden. In a black half-body armor, a bloody cloak and a pair of grim metal gloves, this one looked much more powerful than the 4 demon knights that Zhang Tie and Mountain Lifting Hermit had just met.

The demon knight's eyes looked aggressive with full killing intent. He gazed at the surrounding fog while the fog gradually

formed 7 figures, each figure was about 16 cm in height. At first, 4 figures fought 3 figures. Later on, 2 more mini figures darted towards them and killed 2 of the group of 4. The remaining 2 figures started to retreat while the group of 3 who were in a disadvantageous position chased them away...

This demon knight stood still here a couple of minutes when another demon knight arrived with luster. Those mini figures composed of fog faded away suddenly...

The latter one was the very one who had escaped away from the three human knights.

"Lord Baron, we encountered the raid from an earth human knight and a top black iron knight just now..." The latter demon knight panted faintly with an embarrassed look as its wounds had not been treated.

"I've already known that..." The demon knight being called Lord Baron gazed at the latter demon knight while its eyes gradually turned icier and bloodier, "In that case, even if you only had 2 people, you could fight human knights to death instead of escaping, although you were besieged by the 3-in-1 formation of human knights, you could at least perish together with one human knight. However, you chose to escape and survive the 5 human knights safe and sound. Why are you still alive?"

The latter wounded demon knight had been wet all over as it started to quiver, "Lord Baron..."

"If you could not fight to death for the Demon God, you're nothing but a sh*t!"

The moment it finished the word "sh*t", the Lord Baron had already penetrated through the quivering body of the wounded demon knight with a punch...

The demon knight whose body was penetrated through started to burn all over. Only after wailing mournfully a few times, it had

become ashes in less than 1 minute and disappeared in the black fog of the First Abyss, leaving a pair of horns...

The pair of bloody horns fell in the hands of Lord Baron. The Lord Baron then widely opened its mouth and started to crunch them with its terrifying, sharp teeth, causing jarring frictions and grinding sound before swallowing them.

When the Lord Baron crunched the pair of horns, the horns flew out of dense fresh blood while a weird bloody rune appeared in Lord Baron...

"Now that you could not serve the Demon God, I will put away the strength that the Demon God gifted to you..."

After swallowing the pair of horns, Lord Baron's eyes turned bloody. It looked at two directions: one was where Zhou Feng and the other two human knights left for; the other was where Mountain Lifting Hermit and Zhang Tie left for. Only after considering it for 2 seconds, it had moved towards where Mountain Lifting Hermit and Zhang Tie left for and disappeared in the dense fog in a split second...

After the demon baron left, the black fog covered that place once again...

This place recovered its tranquility like nothing had happened.

...

After 4 hours of flight, they caught sight of a huge black entrance of a cave whose diameter was about 1 mile among the gullies of the First Abyss. Mountain Lifting Hermit led them in...

They had met hundreds of caves like this one, large or small on the way.

Each cave like this one might lead to a mysterious yet unknown world...

From a certain perspective, the First Abyss was similar to an

elevator in the Earth-elements Realm...

...

Chapter 928: An Accidental Encounter

The First Abyss was too large. Even if all the human knights in the Lion Fortress entered the First Abyss and spread at the same height on average, they would not see each other within hundreds of square miles.

If not the illuminating battle qis in battles and the battle qilusters in flight, they could only have a visibility of a few miles in the First Abyss.

The First Abyss was a huge, deep well. If not entering the hotspot regions in the First Abyss on purpose, they would have a very low possibility to encounter human knights or demon knights in the First Abyss.

The hotspot regions in the First Abyss were closely related to the interests of both humans and demons, for instance, the Tiewei Mountain Range which was abundant in earth-elements crystals.

The fiercest battle in the First Abyss happened in Tiewei Mountain Range.

The team of Mountain Lifting Hermit entered an underground tunnel of the First Abyss, which was not the hotspot region. At least before those mysterious places and items behind the tunnels were exposed to the public, those deep and serene tunnels would not become boisterous.

There were numerous underground tunnels in the First Abyss. As a result, the First Abyss was like a piece of cheese with many small holes in it. Until today, demons and humans had just explored a small part of these underground tunnels. As for what was in the other tunnels and where they led to, it was still a mystery.

If the contingent of pioneers on the earth's surface could arrive here, they would love this place.

With these tunnels and caves, the First Abyss was like a maze full

of treasures, secrets and dangers.

Compared to the earth's surface and the First Abyss, the underground tunnels and caves in the First Abyss composed a fantastic and magnificent world.

After entering one cave for half a day, the black fog released by the vines started to fade away as their visions gradually recovered.

After entering the underground cave for a day, Zhang Tie saw many ruined pyramids. It seemed that those pyramids were destroyed by an irresistible power. They might have lain in the pitch-dark tunnel tens of thousands of years and were quietly telling the history of human civilization being buried underground.

Underground, each pyramid might hide many secrets. Those ruined pyramids might have been explored by many knights.

On the 3rd day since they entered the underground cave, Zhang Tie saw a wide area of purple crystals covering hundreds of square miles; all the crystals were above Class III and higher than 0.5 m, making it look like a splendid purple sea. If it was on the earth's surface, those crystal clusters would be worth a lot. There were precious ores and semi-precious stones among those crystal clusters such as aquamarines, topazes, fluorites, magnesites, calcites and zinc crystals...

Watching those purple crystal clusters and those precious associated ores and semi-precious stones on the earth's surface, Zhang Tie suddenly understood why Mountain Lifting Hermit wanted a space-teleportation equipment.

As a knight who usually accessed to such places and saw numerous precious objects; however, due to limited conditions, he could not take away too many of them. Even if he could take some of them back to the Lion Fortress, his achievements would not match his labor force and identity as a knight. Zhang Tie could feel how depressed Mountain Lifting Hermit was.

Additionally, a space-teleportation equipment with resources inside indicated a greater ability to explore the Earth-elements Realm and dangerous situations, a stronger viability and a better logistic service; especially the latter two points which counted most for knights. Without a stronger viability and a better logistic service, knights could only move in a short distance even though they could fly.

By then did Zhang Tie realized how lucky he was with Castle of Black Iron.

As for Zhang Tie, Castle of Black Iron's space and great food supply ability could almost satisfy all of his demands.

On the 4th day, since they entered the underground cave, the team of Mountain Lifting Hermit had met their competitors.

Coincidentally, Zhang Tie had met some of them before.

...

"Mountain Lifting Hermit, long time no see..." After hearing the sound drifting from the front, the team of Mountain Lifting Hermit stopped at once.

At the same time, they saw another team of knights flying from afar.

That was also a team of human knights. Additionally, it seemed that the head of that team knew Mountain Lifting Hermit as he hailed the latter. Mountain Lifting Hermit didn't prepare to defend them; he just stopped. Therefore, the others of his team realized that those flying towards them must come from the Lion Fortress too.

Zhang Tie also stopped as he watched those knights flying close to them.

The head of the opposite team was an old man with silver hair in a green robe. His long eyebrows were as white as snow under the pair of slim eyes while his cheeks were red. He looked like an

immortal. Given his qi, he could match that of Mountain Lifting Hermit. Therefore, Zhang Tie knew that the old man was also an earth knight.

The old man was followed by 9 knights. Besides the 4 men and 2 women that Zhang Tie had seen on the airboat of Zhang Clan in Tianlu Palace in Taixia Country, there were 3 elder ones whom Zhang Tie had not seen before.

The equipment and weapons of the 9 knights behind the elder were evidently more advanced than that of the team of Mountain Lifting Hermit.

It seemed that Zhang Tie had left a deep impression to the 4 men and 2 women. The moment the two teams drew closer, the 6 pairs of eyes had gazed at Zhang Tie.

Although being at the end of the team, Zhang Tie's figure and bald head made him eye-catching.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, the 2 female knights of the other team had moved a few steps back; especially when Zhang Tie threw his glance at them, the two female knights both felt uncomfortable.

"Brother Anguo..." Mountain Lifting Hermit hailed the head of the other team with a glassy-eyed look.

As the old man with long snow-white eyebrows knew the temperament of Mountain Lifting Hermit, he didn't mind Mountain Lifting Hermit's indifferent attitude. After throwing a glance at Zhang Tie, he looked at the 6 young knights in his team and asked, "You know someone in the team of Mountain Lifting Hermit?"

As an earth knight, Mountain Lifting Hermit had a very sensitive feeling. The moment his team members behaved abnormally, he'd sense it right away.

"Grand elder, when we came to the Lion Fortress this time, we entered the tunnel of the Earth-elements Realm together with a

knight in the team of Mountain Lifting Hermit...ahem..ahem...that brother is really sturdy...erm, he's also heroic and unruly. Therefore, he's very impressive to us. We've not imagined that we could encounter him here once again!" A young man considered a second before replying.

"Hahahaha, if so, you should make friends with each other..."

Although it was a polite suggestion, the two female knights felt jarring. They even felt bashful repeating what Zhang Tie had said last time.

"Brother Anguo, what's your rule in this journey to the hieron?" Mountain Lifting Hermit suddenly asked.

After hearing Mountain Lifting Hermit's question, the old man's eyes gleamed. After being silent for a second, he replied, "As human knights, although we all want items in the heiron, I feel that it's unnecessary for us to fight to death only for those trivial items in the holy war and it would make others to mock us. After entering it this time, private combats and setting traps are forbidden inside. We will depend on our own abilities. As for the waifs, anyone who could get it first would own it. Anyone who dared violate this rule would be punished by the rest of us. What do you say about that?"

"What a major clan! That's great!" Mountain Lifting Hermit nodded.

"Hahahaha...this is a good method. I also agree with you..." With thunder-like laughter, another group of lights arrived from afar in a split second.

The head of this team was a fat man in a robe of a ministry councilor with floral patterns on it.

At the sight of this man, both Mountain Lifting Hermit and the white-eyebrow elder frowned faintly.

Zhang Tie watched the latter team of knights as he sighed with

emotions inside, 'What an accidental encounter! The "Young sister" that I met a few days ago outside the entrance of the Earth-elements Realm is also in this team.' Compared to that a few days ago, this "Young sister" had changed a set of purple imperial costume and made a snail-shaped bun, which made her more enchanting.

The "Young sister" also caught sight of Zhang Tie as she replied with an arrogant harrumph. Closely after that, she turned around and moved her eyes away from him. However, her plump breasts became firm at once...

'What a woman! She still didn't forget to show off her physical capital at this moment.' Zhang Tie touched his bald head as he almost burst out into laughter.

"Old Monster Qi, why are you here..." Mountain Lifting Hermit watched that fat head with an icier expression.

"Hahaha, as you're here, I'm here too!" The fat man replied with a smile as he took out a diamond-shaped piece of metal which shined exotic luster like a magic, "Without my object, you cannot enter it. I've spent a lot on this object and this chance. If you don't like me, I will leave right away..."

"If so, do you agree with our rule?" The white-eyebrow elder asked.

"I do, of course, I do! Why not?" The fat man patted his chest, causing his fat belly to quiver all over, "I was even scared of being trapped by you two. Although I have a bad reputation, what I've said was like a fart which could never be regretted at all. Otherwise, even if I didn't feel it disgusting, the others would feel it disgusting. After eating my fart, my words would always be smelly. If so, nobody would stay with me anymore. Am I not right?"

After hearing such funny words, Zhang Tie couldn't stand bursting out into laughter...

The moment Zhang Tie burst into laughter, the fat man changed his face right away. With dangerous, gleaming eye lights, he watched Zhang Tie, "Brat, why do you laugh..."

Chapter 929: The Hurricane in the First Abyss

"It's my first time to hear someone comparing his words to fart, I like your simile, it's fresh, humorous and individual!" Zhang Tie said straightforwardly. Even though he was facing an earth knight, he was not scared at all.

"Humorous?" Old Monster Qi watched Zhang Tie as he blinked his eyes. All of a sudden, his killing qi disappeared as he burst out into laughter, "Brat, you're visionary, I like you. What's your name?"

"Cui Li!"

"I like you. How about coming to my side? I'm sure that you could get benefits in the ruined hieron!" Old Monster Qi patted his chest and suggested with a smile.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that this guy would dare "undermine the foundation" of Mountain Lifting Hermit. 'It seems that this Old Monster Qi is really something. He must be qualified to be arrogant. It's normal for such an able man to be a rustic emperor in a remote place like Waii Subcontinent.'

"Thank you but I don't care which team do I belong to!" Zhang Tie shrugged as he continued with a casual look, "Additionally, I don't like to cooperate with someone who changes his facial expressions so fast. Although Mountain Lifting Hermit looks cold, he's enthusiastic inside. I feel good in this team!"

The moment they heard Zhang Tie's reply, both Mountain Lifting Hermit's and Old Monster Qi's eyes gleamed.

Old Monster Qi slightly narrowed his eyes as he said, "You're the first black iron knight who dared to say that I change my facial expressions so fast!"

"Although the others didn't say that in front of you, they thought

the same inside. If it's your real reflection, why not care about it being mentioned by others? If you're a mountain, you will be a mountain; if you're a tree, you will be a tree; if you're a snake, you will be a snake; if you're a dragon, you will be a dragon. No matter what others comment about you, a mountain will not be a tree; a tree will not be a mountain; a snake will not be a dragon; a dragon will not be a snake. Unless what you present to others are fake, you should not care about it being mentioned by others. Am I right?"

"Interesting, interesting..." The Old Monster Qi's eyes gleamed as he burst out into laughter once again.

Finding that Zhang Tie was so talkative in front of Old Monster Qi, the "Young sister" in the team of Old Monster Qi couldn't stand throwing a few glances at Zhang Tie out of curiosity. All the other knights who met Zhang Tie for the first time also gazed at him with a serious look.

"Ahem..ahem..." The white-eyebrow elder coughed twice at this moment so as to attract the others' attention, "Now that we've fixed the rule, we'd better not stay here anymore. Let's go take a look at whether the hurricane has stopped or not. I'm afraid that it will stop after a day or two!"

Mountain Lifting Hermit nodded as he issued the order "Let's go" before flying towards afar ahead of his team, closely followed by Zhang Tie and all the other team members.

Seeing Mountain Lifting Hermit's team leaving, the other two teams also hurriedly followed them up. The three teams then moved shoulder to shoulder with a distance of less than 50 m. The 3 earth knights led their teams towards the pit in the distance.

This underground pit was thousands of meters in depth, which had many branch holes. If the three teams could encounter here, it indicated that the hieron ruins was not far from here.

They were all thrilled inside.

"Young sister, long time no see!" Zhang Tie hailed the "Young sister" in a secret way when in flight.

Even earth knights could not easily hear the contents of talks between black iron knights which were done in a secret way. Therefore, Zhang Tie was not afraid of being heard by others.

"Harrumph, rogue!" The young sister replied with a cold harrumph.

As the young sister was born to be enchanting, even such a simple reply sounded like being coquettish to Zhang Tie.

"Young sister, as we entered the Earth-elements Realm at the same time, this brother wants to warn you. My mother told me to not make friends with people who usually changes his moods. Such people are not reliable. Watch out, don't be devoured by him in the end!" Zhang Tie threw a glance at Old Monster Qi as he warned the young sister.

"Why do you care about me so much?" After a few seconds, the young sister replied with a softer voice.

"Even though we cannot sleep on the same bed, we're not enemies either. Additionally, this brother finds that you are not a bad girl. You're at most a lost girl with full desires. Therefore, I just warned out of good intention..."

After hearing Zhang Tie's response, the young sister turned around and rolled her eyes at Zhang Tie from dozens of meters away before flying off...

Touching his bald head, Zhang Tie became confused, 'Did I say something wrong?'

...

The demon baron appeared in their confluence after they left there for 2 hours. With sparkling red eyes, the demon baron stretched out of its bloody tongue which split into 4 parts like that of a lizard. After licking around its mouth rapidly, he flashed away

towards where Zhang Tie and Mountain Lifting Hermit left for...

...

After 3 hours, those human knights felt hot abruptly while Zhang Tie saw some statues on the walls of the deep tunnel.

All the exotic statues as high as 1,000 m were sitting up straight on chairs. Some of them held weapons, some held maces; some cupped fruits such as pine cones. These statues were too huge and tall with grim faces. Being directly carved in the mountain, they shocked Zhang Tie's souls greatly.

Although they were flying hundreds of meters above the ground, they could only reach the knees of those statues.

Many of those statues had been ruined; many had cracks as wide as dozens of meters; some had already collapsed. Zhang Tie guessed that they had been carved for tens of thousands of years. However, Zhang Tie could still sense something solemn and holy from these statues.

'In the long course of history, what kind of civilisation could create such a marvel?'

When flying past these statues, everyone slowed down out of their reverence to the unknowns and human history.

At this moment, Zhang Tie saw a glow from the exit of the cave. At the same time, he felt hotter. The temperature was almost as high as 100 celcius degrees. After penetrating through the exit of the cave, Zhang Tie saw a borderless space.

Zhang Tie was shocked by this scene.

It was a boiling magma sea below them which was covered with a red hurricane. The red hurricane roared and rolled the magma into the air as high as thousands of meters. 'What a destructive power!'

This was the so-called hurricane in the First Abyss. Although

being far away from the magma sea and the hurricane, they could still feel the terrifying power of the hurricane. It was a destructive furnace being featured by a terrifying, high temperature and speed...

The red hurricane was very strange as it was only rampant above the magma sea. The moment it left the magma sea, it had disappeared.

Due to this red hurricane, they couldn't see anything in the distance of this space.

Out of curiosity, Zhang Tie broke off a solid rock from aside. It was a low-quality hematite which was very hard and resistant to high temperature. After weighing it in hand, Zhang Tie threw it into the red hurricane.

Right under the gaze of everyone else, the piece of hematite entered the red hurricane. Before it fell into the magma sea, it had been torn apart, melt by the red hurricane and finally disappeared...

'F*ck!' Zhang Tie took a deep breath.

Even earth knights would not insist on a few minutes facing such a destructive power, not to mention black iron knights. If knights wanted to enter this hurricane, they had to bear high-speed excisions hundreds of times a second in all directions. No protective battle qi could stand such a destruction. Even shadow knights might not bear it.

"F*ck, that's amazing. Is the hieron ruins behind this hurricane? It's really the idealest place to kill a person and rob his treasures..." Filton said as he flew to Zhang Tie's side with Cecilia and Bolam.

"Shut up, Filton..." Cecilia swore him with her furious eyes on him.

As they were cooperating with three earth knights, even if there was a robbery, it could only be a black iron knight who's robbed.

After thinking it through, Filton smirked and didn't say anything else.

Watching the magma sea, Bolam who was always silent finally uttered with a solemn look, "After entering it, we'd better stay with each other!"

Cecilia and Filton nodded at the same time.

As they watched it on one side of the magma sea, the white-eyebrow elder took out a metal compass and stood on some positions for a short while respectively by facing the compass towards the hurricane as if measuring or confirming something. After a few minutes, he put away his metal compass and told Mountain Lifting Hermit, "We're neither too late nor too early, the hurricane will disappear in 45 hours..."

"You mean we will be able to enter it in about 2 days?"

"Right!"

"Hahahaha..." Old Monster Qi laughed, "That's pretty good. We will take a rest two days here so that we could plunder inside!"

The white-eyebrow elder exchanged a glance with Mountain Lifting Hermit before nodding with him at the same time.

Everyone then moved back into the cave. As it was barren near the magma sea, they couldn't find any resources to supply themselves at all. Additionally it was too hot here, they'd better rest in another place.

...

After half an hour, all of them landed in the valley where those huge statues were 35 miles away from that magma sea...

Chapter 930: An Emergency

The deep and serene valley was covered with fungi which were adapted to darkness. All the fungi were higher than 2 m like huge, open umbrellas, few of them could reach 3-4 m in height in the shape of pavilions. At the first blush, the entire valley was like an exotic children's playground...

Water flew out of the cliffs on both sides of the valley. In the Earth-elements Realm, as long as there were underground plants, there would be full of vitality.

This was the ideal place for the teams of human knights to take a rest.

All the members of the team led by the white-eyebrow elder were from Zhang Clan in Tianlu Palace, Taixia Country. The white-eyebrow elder's name was Zhang Anguo; he's the grand elder of the House of Elders in Tianlu Palace. The word "An 1" was exclusive to the knights of Zhang Clan in Tianlu Palace like the word "Mu" in Huaiyuan Palace.

Given the point that the Tianlu Palace could dispatch one grand elder and nine knights for an action in Earth-elements Realm, Zhang Tie sighed with emotions about the sharp difference between Tianlu Palace and Huaiyuan Palace inside. He wondered when Huaiyuan Palace could reach the level of Tianlu Palace.

The knights under the leadership of Old Monster Qi also came from the Lion Fortress. Besides Old Monster Qi, the other black iron knights were all strange in the Lion Fortress. As there were too many human knights in the Lion Fortress with a great mobility, if not being a trump knight, black iron knights could barely have a great influence in the Lion Fortress.

The three teams of knights pitched their camps with a distance fewer than 7 miles from each other.

The team of Mountain Lifting Hermit directly pitched their camp on the thigh of a huge statue which was sitting up straight.

As it was about 400 m away from the ground, it was relatively cleaner and more refreshing. The two legs of the huge statue, after being put together, was as large as a square which could hold thousands of people at least. The valley was at the foot of this status, from where they could get food.

...

Zhang Tie also took out a simple foldable tent from his bag, which only weighed 2 or 3 kg and was as large as a hat after being folded. Zhang Tie found a proper place and threw the tent onto the ground. With a sound of "bi", it automatically turned into a camouflaging tent with a dome.

Such a simple, portable tent was only used for the waterproof purpose and prevent its owner from being exposed to the public when in sleep. It was just a bit confidential yet without any defensive power. As for knights, even though they slept in armored vehicles, their safety could still not be guaranteed. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't pose any requirement for the tent.

After fixing the four corners of the tent by hand using alloy steel nails, Gong Ziyao came to Zhang Tie's front and said, "Come on, let's go find some food!"

"Where's brother Zhou?"

"He went to find firewoods and water. After coming out for so many days, I've been so desiring about meat!"

Zhang Tie then picked himself up and called Filton. Filton hurriedly ran toward them.

"We're going to find some food, will you come with us?"

After hearing that they were going to find food, Filton's eyes gleamed at once as he licked his lips, "The breadfruits and nutritious mushrooms in the Lion Fortress made me sick..."

Zhang Tie and Gong Ziyao burst out into laughter at the same time. After that, Filton told Cecilia about their plan before flying off the statue with Zhang Tie and Gong Ziyao.

As they would enter the magma sea in about 2 days, with the three earth knights on their side, they became relaxed at once...

...

With the perceptions and night-viewing ability of knights, the three people would soon find a prey among some fungi.

It was an animal as large as a dog. When Zhang Tie caught sight of it, it was eating a finger-nail sized termite at the root of a fungus. At the sight of it, Gong Ziyao took out a fluorite lamp with optical lens and irradiated it. The moment the animal saw the light, it became still at once like being affected by a magic. Closely after that, Gong Ziyao walked over there leisurely and killed it by pointing at its head before picking it up.

The entire process went very smoothly and easily.

"Brother Gong, what's this?" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity.

"This animal is called underground pangolin. It's very vigilant. The moment it catches sight of light, it will become still and relaxed. In this state, its flesh will be very tasty. If it were killed in vigilance in the dark out of fear, its body of gland would secrete an exotic substance to make its flesh sour and poisonous. If so, its flesh would be inedible!" Gong Ziyao explained.

In the next half an hour, the three people caught another underground pangolin in the same way. They even found some edible mushrooms. After cleaning them in a mountain spring, the three people took their food back to their camp.

The others had already set some bonfires and cooked their own food in the camp. Those withered fungi in the valley were good firewoods.

At this moment, proper rest and adjustment physically and

spiritually were definitely necessary. Nobody knew what they would face in the hieron ruins in 2 days.

The group of 6 roasted two underground pangolins and boiled a pot of fungi soup, which were both tasty food at this moment.

Sitting around the bonfire, the group of 6 ate and chatted. Until they ate up all the food did they return to their own tents to rest.

As knights didn't need to sleep for too long, they were actually cultivating and forming their chakras.

After entering his own tent, Zhang Tie closed the tent from inside and sat down with crossed legs before digesting the achievements of killing that demon knight a few days ago...

Just like what he achieved the first time, Zhang Tie became reassured, he "saw" a lot of golden, pure earth elements rotating around his chakras like satellites on the tracks of a planet and waiting to be converted into his earth chakra...

This achievement was indeed fewer than the last time. However, he could light at least 4 scales.

Zhang Tie revealed a smile...

Being immersed in Zhang Tie's spiritual energy, the geometrical patterns on the earth chakra of "King Roc Sutra" were gradually lit...

...

As expected, in a few hours, four scales on Cui Li's crystal plate were lit consecutively, turning the number of scales being lit into 40...

What an amazing speed!

Soon after he lit 4 dragons scales, Zhang Tie heard a muffled sound "Emergency..." from outside...

All the team members woke up from their dreamlands or cultivation realms at the same time as they rushed out of their

tents at the fastest speed...

In a place over 50 miles away, a knight's battle qi luster faded away immediately...

Chapter 931: The Crisis

If there was a battle qi, it indicated that a combat was breaking out. At this critical moment, any combat was very sensitive, combats between human knights and demon knights or internal conflicts between human knights.

Before Mountain Lifting Hermit uttered, the other members of his team had rushed towards the battle qi in terms of light.

At the same time, the other two teams also rushed towards that place in terms of light from their camps.

It only took them about 4 minutes to complete the distance of over 50 miles.

The moment they arrived there, they had caught sight of a corpse lying on the ground.

The corpse's head had been chopped off, leaving a puddle of blood on the ground.

After looking around the place, the knights ensured that there was no ambush in the surroundings; neither did they see any figure; therefore, they landed.

After landing there, Mountain Lifting Hermit, Zhang Anguo the grand elder of Tianlu Palace and Old Monster Qi threw a glance at each other before walking towards the corpse.

After checking the corpse, they confirmed the identity of the dead. However, they didn't find any clue of the murderer at the scene.

"It's Sun Sheng!" Old Monster Qi picked himself up from the ground as he glanced at Mountain Lifting Hermit and Zhang Anguo with a weird, icy eye light. As he had seen the two earth knights fly off their camps just now, he didn't think they had a chance to kill Sun Sheng.

Mountain Lifting Hermit and Zhang Anguo also stood up.

"He was raided. Before he released his battle qi, his heart had been fatally wounded. In the latter combat, he was chopped off in a few seconds!" Zhang Anguo said in a muffled voice.

Mountain Lifting Hermit looked icy. He just threw a glance at his team members silently.

Even if it was a close combat, it was also difficult for an earth knight to kill a black iron knight; however, a black iron knight could heavily wound or kill another black iron knight in an extremely short period by raiding the latter.

Everyone at present felt a solemn yet weird atmosphere among the three teams.

"Jia Xiong, wasn't Sun Sheng always with you? Why did he come here alone?" Old Monster Qi suddenly turned around and asked a knight on his team.

The knight was swarthy and short. After hearing Old Monster Qi's question, everyone focused on Jia Xiong, causing him to feel nervous and swallow his saliva, "Sun Sheng was with me 1 hour ago; however, later on...later on he met...Miss Bai, after hearing that Miss Bai just ate some dried rations, Sun Sheng voluntarily said that he would hunt some smooth rats for Miss Bai, which was the tastiest food in the cave...Therefore...therefore he went out alone!"

"Where's Bai Suxian?" Old Monster Qi threw a glance at the team and didn't see that woman.

"Soon after Sun Sheng left, Miss Bai 1 had left too..." Someone in the team of Old Monster Qi replied.

Zhang Tie didn't know the name of "Young sister" until now. This name made him speechless. Although the female was pretty white, she had nothing to do with Su 2 and Xian 3 .

Soon after his words, some more lights arrived from afar,

including the couple Lu Zhongming and Lin Huanxi, the two women and one man from Tianlu Palace and Bai Suxian the "Young sister".

"When we arrived here, we found this guy had been raided!" Mountain Lifting Hermit uttered after throwing a glance at them while accenting the word "raided".

Watching the corpse whose head had been chopped off and hearing Mountain Lifting Hermit's words, the latter ones changed their faces at once.

As they were late, they were suspects.

Old Monster Qi gazed at Bai Suxian before asked in a muffled voice, "Where have you been?"

The "Young sister" threw an aggrieved glance at Old Monster Qi before asking, "Do you also think it's done by me?"

"It's a human life. You're late, therefore, you need to explain it to us!" Old Monster Qi replied in an icy tone.

Under the gaze of everyone else, Bai Suxian's face blushed as she replied, "I am menstruating these days. As there were too many males in the valley, it was inconvenient for me; therefore, I was looking for a place to solve it..."

Soon after Bai Suxian finished her words, Old Monster Qi's eyes gleamed. In a split second, he had come to the side of Bai Suxian. Before Bai Suxian responded, he had caught her wrist. Bai Suxian was shocked. Before she wanted to launch a counter attack, Old Monster Qi had rapidly let off her wrist and retreated. The entire process was completed in a split second. When Bai Suxian responded with a pale face, Old Monster Qi had moved away.

It was almost like raiding Bai Suxian. However, it also reflected Old Monster Qi's power and arbitrary temperament, which shocked everyone else at present.

"I've checked your pulse condition. It's indeed the physical

condition when a woman is menstruating. You're not lying!" Old Monster Qi explained. Everybody else then understood why he caught Bai Suxian's wrist just now.

Watching how Old Monster Qi do, Lu Zhongming and Lin Huanxi were shocked immediately. They slightly moved away from Old Monster Qi. Lu Zhongming stood in front of his wife as he pressed one hand onto his sword handle. After throwing a glance at them, he said in a muffled voice, "Just now, we were seeking for some rare underground plants' seeds in the valley so that we could sow those seeds in the underground mountain cave of our Minling Sword Sect and create a cultivation environment being similar to that of Earth-elements Realm..."

"As it's the first time for some young elders in Tianlu Palace to come to the Earth-elements Realm, I told them to be familiar with the environment here these couple of days. I know that they left the camp just now!" Zhang Anguo opened his mouth as he clarified the reason why the three people of Tianlu Palace were late. At this moment, anyone who dared find Tianlu Palace's trouble would be regarded as the enemy of Tianlu Palace as a whole.

Everyone at present then became silent.

Old Monster Qi then watched Mountain Lifting Hermit and Zhang Anguo with a sneer, "We've just fixed the rule to forbid private duel or mutual trap less than half a day ago, and we met such an accident here. How do you explain this?"

"It's not necessary that one of us who killed Sun Sheng!" Mountain Lifting Hermit said.

"What do you mean?"

"We don't have the motive to kill him. Even if someone wanted to kill him, he would not risk the dangers until Sun Sheng came out of the hieron ruins. However, Sun Sheng had not entered the hieron ruins yet; neither did he have any valuable item with him that might arouse others' vicious intention. Additionally, he had

no resentment with us, why would someone kill him in vain at the risk of being recognized and besieged by us? Old Monster Qi, don't forget that we're in the Earth-elements Realm. Besides us, demon knights are also wandering here."

After exchanging a glance with each other, all the others were shocked once again...

...

After burying the corpse over there, the three teams of knights returned to their own camps in a weird atmosphere.

Zhang Tie was shocked inside as it was his first time to see a dead human knight.

Although Mountain Lifting Hermit's explanation was reasonable, Zhang Tie still was not sure whether Sun Sheng was killed by a demon knight or not. In this world, human's mind was most unpredictable.

Zhang Tie had tasted unpredictable human minds too much...

Because of this uncertainty, Zhang Tie ran his spiritual energy and released a lot of tracing tentacles and attached them to the sole of each knight at present before they left, including that of Bai Suxian, Old Monster Qi and those people in Tianlu Palace.

The biggest effect of tracing tentacle was to monitor each one's trace and position each knight at any time.

Whether Sun Sheng was killed by someone in the three teams or a demon knight, it was not a good news for all the others. Because this indicated that a dangerous enemy might beside them.

The temporary camp became more depressive and weird. Many people's eyes contained some hidden meaning when they looked at Lu Zhongming and Lin Huanxi.

No matter what, Lu Zhongming and Lin Huanxi were suspects. As a human knight was killed, all the others had to beware of them

more or less.

Now that Sun Shen was raided, it indicated that all the others at present might be raided too. Nobody could ensure that he or she was not the next one being raided.

...

"These days, we three have to go out together. None of us should take any action alone..." Gong Ziyao told Zhang Tie in a secret way after returning to the camp.

Zhang Tie nodded.

...

Two days soon flew past.

Nothing else happened in the two days. The knights completed their supplies in the valley in two days. With full preparations, they came to the magma sea once again.

The terrifying hurricane gradually faded away...

"Let's go!" Mountain Lifting Hermit said in a muffled voice while all the others followed him towards the center of the magma sea...

Chapter 932: A Mysterious Island

The hot and boiling magma sea appeared under their feet...

The magma sea was borderless.

Although being hundreds of meters high above the magma sea, Zhang Tie could still feel the hot waves from below.

Compared to the hurricane, the hot waves were as tender as spring breezes. Commoners might die out of hydration within a few hours; however, such a temperature didn't cause any effect to knights at all.

Except for the team of Zhang Clan in Tianlu Palace which felt to be united, the atmospheres in the teams of Mountain Lifting Hermit and Old Monster Qi were both subtle. Lu Zhongming, Lin Huanxi and Bai Suxian unconsciously flew to the front of the team close to the three earth knights.

Nobody in the two teams would like to expose their backs to the three people. Therefore, the three people were subconsciously driven to the front of the two teams.

"5 days later, the hurricane would reappear above the magma sea. Therefore, we could only stay 5 days in the hieron ruins at most. If everything went smoothly, we would leave after 3 days, at most 4 days!" Mountain Lifting Hermit's voice sounded in the ears of the others on the team, "I feel that we might face some trouble in this journey. You'd better take care of yourselves!"

After hearing Mountain Lifting Hermit's warning, Zhang Tie's heart pounded. After exchanging a glance with Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan, they could see a solemn expression from each other's eyes.

"What are you concerned about?" Zhang Tie asked Mountain Lifting Hermit in a secret way.

After thinking for a few seconds, Mountain Lifting Hermit

replied, "If the one who raided Sun Sheng was a demon knight, I'm considering what that demon knight would think and do after seeing us waiting at the entrance of this magma sea! Undoubtedly, that demon knight's battle strength could never match the jointed battle strength of us. In this case, what do you think I'm concerned about?"

Being hinted by Mountain Lifting Hermit, Zhang Tie understood it at once.

'If a demon knight is really following us, Mountain Lifting Hermit must be concerned about it whistling.'

'If that demon knight didn't know what were we here for before today. It might have already speculated something when he saw the hurricane to disappear over this magma sea.'

'This was the worst scenario and the most possible result we might face. If that demon knight really blows a whistle after confirming our trace and purpose, given the efficiencies of both parties, we might have a fierce combat with a team of demon knights the moment we come out of the hieron ruins. We might be outnumbered by demon knights. The longer we stay in the hieron ruins, the more dangerous it might get and we might have to collide with a team of demon knights.

In the Earth-elements Realm, no knight could avoid from fierce collisions with demon knights.

If Mountain Lifting Hermit, Old Monster Qi and Zhang Anguo could coordinate with each other and make an ambush in the magma sea behind all the others, they would definitely make an achievement if there was a demon knight behind them. At least, it could scare the demon knight away. However, it was a daydream for three earth knights to stay here to set a trap only for the sake of the black iron knights. Even though the heads of the three teams were black iron knights, they would not agree to do that either. At such a critical moment, who would like to give up such a rare

chance to wait for fighting a possible demon knight?

Zhang Tie would. As long as he could kill a demon knight, he would make a big achievement. With the shield that he gained from the demon general, he could hide in the magma sea for a few hours; but it was useless for him to stay here alone. First, everybody else would think he was foolish; second, if there was an earth demon knight behind them, Zhang Tie was not sure that he could defeat it.

Facing such a situation, Zhang Tie could only let out a sigh inside. Closely after that, he spirited up to respond to the next problems...

They could only respond to the next situations in a flexible way.

As there were three earth knights in their teams, it was not his turn to make decisions.

...

After flying almost 1,000 miles over the magma sea for over 2 hours at a high speed, they caught sight of a looming isle in the hot, rising, twisting vapor.

At the sight of this isle, everyone became spirited as they accelerated at once.

After flying close to it, they could see it clearly.

It was a big island that covered about 10,000 square miles instead of being an isle.

All the exposed rocks on this island were weathered and aged might be because of the hurricane. It was a taste of vicissitudes all over.

A tall, flat-roofed pyramid was standing in the middle of this island.

Zhang Tie took in a deep breath, 'Here we are.'

After reaching close to this island, the hot air that had been

accompanying them over 2 hours instantly declined. The closer they were to this island, the faster the temperature would decline and be closer to normal temperature.

"Watch out, it's a no-fly zone in the island like that in Lion Fortress. When we are close to it, we'd better lower our flight altitude!" The grand elder of Tianlu Palace ahead of them opened his mouth as he declined his flight altitude rapidly, closely followed by all the other members of the three teams. When they were close to the edge of this island, they were only a few meters above the ground. The moment they entered the air territory of this island, they had lost their flying capabilities and fell down at once.

If not being warned in advance, those who came here for the first time might be very embarrassed after falling down from hundreds of meters in the air even though they would not die at once.

After landing, they felt that the temperature had recovered to normal while the air became refreshing at once.

Now that it existed in the hot magma sea, it already indicated that this place was very marvelous.

"After taking a rest, we will take action!" Old Monster Qi suggested.

They didn't reject him. Earth knights might not encounter any difficulty to fly for 2 hours at a high speed consecutively; however, it was very difficult for most of the black iron knights...

They then found a place nearby to take a rest by sitting cross-legged, drinking water or eating something so as to recover their physical strength and battle strength.

Zhang Tie sat down against a huge grey rock. Filton then walked to him and stealthily gave him a vial of medicament. After taking a look at it, Zhang Tie became stunned, 'It's all-purpose medicament...'

"This thing just entered the Lion Fortress a few days ago. It's very effective to recover physical strength and cure common minor injuries and poisoning symptoms..." Filton explained it to Zhang Tie...

'Has my elder brother opened the market in the Lion Fortress?'

Zhang Tie felt complexed and gratified...

Chapter 933: The Hieron Ruins

After having a sweet vial of all-purpose medicament, a relaxed feeling started to spread across his body from his stomach. After a short while, the fatigue and physical consumption caused by 2 hours of flight had been recovered.

The 2 hours' flight was much easier for Zhang Tie than the others. It was a middle-and-high speed for others, however, it was just a bit faster than the cruising speed for Zhang Tie. Such a flight didn't cost him too much physical strength. In case of being too eye-catching, Zhang Tie had to take the vial of all-purpose medicament gifted by Gong Ziyao. Actually, he could recover his physical strength very soon without having to take all-purpose medicament at all. Even if he wanted to take the all-purpose medicament, he only needed to run his spiritual energy to move the well-brewed all-purpose medicament from Castle of Black Iron into his mouth.

After 1 hour, seeing someone standing up, Zhang Tie stroked the familiar pattern of manjusaka on the empty vial before throwing it onto the ground. Closely after that, he also picked himself up from the ground.

Zhang Tie didn't know whether he was littering freely; if someone could really catch sight of this empty vial, his advertisement for his domestic business would be a success.

Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he threw a glance at Gong Ziyao and Zhou Sufan who was sitting with crossed legs not far away and nodding towards Zhang Tie at the same time.

Before entering the hieron ruins, everyone wanted to adjust their conditions to the best.

Gradually, all of them picked themselves up from the ground.

Mountain Lifting Hermit exchanged a glance with the other two

earth knights and nodded at each other.

"Now that we've had a good rest. Let's go then!" The grand elder of Tianlu Palace opened his mouth while everyone else set off once again.

As they could not fly in the island, they could only rush towards the huge pyramid in the distance by foot.

Before leaving, Zhang Tie looked back at the boiling magma sea.

'I wonder whether someone would follow us?'

'But who would like to stay here and be a sentry at this moment?'

As this whim occurred to his mind, Zhang Tie ran forward as he undid his abyss battle spear from his back and assembled it one part after another.

After being assembled, the 4 m long abyss battle spear looked pretty terrifying. Plus Zhang Tie's towering figure, it was full of killing intent and became the largest and most eye-catching weapon in the entire team.

Most of the people in the team used short weapons such as sabers or swords; some used exotic weapons such as the ax, hook, spine and 1 m long sickle. Bai Suxian the "young sister" used a steel whip which was circling around her slim waist. Only Zhang Tie used a long weapon.

The moment he took out his weapon, he became outstanding at once. Even the members of Zhang Clan in Tianlu Palace couldn't stand glancing at Zhang Tie.

Few of battle skills on knights level were about long weapons. However, all the battle skills with long weapons were overbearing and powerful. Many people were guessing what battle skill did Cui Li the sturdy tough man use with such a terrifying weapon.

The grand elder of Zhang Clan also recalled the battle skills of long spears that he had learned. After that, he shook his head

faintly. He didn't remember that there was a powerhouse called Cui Li who excelled at long spear battle skills.

In running, Zhang Tie felt a hot eye light falling on his body. Zhang Tie turned around and saw that Bai Suxian was watching him with her watery eyes. When she caught sight of Zhang Tie's eyes, she hurriedly moved her eyes away. At the same time, she replied with a cold harrumph. However, her split vision was still on Zhang Tie's body.

It was evidently a gesture and signal of a woman who sought for coquetry and comfort.

If not at this moment and this place, Zhang Tie was sure that as long as he dared hug Bai Suxian shamelessly, the woman would definitely fall into his arms as soft as water.

'Does this petite girl really like tough men like me?' Zhang Tie touched his bald head as he smirked...

Bai Suxian moved very elegantly. The moment she touched the ground, she would throw her long sleeves. At the same time, she moved dozens of meters ahead like a fairy. In the entire team, her battle strength reflected by her movements was definitely at the medium level.

'How could such a woman raid and kill a man who courted her out of no reason?'

When he thought about this, Zhang Tie felt that Mountain Lifting Hermit's concern might come true.

'However, as the arrow is fitted to the string, we could only move forward. If we make some achievements in the hieron ruins, we could at least have a greater chance to survive the raid of the demon knights when we go out of here. Mountain Lifting Hermit and the other two earth knights might think in this way. None of those knights who dare enter the Earth-elements Realm are afraid of battle.'

...

Based on the high speed of knights, after running less than half an hour, they had already arrived at the foot of the huge, flat-roofed pyramid in the middle of this island.

There were a lot of stony steps from the foot of the pyramid to the roof, each step was higher than 0.5 m. Led by the three earth knights, everyone rushed upstairs, 10 steps a stride.

When he reached the flat roof of the pyramid, Zhang Tie's sight expanded at once. He caught sight of a row of huge stony pillars while the entrance of an old, broken temple entered their visions. There were two rows of huge, time-honored statues at the entrance of the temple, each statue was higher than 10 m. At the sight of those statues, everyone became shocked once again, including Zhang Tie.

The statues were standing in two rows, one row on the left, the other on the right. The row on the right were armored human fighters who were holding their swords with solemn and dignified looks. Those on the left were demon fighters who were also standing in solemn looks with huge hammers in hands.

The two rows of statues didn't look aggressive to each other; instead, it seemed that they were commonly safeguarding the hieron.

As these statues were too old, it was hard to guess their ages. However, the statues reminded Zhang Tie that humans and demons might be two races living together peacefully in a far-ancient age. If not, how could humans and demons safeguard the hieron commonly at the entrance? No matter whether it was humans or demons who established this hieron, if they were in the antagonistic state at that moment, the party who established this hieron would never allow the other party's statues to be the guardians of the hieron...

If Zhang Tie was a historian or anthropologist, he might stop to

study this question seriously. However, as a knight, he didn't need to do research; instead, he only needed to plunder so as to grow more and more powerful.

Therefore, although they were shocked inside, none of them would stop to study those statues. They just passed by the statues and arrived at the entrance of the hieron.

There were various animals such as cattle and sheep on the huge stony pillars. On the top of the only gate, there was a mysterious triangular sign being made of three scales of different sizes.

The mysterious triangular sign should be the symbol of this hieron or of a religious meaning like the signboard of yamun, bank or commercial group. However, like how they didn't know why statues of demons and humans were standing outside the hieron, none of the three teams of knights understood the meaning of the sign on the gate of the hieron until today.

They only knew that they would face dangers and might make good achievements inside.

After tens of thousands of years, everything in front of them became ruins. They only cared about interests; instead of the far-ancient yet unknown truth. If humans could kill all the demons, they might put their efforts in studying this place seriously; however, as the holy war had broken out, nothing was more realistic and meaningful than powerful punches and sharp blades.

Right at the entrance of the hieron, the time-honored metal gate being carved with exotic grains was shuttered, leaving three tidy and eye-catching pits on it.

After coming to the entrance, Mountain Lifting Hermit, Old Monster Qi and the grand elder of Tianlu Palace respectively took out a piece of shimmering diamond-shaped metal. After exchanging a glance with each other, they inserted their diamond-shaped metal piece into the pits respectively before moving a few steps back at the same time.

"Watch out. When the gate opens, as long as you enter it, don't exit casually. Being affected by the mysterious strength and guarding rule of this hieron ruins, everyone could only access to this threshold just one time. As long as you exit it, you will not be able to enter it again!" Zhang Anguo, the grand elder of Tianlu Palace warned the others.

As they had made it so far, if someone made such a stupid mistake, he or she would waste all the previous efforts.

Soon after Zhang Anguo's words, the entire pyramid quivered while the gate slowly opened. With a dazzling white light, a majestic qi poured out of the gate.

This majestic qi reminded Zhang Tie of the scene when he entered the tower of time, which also indicated that everything in this hieron could not be destroyed by knights...

Chapter 934: As a Lion, Like a Dragon

After the gate was completely opened, the three earth knights moved one step forward and put away their metal pieces. Closely after that, all the members of the three teams entered the hieron consecutively...

When he entered the gate, Zhang Tie felt an exotic energy sweeping over him...

Zhang Tie looked back. Although they had entered, the gate didn't close; he then ran his spiritual energy while a tracing feather flew out of his forehead and lay on the entrance of the hieron silently.

—After everyone entered, as long as someone else entered, the tracing feather would attach to the sole of the new arriver automatically. The moment the tracing feather moved, Zhang Tie would know that someone else had arrived!

As it was on the flat roof of the pyramid, there was no space behind the gate but an extremely serene, spiral staircase, which led all the way to the bottom of the pyramid.

Most of the knights who came here for the first time didn't know what was at the bottom of the pyramid. The ground in the pyramid was brilliant and carried a special metallic luster.

"Ah, it's too cold..." The arrivers quivered a bit when a chilly wind blew towards them from below the staircase.

Compared to the hot magma sea outside, the inside space of this pyramid was at least below minus 40 degrees Celcius. Even being knights, they could only move normally inside in a short period.

"Attention, it's even colder downside there. In 3 days, if anyone of you couldn't stand it any longer, you should exit in advance..." Mountain Lifting Hermit uttered.

When Mountain Lifting Hermit uttered, Old Monster Qi

remained silent, who directly led his team and rushed downwards along the spiral staircase at a very fast speed. The knights of Zhang Clan in Tianlu Palace hurriedly followed them up. Mountain Lifting Hermit's team was in the end.

Although they could not fly by the strength of the chakras at this moment, they didn't slow down. Everybody was moving rapidly on the spiral staircase.

At this moment, everybody became a bit thrilled.

When Zhang Tie was running, he kept observing the surrounding environment.

The spiral staircase gradually turned wider and flatter due to the structure of the pyramid. Additionally, this spiral staircase was a distinctive, two-helical structure like the helical structure of DNA. No artificial trace could be seen on this staircase. It was a complete, mysterious structure.

In each dozen meters, there would be a fire basket near the handrail. Zhang Tie guessed that the fire baskets might be used to illuminate the staircase in the far-ancient times. However, it could not be authenticated now.

Due to the existence of night-viewing medicaments, even if there was no fire basket, knights could still clearly see the surroundings.

There were odd-looking mural paintings and strange words on both walls of the staircase. Zhang Tie saw many scenes about the co-existence between humans and demons. What shocked Zhang Tie was that those scenes were not about wars but about strange religious activities. In those religious activities, animals such as cattle and sheep were pushed in front of a tall and odd-looking joss for a sacrificial purpose...

There were empty stands on both sides of the staircase. The items on the stands might have been taken away.

The three keys in the hands of Mountain Lifting Hermit and the

other two earth knights were from others. In the past 9 years, two batches of people had arrived here.

According to the introduction of the previous two batches of people, due to a short period, even knights could not stay too long below there. Therefore, many regions in the hieron ruins had not been fully explored. There might be some good items left. However, as those who had entered here once could not enter it for the second time, even though being the third batch of explorers, they might still find something good inside.

The Weapons Mountain and the possible space-teleportation equipment were both worthwhile for people to risk their lives here.

The deeper it was, the colder it would be. They felt like entering an ice cellar.

In less than 10 minutes, they had deepened over 13 miles inside the pyramid. Given the position, they must have entered the underground space of the pyramid.

After coming to the last step, the three earth knights stood there. Even Old Monster Qi didn't walk a step forward with shimmering eyes. Everyone else then stopped on the last step.

What in front of everyone else was a huge palace-like lobby, which lasted for miles. They could faintly see dozens of portals at the end of the lobby, large or small. The ground of the lobby was as clean as a new pin, which was covered with exotic grains. The entire lobby felt icy and quiet. On both sides of the lobby were two rows of exotic metal statues.

All the grim and dignified metal statues were taller than 3 m which looked like spiders in the lower body and humans in the upper body. They were holding a metal shield by the left hand and various weapons by the right hand.

When they stopped on the last step, the eyes of the two rows of

metal statues started to turn red while their necks started to sound, "kakakaka". At the same time, they moved their heads towards the three teams of knights which were very terrifying.

They were not statues but powerful battle puppets in the hieron who had been staying there since they were put.

It was so terrifying that these battle puppets could still move after so many years.

"Ga...ga...ga..." Old Monster Qi laughed as he watched Mountain Lifting Hermit and the grand elder of Tianlu Palace while narrowing his eyes, "We three will rush over there together in this pass. After that, we will choose one portal respectively and enter it independently. After entering portals, we will not interfere with each other whether you're alive or dead, rich or poor. How about that?'

After exchanging a glance with each other, Mountain Lifting Hermit and the grand elder of Tianlu Palace nodded at the same time before replying in a muffled voice, "Good!"

The 3 earth knights rushed out in a split second...

The moment the 3 earth knights left the last step and landed on the grand of the lobby, all the battle puppets in the lobby started to move as fast as knights.

6 battle puppets who were nearest to the 3 earth knights instantly rushed out and stabbed three huge swords and three long spears towards the 3 earth knights...

"Go die..." Mountain Lifting Hermit roared as he released a battle qi punch towards two battle puppets from 5 meters away, causing them to move backward, instead of killing them or damaging them.

The two battle puppets blocked the greater part of the battle qi of the earth knight with their shields. Although a small part of Mountain Lifting Hermit's battle qi punch touched the bodies of

the two battle puppets, it only slid off a part of the metal on the battle puppets...

With a loud boom, the 16 feet of the two battle puppets left 16 scratches on the ground. After moving 7-8 m backward, they rushed forward once again...

These battle puppets' defensive abilities and close-combat capabilities could almost match that of knights.

The roar of Mountain Lifting Hermit started the first battle in the hieron ruins.

"Hahaha, cool!" Zhang Tie rushed out of the black iron knights with laughter. Based on his powerful jumping ability, Zhang Tie instantly arrived at over 20 m in the air. He then waved his abyss battle spear in the air while a battle qi fire dragon appeared whose brilliant glow covered the entire lobby...

In the battle, the 3 earth knights couldn't stand throwing a glance at Zhang Tie.

Everybody then felt a hot sun shining in the air while the temperature in the surroundings rose up abruptly...

Zhang Tie was lifting the hot sun. Together with the dancing, odd-looking fire dragon with a pair of wings, the hot sun was thrown into the group of battle puppets.

Thunder-like booms and strong, hot wind and shock waves of battle qi swept over 100 m in a split second, sending 4 of the group of battle puppets flying backward at once.

What a fierce strike! It could almost match that of an earth knight.

All the black iron knights including Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan who saw Zhang Tie using his long spear battle skill for the first time were startled at once. They had not imagined that Zhang Tie could be so fierce.

Zhang Tie refreshed everyone's senses once again.

At the sight of this scene, the grand elder of Tianlu Palace was shocked too while a famous figure in Taixia Country occurred to his mind, he immediately hailed, "Fire-Dragon Heaven Burning Spear Battle Skill!"

"Hahahaah...Grand Elder Anguo really has a good taste!" Zhang Tie burst into laughter as he raised his spear horizontally to block two huge swords.

Closely after that, he changed the direction of the head of the long spear in a weird manner and penetrated it through the gap between a battle puppet's shield and huge sword like a living, golden snake. He directly stabbed his spear into the lower body of the battle puppet and lifted it up, smashing it towards another battle puppet; as a result, the two battle puppets were both sent flying away...

Each battle puppet here weighed about 5-6 tons. All the black iron knights' eyebrows kept jumping when they saw Zhang Tie lifting up a battle puppet with the spear so easily, 'F*ck, how powerful is this guy! Is he even a human or not?'

After touching these battle puppets, Zhang Tie felt that these battle puppets' metal was very defensive to long-distance battle qi strikes. As for these battle puppets, the most effective combat mode was the close combat.

More battle puppets rushed towards them...

In the laughter, Zhang Tie passed by the three earth knights and rushed into a group of battle puppets alone in an aggressive way.

After that, all the others could not see Zhang Tie's body clearly. Instead, they could only see huge battle puppets being lifted up by Zhang Tie's abyss battle spear one after another and smashed onto the other battle puppets in the distance. They could barely pick themselves up from the ground until quite a while...

1...2...3...4...16...17...18...

Zhang Tie kept lifting up 18 battle puppets...

In Hua legends, an unrivaled fierce general could lift up chariots one after another on the battlefield. Although they had not seen that; at the sight of Zhang Tie's performance, everybody else felt that the legendary general could not even match Cui Li.

Chapter 935: A Bloody Battle in the Lobby

The battle puppets could not be killed...

After Mountain Lifting Hermit, Old Monster Qi and the grand elder of Tianlu Palace, Zhang Tie was the 4th knight who penetrated through a battle puppet with abyss battle spear and broke the battle puppet into metal fragments and parts.

Zhang Tie thought that the battle puppet would die for sure; however, the fragments and parts of the battle puppet assembled once again automatically and recovered the original look of the battle puppet in less than half a minute.

This scene reminded Zhang Tie of his favorite game at home when he was young—find an empty box of leather shoes and throw some nails and screws in it. After that, move a piece of the magnet at the bottom of the box slowly. Gradually, those nails and screws would move and gather together...

Zhang Tie was obsessed with this game when he was 5 years old. At this moment, watching those parts assembling like being manipulated by a huge piece of magnet underground, Zhang Tie felt goosebumps all over. He finally understood why Mountain Lifting Hermit organized a team to explore this hieron ruins together with him.

Although those battle puppets' battle strength could almost match that of knights and their bodies could be damaged or shattered into pieces, their finest parts could never be destroyed, even by earth knights.

Knights might be killed; however, those parts of battle puppets could only be separated temporarily. In less than 10 minutes, they would assemble into a new battle puppet and join the battle once again.

They were not fighting battle puppets but thousands of

indestructible fine parts and gears.

Besides the battle puppets, the entire palace seemed to be able to "heal" itself. The traces on the ground caused by Zhang Tie gradually faded away in less than 10 minutes too...

It took them more than 2 hours to march in 1/3 of the lobby.

Many battle puppets were rushing towards them all the time...

...

With an explosive sound "boom", Zhang Tie penetrated through a battle puppet's chest after causing a special, shrill sound in the air. With his vigorous battle qi, the battle puppet exploded while thousands of parts scattered like how a heavenly maid scattered blossoms.

It was the 6th battle puppet that Zhang Tie had killed...

When a spider's leg flew off, Zhang Tie immediately caught it by his hand.

Noticing that Filton and the other two team members were being besieged by 7-8 battle puppets, Zhang Tie rushed to their side as he wove his spear to strike the 7-8 battle puppets' bodies and shields in a split second. After a tempest-like collision, the formation of the battle puppets was broken by Zhang Tie, resolving the crisis facing the group of three at once.

Only at this moment did everybody else feel being lucky to have Zhang Tie as their team member.

After Zhang Tie broke the formation of the battle puppets, two battle puppets rushed towards Zhang Tie at a high speed at once.

"Piss off!" Zhang Tie lifted up one battle puppet by his right hand and sent it flying away. At the same time, he fiercely smashed the spider leg onto the other battle puppet's shield, causing that battle puppet to slide over 10 m away.

The spider's leg weighed over 200 kg. It worked as an odd-

looking wooden club in Zhang Tie's left hand. Even though being a club, it was also intimidating with the terrifying strength and battle skills.

With a spear in the right hand and a spider's leg in the left hand, Zhang Tie was surrounded by wild air-splitting shrieks and howls. He then rushed into the formation of the battle puppets and caused a great chaos at once like a fierce lion coming down a mountain.

Filton rushed to Zhang Tie's side and made a head-on collision with a battle puppet.

During this process, Filton asked Zhang Tie, "What do you take a leg of battle puppet for?"

Zhang Tie replied, "I want to see whether the battle puppet could recover while lacking one leg. Don't you feel it is interesting?"

"What the hell!" Filton replied.

Among all of them, perhaps only Zhang Tie felt that it was interesting to do an experiment with a broken leg of a battle puppet at this moment.

If he was alone, Zhang Tie even thought about throwing this broken leg into the abyss of chaos in Castle of Black Iron to check whether this battle puppet would still be that sharp or not after its broken leg was completely melted.

Besides being unable to use battle qi strikes and fly, these battle puppets' battle strength was really terrifying. A corps of 100,000 battle puppets outside the hieron in the pyramid could definitely be unrivaled in the world.

Right then, the first human knight was wounded...

He was from the team of Old Monster Qi.

The knight jumped higher than 30 m as if he wanted to jump over some battle puppets...

However, when he jumped up, some battle puppets in front of

him lowered their bodies and jumped up at the same time; meanwhile, two huge swords and one spear pricked towards that human knight.

Actually, when a human knight lost his flying ability, it was very dangerous and stupid for him to jump up and fight his enemies in the air due to gravity.

Even the three earth knights who had greater jumping abilities than him were fighting step by step on the ground, he definitely had to bear the corresponding result for his jump.

It seemed that he had not imagined that these battle puppets could jump so high.

In the air, he was startled. After blocking three battle puppet's strike hurriedly, his protective battle qi was broken at once; meanwhile, he started to decline rapidly towards the ground.

At this moment, a battle puppet raised its head and threw out a spear towards him when his protective battle qi was broken.

It was out of his imagination that battle puppets could throw out a spear.

The target of the spear was his lower abdomen. The battle puppet wanted to kill him. In a panic, he used his instinct to strike the long spear by palm from a few meters away. Although the spear's head lowered and didn't hit his lower abdomen, it penetrated through his thigh. After spurting out a lot of blood from his thigh, the man uttered a muffled harrumph...

The moment he landed, he had rolled aside and poured a vial of all-purpose medicament into his mouth at the fastest speed.

...

In a few minutes, a battle puppet with red eyes and one leg jumped towards Zhang Tie at a speed which was just a bit slower than that of normal battle puppets.

At this moment, the broken leg in Zhang Tie's left hand started to expand and contract forcefully. It felt like a living, running hind leg of a robust ox. The broken leg had a very great strength. Commoners could not hold it fast at all, except for Zhang Tie. However, the strength of the broken leg was dwarfed by the strength of Zhang Tie's hand.

Watching Zhang Tie holding fast its broken leg, the battle puppet chased after Zhang Tie like a lunatic. It seemed that it swore to kill Zhang Tie.

After a while, the broken leg started to get warmer. Gradually, it turned as hot as a red piece of iron. After that, with a sound "Pah", the broken leg automatically separated into many finer parts and dropped off Zhang Tie's hand. Closely after that, those parts started to bounce towards the very battle puppet like hopping beads. Gradually, a new leg formed...

'How great these battle puppets are! On this occasion, they could almost be unrivaled.'

'However, the one who created these battle puppets tens of thousands of years ago was greater.'

Zhang Tie sighed with emotions inside as he kept fighting those battle puppets...

After recovering its leg completely, the battle puppet rushed towards Zhang Tie once again...

In a few minutes, the battle puppet turned into pieces over again...

...

Everyone was marching on as they fought battle puppets fiercely.

It was a bloody battle. Since the first human knight in the team of Old Monster Qi was injured, more and more people in the teams of Tianlu Palace and Mountain Lifting Hermit started to get injured consecutively. Even Gong Ziyao's shoulder was injured by a

battle puppet's spear...

Thankfully, nobody was killed in this course.

After about another 4 hours' bloody fight, they finally drew close to the other end of the lobby. The arch doors on the fan-shaped walls could almost be reached in less than 100 m.

However, by then, above 90% of them had been exhausted.

"Hahahaha, see you. Wish you're safe..." Old Monster Qi burst into laughter as his battle qi suddenly surged. An image of a huge bloody toad rose up and beat back a row of battle puppets in front of him at once. At the same time, he dodged from the sharp weapons in weird movements and broke the final ring of encirclement. Closely after that, he disappeared behind an arched door...

Chapter 936: Woman's Heart

Now that he was called Old Monster Qi and was not favorable, he would always do something that made people abhorrent, exposing his selfish temperament sharply.

Take this moment as an instance, when the others were fighting battle puppets bloodily, Old Monster Qi suddenly broke out the encirclement and left all the others behind.

Zhang Tie wondered what Old Monster Qi and his team members had agreed with; however, at this moment, Zhang Tie felt that the other team members became Old Monster Qi's tools. As long as they could help Old Monster Qi pass this lobby, they would lose their value.

Although Old Monster Qi left without any hesitation, an earth knight's sudden departure severely weakened the overall battle strength of human knights; especially the battle strength of Old Monster's team.

After almost 6 hours of bloody battle, when they were going to pass this terrifying lobby, most of the knights had been exhausted. Old Monster Qi's departure immediately made his team suffer a great loss. As a result, one of his team members was injured at once.

Bai Suxian moved as agile as usual. Her soft steel whip was both sharp and crafty, which could be as hard as steel and as soft as water. Her ability was definitely above average black iron knights. Since they entered the lobby to the present, 3 of their team had been injured; however, the "young sister" was still safe and sound.

However, as a woman, even though her battle strength was not bad, after 6 hours of a tough endurance race, she had also almost run out of her physical strength. At this moment, Bai Suxian's face had turned abnormally pale while oozing sweat at her temples. Facing the fierce attack of so many battle puppets, she gradually

became stagnated while her protective battle qi was only 1/4 of the original thickness. At the same time, it was undulating very unsteadily. For many times, the battle puppets' battle swords almost scraped her neck and nose tip. The remaining protective battle qi actually could not guarantee her safety anymore, which would be easily collapsed.

The battle puppets would not die; however, knights would die for sure. If the passage of this lobby was 1.5 times longer and only two earth knights broke in, perhaps even earth knights would be killed.

Mountain Lifting Hermit and the grand elder of Tianlu Palace had not exerted their full strength. Since the beginning of this battle, they had not shown their real strength. Besides, only Zhang Tie among all the other knights was still vigorous while being circled by a fire dragon. Holding an abyss battle spear, he was like a battle god. Wherever he went, he would sweep over his weapon as if he had determined to have a head-on fight with the battle puppets. Zhang Tie didn't look fatigued at all.

"Ah..." An exclamation drifted from Bai Suxian. Zhang Tie turned around and found Bai Suxian's long whip was twining around a battle puppet's neck. However, that battle puppet suddenly dropped its shield. At the same time, it suddenly stood up its lower body and started to draw the long whip forcefully. Having been very weak, Bai Subxian, after losing her balance, instantly flew towards the battle puppet. Right then, the battle puppet stabbed its spear towards the "young sister"'s breast forcefully with a shrill sound in the air.

Battle puppet didn't have a good taste. They only knew enemies instead of cup sizes.

As it occurred so abruptly, Bai Suxian had no chance to dodge at all. With a despairing look, Bai Suxian was going to be penetrated through by the spear and be severely injured in the blink of an eye...

Right then, Zhang Tie rushed over there and hugged her; at the same time, he bore the strike of that battle puppet with his back directly.

Zhang Tie found that he was genuinely soft-hearted. As that woman was not that vicious, he really couldn't stand watching a woman being severely injured or killed by a battle puppet in front of him.

Such a strike was very powerful. Although it didn't break Zhang Tie's protective battle qi, it rocked his protective battle qi. Additionally, Zhang Tie was sent flying backward together with Bai Suxian.

As Zhang Tie flew backward horizontally. The moment he fell onto the ground, he had hugged Bai Suxian with one arm and started to roll on the ground.

In such a case, even knights were disadvantageous while lying on the ground.

The surrounding huge swords were fiercely stabbed towards the two people. At the same time, the spider feet stomped towards their bodies mercilessly like sharp forks.

The battle puppets launched a tempest-like strike towards Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian.

As the old saying went, when you helped a person, you had to help him to the end; when you see off a Buddha, you'd better send the Buddha to the West. Now that Zhang Tie had determined to save Bai Suxian, of course, he would prevent her from being injured. If the one whom he saved was injured at this moment, he would lose his face greatly, 'No matter what, this father has experienced hundreds of battles and is cultivating an emperor-level secret method. Aren't I qualified to save her?'

When those swords, spears and spider feet fell, Zhang Tie protected Bai Suxian with his body while some swords and spears

were directly stabbed onto his battle qi, causing his qi and blood to roll inside.

However, as Zhang Tie was strike-resistant and had a self-recovery body; even if he was stabbed and chopped a few times, he could still bear that. He was not afraid of that at all.

In others' eyes, such a fierce and thrilling attack would solve the battle in a split second.

The other knights just saw Zhang Tie rolling on the ground with Bai Suxian so as to dodge from the brutal and terrifying blades and spears. As a result, those ineffective blades and spears stroke the ground, causing booms across the lobby.

Gong Ziyao, Zhou Shufan and Filton were startled at the same time as they hurriedly came here to save Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie didn't notice that Bai Suxian whose face turned pale just now was raising her head and looking at him without blinking her eyes while her fearsome look had disappeared.

Bai Suxian unconsciously leaned against Zhang Tie's chest lightly with her face and listened to Zhang Tie's surging blood and heartbeats. At the same time, she embraced Zhang Tie's waist with closed eyes...

"Go die!" Zhang Tie finally found a chance to launch a counter-attack by sweeping over his spear while lying on the ground, breaking 4-5 spider legs within a radius of 4 m besides blocking those spears and huge swords.

Zhang Tie sprung up from the ground once again. At the same time, he caught the waistband of the imperial longuette of Bai Suxian. In the next second, he threw Bai Suxian towards the other end of the lobby like throwing a javelin.

Zhang Tie's strength was really great. Not until Bai Suxian landed on the other end of the lobby steadily and opened her eyes did those battle puppets respond to that.

Therefore, Bai Suxian became the second person who passed the lobby after Old Monster Qi.

There was an evident line of demarcation on the ground while the colors and grains of the floor on two sides of the line of demarcation were different. It seemed that those battle puppets within the line of demarcation didn't see Bai Suxian at all.

Standing outside the line of demarcation, Bai Suxian watched Zhang Tie while panting heavily. At the same time, she took out a vial of all-purpose medicament and drank it up...

...

Previously, Gong Ziyao, Zhou Shufan and Cecilia were thinking about breaking the encirclement to save Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian; however, before they arrived, they had seen Zhang Tie spring up from the ground vigorously. At the same time, he threw Bai Suxian out of the battlefield.

At this moment, a battle puppet whose neck was circled with a soft whip rushed towards Zhang Tie. Watching this battle puppet and recalling his embarrassed look just now, Zhang Tie roared as he jumped up and fiercely struck the battle puppet's head with his spear by two hands like lashing a stick.

The battle puppet raised its shield to block Zhang Tie's strike; however, Zhang Tie's strike was evidently out of its endurance capacity.

As a result, its shield turned into pieces and scattered over the ground. Closely after that, one of its arms was broken. Finally, Zhang Tie's abyss battle spear smashed onto its head, breaking its head into parts and sending them flying in all directions...

The battle puppet didn't die; even though its head was chopped off, it had just lost its sense of direction, sense of judgment and striking capability for the time being while circling on the ground...

'What a man!' Everybody took a deep breath at the sight of this scene.

"Is that a man?" Filton roared what the others were thinking about...

Before the others came to save him, Zhang Tie had swept over once again.

...

At this moment, Zhang Tie felt a white shadow flashing by. Zhang Tie was stunned as he had not imagined that Bai Suxian who had been thrown out of the battlefield could return.

Bai Suxian caught her long whip and protected Zhang Tie by waving it like a tempest.

Zhang Tie didn't appreciate her; instead, he was driven mad. He felt that he had borne hundreds of times of strikes for her in vain, 'Is she crazy?'

Zhang Tie roared towards Bai Suxian, "Are you motherf*cking sick? You've been out of the battlefield, why are you back? As a female, why are you flaunting your superiority at this moment?"

However, Bai Suxian didn't say anything; she just wove her steel whip more frequently.

...

It took them almost 10 minutes to break through the last 100 m.

When everybody rushed out of the line of demarcation, the battle puppets in the lobby stopped their strikes. After wandering in the lobby for a while, the battle puppets returned to their original positions. When they stood still in two rows like statues, the glow in their eyes faded away like nothing had happened...

...

The moment they passed the lobby, most of the knights threw themselves onto the ground and started to pant heavily like having

escaped from a catastrophe...

Chapter 937: Crossing the Lobby of the Hieron

After about 6 hours of fierce battle, although nobody died, most of the 3 teams of knights threw themselves onto the ground as if they had survived a catastrophe.

They took a rest by drinking medicament and treating their wounds.

At this moment, even though there were so many portals near them, they didn't have the strength and spiritual energy to explore them for the time being. As they were safe temporarily, what counted most was to hurriedly recover their battle strength.

At this moment, besides Mountain Lifting Hermit and the grand elder of Tianlu Palace, there were only 3-5 people who were still standing, including Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie was concerned about the injuries of Gong Ziyao and Bolam. After confirming that the two people's injuries were not severe and they had drunk up a vial of medium-recovery medicament respectively, Zhang Tie became reassured.

"Brother Cui...aren't you tired?" Zhou Shufan asked Zhang Tie when he found the latter was still vigorous like nothing had happened. Zhou Shufan who would always remain his demeanor also looked a bit embarrassed at this moment——sweat all over his forehead; panting heavily; two broken parts on his soft armor.

"Ho...ho...I'm okay..." Zhang Tie revealed a smile.

"Oh, I heard Elder Zhang Anguo saying that you were using the fire dragon heavens burning spear skill, it might be..."

Zhou Shufan finally got a chance to ask this question.

"Yup, I'm cultivating 'Fire Dragon Sutra!' Zhang Tie replied frankly.

It was a good moment to expose the secret that he was cultivating the "Fire Dragon Sutra". To be honest, Zhang Tie had to appreciate Zhang Anguo of Tianlu Palace, who was really an informed earth knight. The moment Zhang Tie showed it, it had been identified by Zhang Anguo. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't need to find another moment to explain it to others.

Nobody could imagine that Cui Li who was cultivating the "Fire Dragon Sutra" and Zhang Tie who was being wanted in Taixia Country were the same person.

After hearing that Zhang Tie frankly admitted that he was cultivating the "Fire Dragon Sutra", all the surrounding knights were shocked inside. In a split second, some more "admiring" eye lights focused on Zhang Tie. As a complete marquis-level classic, "Fire Dragon Sutra" was very precious even in Taixia Country. It could never be touched by a common clan or sect. It was really out of their imaginations that Zhang Tie was so lucky to cultivate the "Fire Dragon Sutra".

Even Lord Huaiyuan who wanted to seal the Far-ancient Immortal Stele founded Huaiyuan Palace and left remarkable exploits in Taixia Country only with a count-level "Breaking Sun Sutra", the significance of "Fire Dragon Sutra" which was a marquis-level cultivation method would be clear.

Although there were duke-level, throne-level and emperor-level cultivation methods above marquis-level classics, only Emperor Xuanyuan was cultivating an emperor-level cultivation method called "Xuanyuan God Sutra"; there were totally less than 10 throne-level cultivation methods in both the Eastern Continent and the Western Continent; there were less than 20 duke-level cultivation methods, most of which were mastered by super clans and sects. Such cultivation methods were the greatest treasures of huge empires in the Western Continent. Therefore, marquis-level cultivation methods were the highest level cultivation methods that most of the knights could touch, which had a very significant

role.

"I've not imagined that brother Cui could be so lucky. I feel very happy for you. It's said that by cultivating "Fire Dragon Sutra" people could be very powerful and be as vigorous as a dragon. It seems to be real..." Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan both felt happy for Zhang Tie as they treated Zhang Tie as their friend although they both admired him.

"7 decades ago, Fire Dragon Hermit was unrivaled and known as one of the top 10 powerhouses in using the spear in Taixia Country with the cultivation method "Fire Dragon Sutra" and the secret battle skills and fire dragon heavens burning spear skill in the "Fire Dragon Sutra". His heroic deeds were admirable. However, Fire Dragon Hermit suddenly reclused 6 decades ago and disappeared. I wonder about the relationship between young brother Cui and Fire Dragon Hermit? "The grand elder of Tianlu Palace walked towards them and asked Zhang Tie with a kind look after checking some injured members.

Based on the status of the grand elder of Tianlu Palace and his battle strength as an earth knight, Zhang Anguo was definitely respecting Zhang Tie too much by calling him a "young elder".

Zhang Tie's performance in the battle and his background of "Fire Dragon Sutra" could win him respect for sure.

After hearing Zhang Anguo's words, Zhang Tie realized that the sitting skeleton in the mountain cave of Lianyun Mountain must be Fire Dragon Hermit. As for why Fire Dragon Hermit suddenly reclused and died there, it was a mystery.

Zhang Tie touched his bald head and said, "Honestly, I don't know anything about the relationship between me and Fire Dragon Hermit either."

Zhang Anguo was stunned by Zhang Tie's reply, "What do you mean..."

"I found "Fire Dragon Sutra" and a sitting corpse in a mountain cave. If nobody else in Taixia Country has "Fire Dragon Sutra", that sitting corpse must be Fire Dragon Hermit. As I inherited the knowledge of Fire Dragon Hermit by accident, I should be his disciple in the secular world!"

'Is this the so-called marvelous experience? Many youngsters in Taixia Country could only read such a marvelous scene in novels. Is that real?'

Hearing Zhang Tie how he gained the "Fire Dragon Sutra", all the surrounding knights became dumbfounded.

Zhang Anguo gazed at Zhang Tie's facial expressions and movements with a pair of sharp eyes. After hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, Zhang Anguo knew that Zhang Tie was telling true...

'He found a marquis-level "Fire Dragon Sutra" in a mountain cave by accident? I remember that Zhang Clan in Tianlu Palace has sacrificed at least 10 knights after almost 100 years of efforts of so many clan members only for a count-level "Early Universe Sutra" which could be the No. 1 treasure of Tianlu Palace.' Zhang Anguo sighed with full emotions inside.

People could not be compared with each other; otherwise, someone would be driven mad for sure.

...

The moment Zhang Tie turned around, he had seen the "young sister" who was watching him with a pair of amorous, watery eyes, causing goosebumps all over Zhang Tie.

After finding that Zhang Tie had noticed her, Bai Suxian walked towards him.

With a faint blush, she looked a bit bashful.

"Why...did you save me?" Bai Suxian muttered in a tender voice while lowering her head.

The moment Bai Suxian asked, all those beside them became quiet in a weird manner. Gong Ziyao, Zhou Shufan, Filton and Cecilia turned around at the same time; even Mountain Lifting Hermit prick up his ears. They had witnessed how Zhang Tie saved Bai Suxian just now. Not only roadside moms who bought vegetables were gossipy, even knights were curious.

It seemed that Bai Suxian had forgotten the lesson that she had learned when she talked to Zhang Tie at the beginning. After a few seconds, she had regretted asking Zhang Tie this question.

"Young sister, your breasts are as large as papayas. They must be juicy; how pitiful would it be if they were pierced by that battle puppet using a spear. If so, you would have a problem to feed your babies..." Zhang Tie shouted with a righteous look, "If you really appreciate me, when you give birth to a baby, let him call me Godfather. No matter what, I've kept this pair of feeding bottles for him!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, even Mountain Lifting Hermit and the grand elder of Tianlu Palace twitched their faces...

All the others who were waiting for the good result between a hero and a beauty were left dumbfounded by Zhang Tie at once.

Even Filton was stunned so much, 'According to the customs of Hua people, shouldn't this be a good marriage? How could Cui Li turn the romantic scene of butterflies flying in a pair in front of flowers under moonlights into a dialogue between a vulgar man and a female farmer who sells vegetables?'

Bai Suxian's face turned red and white as she didn't know how to react to him at all...

...

After a few minutes, when most of the knights were still cultivating, Mountain Lifting Hermit and Zhang Anguo couldn't stay here anymore. Otherwise, Old Monster Qi would have entered

the rear region ahead of them. As they were here for treasures; of course, they should not lag behind.

As for Mountain Lifting Hermit, he had been merciful enough by leading his team members across the lobby. As for the rest time, it depended on themselves.

After talking something to their own team members, the two earth knights rushed into a portal respectively. As for the rest team members, they didn't fully recover and thus entered the region behind the hieron 3 hours later...

...

At this moment, the demon baron appeared far away from the island above the magma sea...

Chapter 938: An Uninvited Guest

When the demon baron who had been following the three teams of human knights drew close to the island in the magma sea, those human knights had already landed on the island for a long time. It was not because that the demon baron didn't want to come here; instead, it was because of the utter difference between the environment above the magma sea and that in the mountain cave.

As it was very spacious and highly visible above the magma sea, which was radiating glow everywhere, if a knight flew above the magma sea alone, it would be very eye-catching. As there was almost no object that could cover the demon baron above the magma sea, the demon baron would be discovered from dozens of miles away. If someone among the human knights was watching through a telescope, the demon baron might have been discovered from 70 miles away.

Of course, the demon baron could also move in the magma sea. As an earth knight, it could also stay a few hours in the magma. However, it would cost its physical strength too much in magma; additionally, its moving speed would be heavily reduced. Therefore, it preferred to fly above the magma sea.

In the beginning, the demon baron followed up the human knights purely for revenge by killing them.

Later on, the demon baron found three teams of human knights of over 20 black iron knights under the leadership of 3 earth knights were getting together. It was a great power even in the first abyss. After knowing that so many human knights had flocked together, the demon baron's curiosity was aroused.

If not a major event or something related to interests, such a great power could not be easily gathered by humans or demons.

A few days ago, the demon baron seized the chance to kill a black iron human knight decisively.

It was an attempt.

After killing that human knight, the demon baron hid somewhere and started to observe the movements of the other human knights.

He found that the other human knights didn't evacuate or change their foothold; instead, they were still stationed near that valley.

Did it indicate that the other human knights were very confident about their power? Of course not, it only indicated that these human knights were going to do a major event, which was considered more important than facing the threats of demon knights.

After confirming that the other human knights were still stationed in the valley, the demon baron realized that they must be waiting for something.

'Are they waiting for more human knights?'

The demon baron was confused about their intention. However, he knew that it was a good chance. As long as he could destroy human knights' movements and make humans feel unhappy, he would regard it as a good chance.

The demon baron became thrilled.

When the abyss hurricane disappeared, the demon baron finally knew what the human knights were waiting for.

This magma sea was located on the other ends of underground tunnels and mountain caves. In normal times, few people could arrive here; fewer of those who arrived here knew that the abyss hurricane would stop. As the abyss hurricane above the magma sea would stop 3-5 days in every 3 years, those who came here might have a probability of 1/200 to meet the situation when the abyss hurricane disappeared. Therefore, the demons didn't know what was hidden in this magma sea.

'However, human knights should know that; otherwise, they

would not wait until the abyss hurricane came to a stop. There must be something valuable in the magma sea!'

The demon baron sniffed something special.

In the Earth-elements Realm, there were three situations that would stimulate a lot of human knights to move together: first, fierce combats and military actions between humans and demons; second, the opportunity to gain a lot of element crystals; third, the abyss secret items that were buried underground.

The first possibility could be excluded.

When the demon baron caught sight of the island in the magma sea and the pyramid in the middle of the island, it excluded the second possibility.

The demon baron was driven wild with joy from being thrilled.

The flat-roof pyramid looked like a hieron.

The world on the earth's surface was predominated by humans, the underground world was predominated by demons. Demons had learned about the history of the underground world much better than humans. Over the past tens of thousands of years, a lot of knowledge had been lacking among humans, which was caused by breaking-up human civilizations. However, among demons especially those high-level demons who had promoted to knights, these knowledge were carried forward.

The demon knight felt that the temperature surrounding the island was dropping sharply. After flying around the island and finding no ambush on the island, it knew that this island might have a no-fly zone. Therefore, the demon knight lowered its flight altitude and landed on the island steadily.

Mountain Lifting Hermit's concern that the demon knight would fetch its partners after finding their target here was right. However, it was out of his imagination that the demon knight who was following them up was not an average black iron knight but an

earth demon knight, a powerful demon baron.

The boldness of execution stems from superb skill, this proverb was also suitable for demons.

After a few minutes, when the demon baron came to the entrance of the pyramid, it injected its spiritual energy into the remote-sensing crystal finger ring and prepared to send a message to its partners.

If it sent the message successfully, a team of demons which would be more advantageous than human knights in battle strength would arrive in 4 days at most.

Just like how humans would destroy demons' action when they found that demons were doing the same thing, demons would do the same to humans.

Before sending the message, the demon baron raised its head and caught sight of the symbol above the gate of the pyramid.

It was a time-honored, mysterious triangular symbol composed of three scales in different sizes.

At the sight of the symbol, the lizard-like jujube core-sized vertical pupils in the golden eyes of the demon baron expanded with a shrewd eye light. At the same time, the demon baron exclaimed, "Bloody Sacrificial Hieron!"

Those human knights didn't know the meaning of that symbol; however, this demon baron knew it.

Only after thinking about it for less than 2 seconds, the demon baron had revealed a faint, grim sinister. At the same time, it stretched out its tongue and licked its lips. After exiting its spiritual energy from the remote-sensing crystal, it strode into the hieron at once.

Besides being brutal, another feature of demons was greed.

The demon baron didn't notice that when he strode into the

hieron, an invisible tracing feather had blown up like dandelion and stuck to his boots silently.

The tracing feather was much lighter than a speck of dust. As long as it didn't attach to the skin of high-level knights, it would not be easily noticed.

The moment the demon knight moved, the tracing feather moved too...

...

At the same time, Zhang Tie stopped his footsteps in the underground space of the pyramid.

"What's wrong?" Filton stopped and turned around to ask Zhang Tie.

The moment Filton and Zhang Tie stopped, all the other 4 members of their group turned around to watch Zhang Tie. They thought that Zhang Tie had found something.

At this moment, they were walking among deserted palace-like rooms and a maze-like cloister and expecting to find something.

There were still very few battle puppets standing at the doors of one or two rooms, which were evidently outnumbered by Zhang Tie's group.

Zhang Tie's group was composed of 6 people, namely; Filton, Bolam, Cecilia, Gong Ziyao, Zhou Shufan and Zhang Tie. It was easy for them to defeat one or two battle puppets.

Besides the team of Tianlu Palace, the teams led by Old Monster Qi and Mountain Lifting Hermit had dispersed the moment they crossed the lobby.

In Zhang Tie's mind sea, the tracing feathers on Mountain Lifting Hermit, Zhang Anguo and Old Monster Qi had long left this region and been over 70 miles away. They were still rapidly moving towards afar. The latter tracing feather was also rushing

downwards the pyramid at a high speed.

Given the moving speed of that tracing feather, Zhang Tie had confirmed that this one must be an earth knight.

It moved so fast that even Zhang Tie was shocked.

'I wonder whether that one is a human or a demon.'

"Nothing..." Zhang Tie shook his head as he tried to recover his composure, "I was just thinking that this region might not be valuable. As it's close to the lobby, it should have been explored by people. We would have a very low possibility to find any good item here. Why not speed up to take a look at the Weapons Mountain?"

"I agree with you. If we're lucky, we might get a silver secret item..." Gong Ziyao nodded.

After fighting some battle puppets outside the rooms in vain, Gong Ziyao also thought that there was no good item left here. Perhaps, there might be something good in a room; however, it would take them more than 3 days to explore all the rooms.

At this moment, two shadows flashed by them——Lu Zhongming and his wife had overtaken them...

Chapter 939: The Weapons Mountain

Zhang Tie thought that the earth knight behind them might hardly pass the lobby alone; however, the fact was out of Zhang Tie's imagination...

It took the demon baron less than 10 minutes to arrive on the last step at the bottom of the pyramid.

The moment it stood on the other end of the lobby, the demon baron stopped at once. With flickering, shrewd eye lights, he observed this lobby attentively and seriously.

The demon baron swept over the ground of the lobby and found that the battle traces were gradually recovering on the smooth and tidy floor. No single part of battle puppets was left on the floor except for some broken protective armors and fresh blood of human knights.

None of the human knights entering the lobby had imagined that their battle traces left a key information to the demon baron. Through the battle traces, the demon baron knew that those human knights didn't know too much about this hieron although they had keys to open the gate of this hieron——At least they didn't know as much as demons. If the human knights knew a lot about this hieron, they could completely pass this lobby without activating those battle puppets.

At the sight of this scene, the demon baron further strengthened its belief to take a risk. If human knights didn't know too much about this hieron, even if the demon baron failed its adventure, it could also leave here safe and sound.

At this moment, the eyes of the two rows of battle puppets in the lobby turned red once again. The battle puppets then moved their necks and watched the demon baron at the same time.

The demon baron looked at the ground seriously one inch after

another.

Besides the previous battle traces, there were some exotic grains on the ground. When it observed them carefully, it found that those grains were faintly undulating and flowing like ripples under the sunshine in a rivulet.

Even demon knights knew many things that human knights didn't, not to mention demon nobles.

Although the grains on the ground looked irregular and meaningless in the eyes of human knights, they were meaningful in the eyes of the demon baron. They were like cipher turntable safe.

Most of the bandits and thieves would open safes by force; however, for those who knew cipher turntable of safe, they only needed to adjust the cipher turntable properly.

This was Bloody Sacrificial Hieron. If a bloody battle was unavoidable whenever humans passed the hieron, how did flamens and monks enter this hieron in that far-ancient age?

Zhang Tie had thought about this question; however, he couldn't think it through.

By contrast, the demon baron knew how.

After gazing at the grains on the ground seriously for 5 minutes, the demon baron went down the last step and stood onto a certain place of those exotic grains.

Although the battle puppets moved a bit, they basically stayed in the original places.

The demon baron let out a sigh as it stood still and watched the grains seriously.

The battle puppets didn't move, it indicated that the demon baron's judgment was right. It realized that the knowledge that he mastered still worked.

In less than 5 minutes, the demon baron strode out once again...

It took the demon baron a bit longer than 4.5 minutes to finish three footsteps.

...

When Zhang Tie felt that the tracing feather had slowed down when it came to the lobby, Zhang Tie thought that the latter one was in a fierce battle.

Zhang Tie soon knew that he was wrong.

In the beginning, the tracing feather moved one time in every few minutes; gradually, it moved faster and faster, which startled Zhang Tie.

...

After 1 more hour, when Zhang Tie's group passed through the palace complex and entered a wood, the tracing feather also passed through the lobby.

It took the latter one almost 1/5 of the time used by the three teams of human knights to pass the lobby. What an amazing speed! The reason that Zhang Tie was startled was that he thought that even two earth knights could not pass the lobby in such a short period jointly.

'What did such a high speed mean?'

'Did I make a wrong judgment? The uninvited guest is a heavenly knight?'

Zhang Tie's heart raced when this whim occurred to his mind.

"Ah, it's too motherf*cking cold..." Filton couldn't stand crying while running.

It was indeed growing colder. Zhang Tie felt that it was at least -80 degrees Celsius.

It was purely cold without wind or snow. Zhang Tie felt that

everyone had entered a huge space being similar to that of "refrigerator" before the Catastrophe.

What did 80 degrees Celsius below zero mean? It meant that if Filton spat out a mouth of saliva, before the saliva reached the land, half of it would have been frozen. Not only that, their leather armors also turned stiff.

Even in running, everybody was still releasing a thin layer of protective battle qi so as to maintain their own body temperature.

Perhaps, there were indeed plants in this wood very long time ago; however, they had fully turned into crystal, ice sculptures or fossils.

The current scenery was very brilliant and dreamlike. However, it was not funny at all.

"I feel that we've made a circle around that architectural complex..." Gong Ziyao said as he was running.

"Yes, I think so..." Bolam nodded.

When they talked, they exhaled masses of white air, which instantly dispersed the moment they left the range of their protective battle qi.

"Are we in a maze?" Cecilia asked.

"It's not a maze. We're in the hieron. Tens of thousands of years ago, it didn't exist for the posterities to make circles. We were just in a common architectural complex in the hieron, which might be the dwelling place of flamens or monks. It was just a bit special in design and a bit large in size. All the designs in the hieron are functional which won't be too complex. We've just passed through that architectural complex and entered a garden in the hieron..." Zhou Shufan replied calmly, "Didn't you feel that we were still in the pyramid? The staircase was spiral; therefore, the lobby should be located at the edge of the bottom of the pyramid. I think we're marching towards the center of the bottom of the pyramid..."

"Ah, how is it possible?" Filton shouted, "We've already deepened dozens of miles below the pyramid!"

"The part above the ground is just a small part of the top of the pyramid. Most part of this pyramid is deeply buried underground. Each step I ran forward, I would release a battle qi towards the ground; I found that the ground would give me a feedback on my battle qi each time. The part below the ground here was same as that in the lobby. You can have a try..." Zhou Shufan explained which shocked everyone else.

The others sensed it seriously and found it was like how Zhou Shufan said. The strand of battle qi met a layer of powerful and plain obstacle after deepening into the ground for dozens of meters. The obstacle felt similar to that they sensed in the lobby.

If they were still at the bottom of the pyramid at this moment, this hieron was too huge. It was out of people's imagination that who could create such a marvelous hieron.

Zhou Shufan's explanation was soon verified. They found a fully frozen lake in front of them. Both sides of the lake were surrounded by handrails.

After crossing the iced lake, Zhang Tie caught sight of the team of Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace.

All the members of Zhang Clan's team were over there. It seemed that they had not stayed in that architectural complex too long either. Additionally, they had a very clear target. Clan teams were usually featured by consistent actions wherever they were.

That team also caught sight of Zhang Tie's group who were catching up with them from behind.

As they were all safe and sound, they kept running forward.

"Brother Cui, why are you silent?" Gong Ziyao threw a glance at Zhang Tie as he asked the latter.

When they were engaged in a hot discussion just now, Zhang Tie

remained silent, which was a bit abnormal; therefore, Gong Ziyao asked Zhang Tie out of concern.

Actually, Zhang Tie was sensing the whereabouts of the tracing feather behind them.

"Ah, it's okay, brother Gong; I was just wondering If someone else would come in!"

"Don't worry, young brother. Even if a demon knight enters, we've got three earth knights to resist it! Even if we could not defeat it, we would escape. In the Earth-elements Realm, it's very normal for demon knights and human knights to escape if they could not defeat the other party. It's not shameful at all." Gong Ziyao comforted Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie found that he became a bit intense because of the tracing feather behind him. It was good for him to have a tracing feather; however, it was really torturing after knowing that an unknown powerhouse was following him up. He felt like waiting for one boot to fall on the ground upstairs.

'F*ck, even If it's a heavenly demon knight, I don't need to be scared. After all, it's not coming only for me. Even if it was coming for me, this father would hide in Castle of Black Iron in the worst scenario. I don't believe that it could bite off my butt. Whatever, now that I've been here, I will see whether I could get some benefits first...'

Zhang Tie determined his mind!

"It's the Weapons Mountain..." A member of the team of Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace in front of Zhang Tie's group suddenly exclaimed...

Chapter 940: Pearls of Silver Secret Items

The moment the knight of Tianlu Palace shouted, he had accelerated his speed.

Closely followed by Zhang Tie's group. They rushed out of the wood at once.

They then caught sight of a mountain in front of them.

At the sight of the mountain, although he was always steady, Zhang Tie couldn't stand swearing——F*ck.

It was a black high mountain which was at least 10,000 m in height. It was very magnificent. From its hillside above, it was misty. As a result, people could not see clearly the Qingfeng Peak.

This mountain absolutely verified the judgment of Zhou Shufan, namely, they were still at the bottom of the pyramid. Because the top of the mountain and its surrounding space formed a very regular dome. Of course, such a dome could not appear in the natural environment.

Zhang Tie felt that Mountain Lifting Hermit, Old Monster Qi and the grand elder of Tianlu Palace were trying their best to climb upon the Weapons Mountain. Zhang Tie wondered what was on the peak.

Zhang Tie felt that the higher they were, the slower the three earth knights would move. It seemed that they were facing a great obstacle on the Weapons Mountain.

When they caught sight of the mountain, some rainbow-like colorful lights were circling around the mountain like satellites. After a few seconds, they lurked into the enshrouding mist and didn't come out of there anymore.

"Silver secret items..." Even Gong Ziyao exclaimed this time while everyone else accelerated towards there like having taken drugs.

The closer they were to the Weapons Mountain, the colder it would be. However, they felt blood boiling all over.

Zhang Tie also followed up the team towards there rapidly. At this moment, Zhang Tie had totally forgotten about that tracing feather. He had made his determination that as long as that guy didn't appear in front of him and his friends, he would ignore it. 'When the sky collapsed, the taller ones would prop it up. As I'm not the tallest and most powerful one, I will focus on searching for the benefits first.'

'If concerns work, what punches are used for? I only need to be vigilant.'

Zhang Tie's group moved very fast. The team of knights from Tianlu Palace was soon caught up by them. The knights of Tianlu Palace accelerated once again and caught up with Zhang Tie's group. The two teams kept rushing towards the Weapons Mountain in this way.

Although they had not touched any silver secret item by now, the two teams of knights had already faintly become competitive.

According to the rule, anyone who could get one silver secret item first would have it. Of course, they needed to make their full efforts to strive for that.

Silver secret items! They could also be available to heavenly knights. The more the better! In Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Tie knew that only Elder Muray had one battle crossbow which was a silver secret item, even Zhang Taixuan didn't have one.

Actually, there were bronze secret items below silver secret items. Bronze secret items were also rarities. The Full-moons Dragon Soul Waistband and the first elements-gathering matrix that gifted by the imperial household of Raymlan Empire in the Castle of Black Iron were both bronze secret items. As for most of the black iron knights even earth knights, bronze secret items were their popular equipment. Silver secret items were greater than

bronze secret items. The strong function that silver secret items could automatically appear out of the void and their powerful light and shadow effects of silver secret items were definitely the best choices of some guys who would like to show off themselves.

Secret items could never be produced in this age.

At this moment, Zhang Tie heard some sounds from the back. Zhang Tie turned around and found Lu Zhongming and his wife rushed out the wood from the other side, who were also rushing towards the Weapons Mountain. After the couple, Bai Suxian was the fourth one who rushed out of the wood.

It seemed that many people were clear-minded or desperate. Compared to making circles in the palace and maze-like architectural complex and fighting those battle puppets meaninglessly, they preferred to come to the Weapons Mountain for a silver secret item.

At their full speeds, the knights of Tianlu Palace and Zhang Tie's group of 6 arrived at the foot of the Weapons Mountain at the same time.

The pitch-dark Weapons Mountain looked pretty solemn and depressive. Right at the foot of the mountain, there was a thin mist. If it was a few degrees lower here, their salivas would turn into ice scums before falling onto the ground.

The Weapons Mountain was definitely different from common mountains. There was no plant across the Weapons Mountain. It seemed to be completely composed of bulky, odd-looking metal lumps. As for the parts of the metal lumps being exposed to the air, some of them looked like brilliant geometrical crystal structures of metallic ores. Growing up in clusters, they formed odd-looking black metal flowers.

With the eyes of a great artisan master, Zhang Tie could not identify the metal in this Weapons Mountain.

It seemed to be an exotic, natural alloy. At least Zhang Tie had not seen it on the earth's surface with "Master Jiang".

After the knights of Tianlu Palace arrived at the foot of the mountain, the 9 knights instantly rushed in 9 directions upwards the Weapons Mountain.

As silver secret items were very precious, the number of which was far less than the number of the knights who had come here. Additionally, it was very hard to get silver secret items. Therefore, they could only move in different directions like spreading a fishing net and attempt to gain silver secret items by chance. If a lot of people gathered together, they were not fishing but angling. If so, they would definitely not have as many chances as the first one. Additionally, even if two people like Lu Zhongming and his wife cooperated to successfully gain a silver secret item, which party would the silver secret item belong to? Not to mention if a group of people worked together.

Zhang Tie's group of 6 stopped at once.

"Let's separate from each other too!"

Gong Ziyao proposed while everybody else nodded.

"If any of you is in trouble, remember to release your battle qi. The others will catch sight of it right away and arrive there soon. If someone dares to rob our achievements, we will f*ck him!" Filton said with a furious look as he had already been ready for a fight, "After all, we've been clear about each other's battle qi!"

Although they would separate from each other, they could also gather rapidly if there was any trouble.

"Fine!"

"Wait for a second..." Zhang Tie touched his bald head with a bashful look as he asked, "Erm, what's the look of the silver secret item? How could I gain it?"

The moment the others heard Zhang Tie's question, they threw

their amazed looks at Zhang Tie at the same time.

Gong Ziyao watched Zhang Tie with a dumbfounded look just like how he saw Zhang Tie using his abyss battle spear at the beginning, "Don't you know that?"

"As I've just been in the Earth-elements Realm and joined in such an action for the first time, nobody told me about that!" Zhang Tie shrugged as he replied helplessly.

Honestly, Zhang Tie thought that the so-called silver secret items in the Weapons Mountain would be excavated from the ground like how grave robbers dug items from the graveyard. However, when he came here, he found that it was utterly different from his imagination. Take the rainbow-like colorful lights that he saw just now as an instance, he didn't know what were they.

All the others felt being struck by lightning bolts. They had not imagined that Zhang Tie didn't know how to gain silver secret items. What a joke!

"Haven't you seen the rainbow-like lights just now?" Zhou Shufan asked Zhang Tie.

"Yes, I have!"

"That are the lusters of silver secret items!"

"Did all the silver secret items in the Weapons Mountain exist in that manner?"

"Not exactly. In the Weapons Mountain, silver secret items could move. Before having their own owners, all the silver secret items will exist in the form of virtual images of secret items, which are virtual, colorful animals being composed of numerous mysterious runes. They will fly around the Weapons Mountain. If you see illuminant animals in the Weapons Mountain, congratulations, you've caught sight of the virtual images of silver secret items! No matter what animals come into being, they are not aggressive at all. However, they could dodge and escape from you. You could

follow them up and find their origins!"

"What then?"

"Silver secret items will always hide in the colorful pearls of secret items in the metallic crystals in the Weapons Mountain which are easily recognized. When you see a silver secret item entering a pearl of a secret item, you just stay there and smash the pearl of that secret item. Then, you will see the virtual image of that silver secret item. After that, you only need to squeeze a drop of fresh blood onto the virtual image before becoming its owner. At the same time, the virtual image of the silver secret item will start to become a material object, which is the real look of the silver secret item in the material world!"

"So easy!" Zhang Tie blinked his eyes.

"Yes, so easy!" Zhou Shufan continued to explain it to Zhang Tie, "However, there's one point that you should pay attention to. The structure of pearl of a secret item is very special; it's very hard to smash. Even if you've discovered a pearl of a secret item, you could not break it in 1 or 2 days. What counts most in the Weapons Mountain is that not all the pearls of secret items contain silver secret items. Most of the pearls of secret items are empty. You'd better not start to break it until you're sure that there's a silver secret item in it. Otherwise, even though you've found a pearl of a secret item and had smashed it in a couple of days exerting your full efforts, you would probably find nothing inside. It's equal to a gamble by trying to smash a pearl of a secret item without seeing a virtual image of a secret item entering it!"

Chapter 941: A Weird Cloud of Mist

Before going up the mountain, it took Zhou Shufan 2 minutes to explain the most important thing to Zhang Tie.

It was out of Zhang Tie's imagination that the process to gain a silver secret item from the Weapons Mountain was so bizarre.

After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie asked the last question, "As silver secret items are different in qualities and levels, if two silver secret items appeared in front of me at the same time, how could I select the better one?"

"Generally, the fiercer and bigger the virtual image of the animal was, the more advanced and rarer the material object would be!" Filton answered the question ahead of Zhou Shufan, "In other words, the bigger and fiercer the virtual image was, the rarer it would be!"

Zhang Tie nodded as he said, "Wish you good luck then!"

"If there's no accident, we will assemble here and leave out of here 3 days later!"

"Fine!"

"If you're powerful enough, you can have a try upside there. However, the higher it is, the colder it will be. Basically, only earth knights could stay a bit longer above 6,000 m of this Weapons Mountain. It's said that the pearls of secret items on the top of the mountain might contain space-teleportation equipment such as nanobeads!"

"I am not that greedy. I only expect to get a silver secret item this time!"

After chatting for a short while, they cupped their hands towards each other. After that, they separated from each other and rushed into the misty Weapons Mountain as fast as shells. Even Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan who used to be partners had separated at

this moment.

As for whether they could gain a silver secret item in the next 3 days, it depended on their own luck and power.

Zhang Tie moved too. He directly rushed into a deserted path.

Even tens of thousands of people could not be easily found in the Weapons Mountain, not to mention the 20-odd human knights.

Before entering the mountain, Zhang Tie sensed the whereabouts of the tracing feather behind them once again.

The tracing feather had also entered the palace-like architectural complex; however, it dodged from all the knights in that architectural complex on the way. Given the moving trace of the tracing feather, Zhang Tie realized that it had intended to dodge away from the other knights on purpose. The nearest distance between the tracing feather and a knight of the team of Old Monster Qi was less than 200 m. It seemed that the tracing feather which had been moving straight ahead had already found someone in front of it; therefore, it made a detour. Neither did the member of the team of Old Monster Qi chase after it or escape. It indicated that that person didn't notice the latter one at all...

Within a fixed distance, if one knight found the other while not being found, it indicated that the two knights were sharply different in battle strength.

The tracing feather rushed all the way towards the Weapons Mountain.

Although Zhang Tie had already entered the mountain, when he sensed the destination of the tracing feather, a whim occurred to his mind.

As the old saying went, no profit, no early rise. This proverb fit both demons and humans. As the tracing feather rushed all the way towards the Weapons Mountain, it was definitely not here for an entertainment.

However, Zhang Tie didn't even know whether that guy was a human or a demon.

'I will see whether the latter is a human or a demon!'

...

Benefited from the tracing feather, Zhang Tie could monitor the ongoing direction and whereabouts of the new arriver at any time.

Zhang Tie hid somewhere and checked the location of the tracing feather. After ensuring that nobody was near him within 1.5 miles, he directly entered Castle of Black Iron.

In a few seconds, a black, little beetle emerged out of the void.

After that, the little beetle started to fly leisurely at the foot of the Weapons Mountain.

After 20 minutes, the little beetle landed in a multi-layered metallic crystal. Through the gap of the crystal, he started to glance at the valley under the foot.

In less than 5 minutes, Zhang Tie had already caught sight of that person.

If not the tracing feather, Zhang Tie wouldn't even believe that he was watching a living being.

It was a grey cloud of mist. Zhang Tie could not see any figure at all.

The grey mist twisted as if it would be blown off by the wind at any time. Being close to the ground, it flew all the way from the distance into the valley and up the hill very fast. In a few seconds, it had disappeared in front of Zhang Tie and integrated into the mist over the Weapons Mountain.

After the cloud of mist completely disappeared in front of his eyes for a few minutes, the black, little beetle returned to Castle of Black Iron. Zhang Tie reappeared behind that metallic crystal luster.

Zhang Tie then walked out of the metallic crystal. While frowning, he watched the direction where the cloud of mist was heading for.

No living being could look like a cloud of mist, neither human nor demon. Therefore, Zhang Tie realized that it was not a cloud of mist, but a high-level secret method which could hide one's qi.

However, Zhang Tie didn't know who was that one in the weird mist.

Mountain Lifting Hermit, Old Monster Qi and the grand elder of Tianlu Palace were still rushing towards the top of the mountain. The weird cloud of mist also rushed towards there. They might encounter over there. Perhaps, the cloud of mist knew that something was on the top of the mountain and was not afraid of encountering the three earth knights.

This action turned more and more interesting.

Touching his bald head, Zhang Tie thought it for a short while before following up that weird cloud of mist all the way towards the top of the mountain...

All the other knights behind him had already come to the Weapons Mountain consecutively.

...

Only after 10 minutes, Zhang Tie had caught sight of the first pearl of a secret item.

The pearl of a secret item grew in metallic crystal clusters covering over 100 square meters whose diameter was over 1 m. Among these metallic crystal clusters, Zhang Tie caught sight of a big, blue, smooth metallic ball which looked like a fruit in the metallic crystal flowers.

Honestly, these metallic crystals and this pearl of secret item felt like an abstractive sculpture in urban squares. Zhang Tie had seen so many sculptures being composed of metallic balls.

1/3 of this pearl of the secret item was deeply buried in the mountain which could barely be shocked.

After circling around the pearl of the secret item for a short while out of curiosity, Zhang Tie stretched out his hands, pushing and embracing it; however, the pearl didn't move at all like having grown into the Weapons Mountain.

The pearl of the secret item was very cold. The moment Zhang Tie touched it, his two palms almost stuck to it.

Zhang Tie drew out his abyss battle spear and forcefully slashed onto the pearl of the secret item with 40% of his battle qi. After a bang, only a small part of the surface of the pearl of secret item fell off.

The inside of the small patch of the surface was still smooth.

Zhang Tie understood it that the so-called pearl of the secret item was like a super large and hard onion. It would really take him a lot of efforts to open it.

'Even if I broke it in 2 days exerting my full efforts, I would probably not get anything at all. Will I do that? Of course not. Many black iron knights would have a try if it was another place or enough time. However, it didn't work here. Everyone entering the hieron ruins would have very limited time. It's a gamble with very minor possibility to win. I would consider making a gamble 1 day later if I couldn't find any virtual image of the secret item. It's still too early to do that now.'

Only after staying beside that pearl of the secret item for a few minutes out of curiosity, Zhang Tie had continued to go up the mountain.

The higher it was, the colder it would be. In the mother nature on the earth's surface, this place must be a standard forbidden area for living beings. Therefore, the knights would consume a lot of their strength physically and spiritually by moving into the

mountain. They released their protective battle qis at any time. Additionally, they needed to maintain the normal running of their battle qis so as to warm up and protect their organs, qi and blood all over. The higher they were, the greater consumptions they would make. There was no road or tunnel on the Weapons Mountain at all; therefore, even Zhang Tie slowed down his speed unconsciously.

If they did not release their protective battle qis, even knights' skeletons and muscles would become stiff in only a few minutes at such a low temperature. In such an environment, commoners might not bear 3 minutes even in thick clothes before their blood all over became frozen.

Of course, Zhang Tie's first target was a silver secret item. After all, those coming here were all trying their own lucks whether they were circling around the mountain or going up the mountain. Therefore, the so-called target was always uncertain.

...

After 2 hours, Zhang Tie who was going up the mountain suddenly felt a colorful light flashing by while a golden, brilliant pheasant with a beautiful tail flew in front of Zhang Tie...

The virtual image of a secret item!

Zhang Tie was thrilled for a second. He instantly sped up by a few times and chased after that beautiful bird...

After passing by a ridge, Zhang Tie saw that the beautiful huge bird lurked in a red pearl of a secret item in a cluster of metallic crystals.

The cluster of metallic crystals covered thousands of square meters. 7-8 pearls of secret items were in those metallic crystals like some brilliant lotus flowers in a lotus leaf. The beautiful, huge bird lurked in one of the pearls.

The moment Zhang Tie entered the metallic crystals, he had

heard an air-tearing sound from behind while a female knight appeared from afar...

At the sight of Zhang Tie, the female knight changed her face at once...

Chapter 942: An Aggressive Male Knight of Tianlu Palace

Zhang Tie didn't feel that this female knight was strange as he had seen her at the entrance of the Earth-elements Realm. At that time, this woman was on the airboat. Although Zhang Tie was not sure about her full name, he only faintly heard Zhang Anguo the grand elder of Tianlu Palace call her Shuzhen.

This age was predominated by males. Therefore, the step of selecting characters only targeted at male knights. In Hua clans, even though female knights could attend the chakra rotating ceremony, they could not select characters. Female knights had to get married. According to the regulation of Taixia Country, after getting married, female knights had to follow up their husbands' surnames. Therefore, it was useless for them to select characters.

It seemed that this female knight of Zhang Clan was a bit afraid of Zhang Tie. These days, this female knight always kept away from Zhang Tie and dared not to look straight into his eyes.

After all, the words that Zhang Tie told Bai Suxian last time shocked this female knight too much. Before meeting Zhang Tie, she almost didn't believe that there was such a person in this world.

Neither of the two people had imagined that they could encounter here once again. Therefore, after seeing each other, they were both stunned.

The female knight of Zhang Clan blushed as she oozed sweat all over and panted a bit. It seemed that she had been chasing after that beautiful, huge bird for a long time. Therefore, she consumed her strength physically and spiritually a lot.

Zhang Tie pretended to be solemn. He had just chased after that beautiful, huge bird for less than half a minute before watching it

to lurk inside the pearl of a secret item.

The two people just watched each other.

"That...that colorful bird is mine!" The female knight finally plucked up her courage, "I've already chased after it for a long time!"

"Hoho, young sister, have you forgotten our rule? The one who takes the silver secret item first will keep it!" Zhang Tie reminded the female knight with a solemn look. Given her naive face, Zhang Tie estimated that her real age might be similar to that of him. Therefore, he felt like teasing her. Now that she had already chased after the colorful bird for a long time, Zhang Tie really didn't mean to compete with her shamelessly. He was always soft-hearted to women. Actually, this woman reminded Zhang Tie of his elder sister Lan Yunxi. If she could promote to a knight at such a young age, she must be an elite in the Tianlu Palace. "Only when you catch it, you could have it. Even if you have seen it and have chased after it for a long time, it doesn't necessarily belong to you. Am I clear?"

Zhang Tie was telling the truth. Unless the woman had caught the silver secret item or had locked the pearl of the secret item and prepared to smash it, this woman could not say that the silver secret item belonged to her.

If one could have a silver secret item only after catching sight of and chasing after it, who that colorful bird would belong to if someone else suddenly jumped out and said that he had also caught sight of that colorful bird and chased after it ahead two of them? What if Zhang Tie sent a message to Gong Ziyao through his remote-sensing crystal finger ring and played a trick at this moment, how would this female knight respond to that?

The three earth knights had long considered these questions. Based on their rich experience and crafty temperaments, of course, the three earth knights would not leave a chance for others to play

such a performance when they made the rule. Therefore, after entering the hieron, although they could compete with each other and strive for silver secret items, they had to follow the principle that the one who took the object first instead of catching sight of it and chasing after it first could have it.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, the female knight bit her lips. Although she wanted to dispute, she didn't know how while she revealed a helpless look on her delicate face.

The great excitement caused by encountering the virtual image of a silver secret item, the hardship of chasing after it for a long time and the hopelessness in the end made her bright eyes turn crystal at once.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that this female knight's face was so thin. Only after a few words, she had dropped off her tears.

Since Zhang Tie promoted to a knight, he had met a few female knights such as Gongsun Liniang, Guo Hongyi and Bai Suxian; the first two were tough women while Bai Suxian was simply a spirit. These women left an impression on Zhang Tie that female knights would never drop off tears until he met such a tender female knight who dropped off her tears so easily.

Actually, a female's tear was more lethal to Zhang Tie than her battle qi.

The moment Zhang Tie wanted to explain that he was joking and wanted to expose which pearl of the secret item had the colorful bird lurked in, another knight of Tianlu Palace flashed between the two of them.

He was much elder than both Zhang Tie and the female knight with a whisker and pair of narrow and long eyes. He looked pretty aggressive and cunning.

"9th young sister. I saw you chase after the virtual image of a silver secret item just now. Have you caught up with it?" The

moment he landed, he had asked about it with a concerned look.

The female knight didn't speak. After throwing a glance at her face, Zhang Tie and the cluster of metallic crystals which exposed out of the ridge behind Zhang Tie, he rolled his eyes a few times before figuring out what happened.

The male then moved his eyes onto Zhang Tie as his mouth corners moved a bit, "Does young brother Cui want to be hostile to Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace only for a silver secret item? How about giving a face to Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace and leaving away by yourself so that we could still be friends?"

Hearing the man's words, Zhang Tie immediately swallowed his words.

Evidently, this man wanted to make Zhang Tie admit defeat in the name of Tianlu Palace. Given his words, he was going to rob it and force Zhang Tie to exit.

As there was a cluster of metallic crystals behind Zhang Tie and the "9th young sister" who stopped here with a sad look, evidently the virtual image of the secret item that the "9th young sister" had been chasing after had lurked into the pearl of the secret item in that cluster of metallic crystals. At the critical moment, this guy surnamed Cui blocked her way.

After throwing a glance at that female knight, Zhang Tie revealed a smile which contained a bit jest meaning which could not be observed by others, "Well, I will give a face to Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace!"

After saying that, Zhang Tie directly turned around and left, leaving the man and the woman to stand still with a dumbfounded look. It seemed that they didn't believe that Zhang Tie could leave the silver secret item to them so easily.

After Zhang Tie walked away from one side of the ridge, the two people hurriedly jumped over there.

At the sight of it, the man became startled. Although there were metallic crystals behind the ridge, they had never imagined that there were 8 pearls of secret items in the cluster of metallic crystals.

Apparently, only 1 of the 8 pearls of secret items contained the colorful bird while all the others might be empty.

"Hold on..." The man turned around and intended to stop Zhang Tie...

Chapter 943: The Conflict

Zhang Tie turned around and left right away right because there were 8 pearls of secret items in the cluster of metallic crystals.

It would take one about 2 days to open a pearl of the secret item; however, they could only stay here 3 days at most. That was to say, except for Zhang Anguo, the other 8 knights of Tianlu Palace had to make their full efforts in 3 days, 1 for each pearl of the secret item so as to ensure that Tianlu Palace could get the silver secret item in the end.

Tianlu Palace organized 9 knights to explore the hieron ruins not only for one silver secret item.

For any knight and clan, silver secret items were rarities. By contrast, as Zhang Tie had gained a shield from the demon general which was a silver secret item and had the Castle of Black Iron which was much sharper than silver secret items, plus his emperor-level cultivation method and his master Zhao Yuan who was known as the No. 1 criminal in Taixia Country, Zhang Tie was experienced and knowledgeable; therefore, he was greatly immune to the allure of silver secret items.

Due to these reasons, realizing that this guy of Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace was like a donkey in a lion's hide and frightening him in the name of Tianlu Palace, Zhang Tie didn't feel like arguing with him.

Given that they all were surnamed Zhang and originated from the same family thousands of years ago, Zhang Tie indeed saved the face of Tianlu Palace.

It was just a silver secret item, Zhang Tie would like to see whether Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace wanted it or not.

If the knights of Tianlu Palace had made their decision, they could get that silver secret item for sure. But the problem was that

would these knights be satisfied by only one silver secret item?

Additionally, how did the 8 people share one silver secret item? It might bother Tianlu Palace.

The two knights of Zhang Clan didn't notice that there were 8 pearls of secret items in the cluster of metallic crystals just now. They thought there was only one; therefore, they were left dumbfounded at this moment.

As for Zhang Tie who knew where was the "bird's nestle", the silver secret item in this cluster of metallic crystals could be easily got; however, as for the two knights of Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace, the 8 pearls of secret items made the silver secret item tricky at once.

Although $1/8$ was a high possibility, Zhang knights were apparently not satisfied with it.

Zhang Tie ignored the male knight's voice and kept walking forward.

After realizing that Zhang Tie ignored his words, the male knight who was blinded by the lust for the silver secret item and the face of the "9th young sister" immediately jumped over there and intended to stop Zhang Tie by catching his back.

"Stop!"

Perhaps Zhang Tie was so kind just now that this male knight of Tianlu Palace thought that Zhang Tie was a "big lug" and he could be a bit more excessive.

At this moment, the female knight hesitated a bit as she felt it was a bit improper. She wanted to stop the male knight; however, it was too late...

After hearing the shrill sound from his back, Zhang Tie was driven mad as he immediately drew out his spear and lashed back with 80% of his full strength.

It was not a prick, but a lash like how he beat a dog with a stick.

The moment Zhang Tie moved his spear, the air beside him had gone berserk while uttering a sharp, shrill sound like a piece of steel being cut open.

Hearing this sound, the two knights of Tianlu Palace changed their faces at once as this sound indicated a great, terrifying physical strength...

The spear was lashed onto the hand of the knight precisely.

Zhang Tie just used his animal's sheer strength without running his battle qi.

That person's protective battle qi vibrated heavily while being reduced to the extreme. Although his protective battle qi was not broken, the overwhelming strength from Zhang Tie's spear was completely transferred to the latter's hand and full body after being buffered for a second.

With a cracking sound, that male knight's wrist was broken at once. With a muffled sound, he was sent flying over 50 m away like a baseball.

With a sound "Chuang...", the female knight of Zhang Clan drew out her long sword at once; however, she didn't launch an attack; instead, she just prevented herself from being further attacked by Zhang Tie.

However, Zhang Tie just watched the two people with a cold look with crossed arms.

After his wrist was broken, the knight picked himself up in a groggy way while his face turned abnormally pale. At the same time, he watched Zhang Tie with a hateful look, "Well...well...I saw another one who'd like to be hostile to Tianlu Palace...I'll remember you...Cui Li, don't you regret!"

Watching Zhang Tie lashing the battle puppets into pieces in the lobby was different than tasting the terrifying strength from his

spear. After his wrist was broken, the male knight was a bit scared. What the two knights of Tianlu Palace had not imagined was that Zhang Tie who looked kind suddenly became so vicious.

"Peh, piss off!" After hearing that guy's vicious words, Zhang Tie instantly spat out a mouth of saliva onto the ground, which instantly turned into ice scums the moment it touched the ground. Zhang Tie then looked at the male knight with a domineering eye light and asked, "Do you Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace guys have one more d*ck than others or what? Is the Weapons Mountain your household plot or the Emperor Xuanyuan comes from your home? F*ck, you think if you want this father to leave, this father will leave; if you want this father to stop, this father will stop? Who the motherf*cking are you? This father doesn't want to argue with you because we have the same ancestor; this father is not used to rob items from a female; motherf*cker, are you not satisfied with it? You know what, this father will never tell you which nestle did the colorful bird hide in even if I knew it. So what? Come to bite off my butt?"

The female knight was dumbfounded. Although she wanted to say something, after listening to Zhang Tie's vulgar words, her face blushed as she couldn't utter a word.

The moment the male knight of Tianlu Palace wanted to say something...

Zhang Tie widely opened his ox-like eyes and frightened his words back, "Motherf*cker, if you dare make another f*rt, this father will fetch all the people and gift the bird's nestle to others. I guarantee you that Tianlu Palace will get nothing!"

If Zhang Tie really did this, Tianlu Palace couldn't stop him. Legally, the one who was most qualified to gain this silver secret item was actually Zhang Tie. If he wanted to gift this right to others, how could Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace stop him? Just like how Zhang Tie argued just now, this was not the household plot of Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace. Neither did the Emperor Xuanyuan

come from Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace.

Finding the two knights being silent, Zhang Tie turned around and left.

When he left, Zhang Tie hummed a weird song unconsciously.

"I'm a little dragon...little dragon...little dragon...little dragon...how many secrets do I have...secrets...secrets...secrets...I've got so many secrets, but I won't tell you, I won't tell you, I won't tell you..."

Hearing Zhang Tie's weird song, the female knight's look turned weird too. The male knight gritted his teeth as Zhang Tie's hoarse voice drove him mad. He felt that Zhang Tie was teasing him; however, he had to stand it.

Until Zhang Tie's back and song disappeared did the female knight put away her sword and hurriedly come to the male knight's side, "Senior fellow apprentice, are you okay?"

"My wrist is broken..." The male knight let out a long sigh as he unconsciously frowned due to the sharp pain. Zhang Tie's overwhelming strike frightened him a lot, "This Cui Li has a terrifying, sheer animal's strength..."

The female knight hurriedly took out her recovery medicament and daubed it over the male knight's wrist.

"It's not the end..." The male knight said hatefully as an insidious and malicious eye light flashed by his eyes.

"Senior fellow apprentice...I feel...I feel...Cui Li has given a compromise to us. It seems that we're a bit excessive..." The female knight whispered, "When I chased after the virtual image of the secret item, I almost lost it. Right then, this man passed by accidentally and appeared in front of me. He didn't mean to rob it from me..."

The male knight frowned once again as he replied in a muffled voice, "9th young sister, you don't know that. Human hearts are

insidious. If I was not here, you might have suffered a great loss. Additionally, it's a silver secret item, a silver secret item! As you were always cultivating in the cultivation room of our clan, you're too innocent. You don't know that many knights would even kill people or eliminate a clan only for a silver secret item. Now that we've already seen it and it was right in front of us, how could we let it go so easily? We should never give it to others..."

When the male knight's wrist slightly recovered and didn't ache anymore, the two people revealed sorrowful looks towards the 8 pearls of secret items at the same time...

'Do we really need to fetch all the others of Tianlu Palace?'

...

After leaving the two knights, Zhang Tie had forgotten about that event. He didn't mind if Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace troubled him. After all, Cui Li was single, who had no family. He didn't believe that the Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace would treat him excessively. Actually, if the clan knights and elders of the Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace were all overbearing and arrogant, they might not gain such a remarkable social status...

However, soon after he walked away, Zhang Tie had heard a sound from his back.

'Is Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace coming to revenge me?'

Zhang Tie turned around and saw that the female knight was catching up with him...

Chapter 944: A Condition

Crossing his arms, Zhang Tie stopped as he watched the female knight of Tianlu Palace who caught up with him with a glassy-eyed look.

"What? Do you want to revenge me?"

The female knight stopped 2 m away as she threw a bashful glance at Zhang Tie, "No, I'm not here to revenge you. I'm here to say sorry to you on behalf of my senior fellow apprentice..."

After hearing her answer, Zhang Tie looked at this female knight from head to toe seriously.

With long hair reaching her butt, the female knight wore a delicate rose-colored half-body metal armor. She looked slim and elegant; especially her long, beautiful legs; with the coordination of her high metal battle boots, she looked pretty charming and young.

The female knight also had a good look. Although she was not as brilliant as Lan Yunxi or as coquettish as Bai Suxian, her five sense organs were very delicate. With large eyes, snow-white skin, a straight nose and a tiny mouth, she was featured by the special elegance of Hua women in the Eastern Continent.

If he were still in Blackhot City, the female knight's look would easily remind him of the beautiful neighboring elder sisters who had accepted higher education.

At the beginning, this female knight reminded Zhang Tie of Lan Yunxi. After observing her carefully, he felt that she looked similar to Linda on temperament.

Under the straight eye light of Zhang Tie, the female knight became a bit intense as she moved one step back. In her eyes, Zhang Tie was even more dangerous than those mutated beasts.

"No need, if your senior fellow apprentice takes it amiss, just let

him come for me here!"

After hearing that the opponent was not here for trouble but for an apology, Zhang Tie's look turned better.

"Generally, senior fellow apprentice Anshi is not such a kind of person. As the silver secret item is very important, he..."

Zhang Tie wove his hand as he interrupted her words, "I don't care what kind of person is your senior fellow apprentice. You don't need to explain it to me either. Anything else? If no, I have to go..."

"One...one more thing!" The female knight became a bit embarrassed.

"Go ahead."

"Would you...please...tell me which pearl of the secret item did the colorful bird lurk in?" The female knight lowered her head when she realized that this request was a bit excessive.

Watching this female knight for a short while, Zhang Tie suddenly burst out into laughter, "Why do you think that I will tell you its whereabouts only by your one request? Are you dreaming? Why should I tell you that?"

"I know it's a bit excessive; however I will appreciate you if you tell me that!" The female knight raised her head as she watched Zhang Tie's eyes bravely.

Watching this woman, Zhang Tie realized that she was really innocent; instead of daydreaming. She was really a fresh-faced. It was Zhang Tie's first time to see such a naive female knight.

"How do you plan to appreciate me?" Zhang Tie looked at this female knight with a weird eye light as he touched his jaw.

"How much do I pay you?" The female knight asked seriously after thinking about it for a few seconds.

"How much do you want to pay?"

"2...no...300 million gold coins. I will give you 300 million gold coins as a compensation!" The female knight nodded with an affirmative look. In the beginning, she wanted to say 200 million gold coins; however, she felt that 200 million gold coins were too less; therefore, she added another 100 million gold coins.

Honestly, Zhang Tie was really startled by her casual tone which felt like buying fruits on the roadside instead of the amount of money.

In Huaiyuan Palace, even Zhang Taixuan the head of Zhang Clan would not deal with 300 million gold coins in such a casual way.

"Do you have so much money?" Zhang Tie looked at her with a dubious look.

"The total amount of lucky money during the lunar new year, my pocket money given by my mom and my dowry left by my grandma these years should be enough..." The female knight answered seriously after thinking about it for quite a while.

Hearing her reply, Zhang Tie wanted to die!

As a man who was loath to eat his mother's rice brew for the sake of some copper coins when he was young, he really didn't feel that he was living in the same world with this woman after hearing that this woman's lucky money and pocket money was as much as hundreds of millions of gold coins.

'F*ck, what a sharp difference!'

Zhang Tie's eye corners twitched for a short while before he shook his head, "If I needed money, I would make it myself. Additionally, I don't lack money. Money is not that important for knights!"

"If so, I can give you 2,000 earth-elements crystals, what do you say?" The female knight didn't give up her mind.

"Did you bring so many earth-element crystals with you?"

"No!"

"Why do I believe you then?"

"But I can give it to you when we leave out of here..."

The female knight's words were interrupted by Zhang Tie once again, "After leaving out of here? After leaving, Tianlu Palace would outnumber us. If you want to disavow it, would I fight you to death only for 2,000 earth-element crystals? If you hid yourself, I wouldn't even have a chance to fight you to death. Do you think this brother Cui is so stupid?"

"What do you want?"

"What's your name?" After looking at her from her head to toe, Zhang Tie's voice suddenly turned tender as he revealed a weird smile.

Although she was not frightened by Zhang Tie's rudeness, she was startled by Zhang Tie's sudden tenderness. Therefore, she moved one step back once again.

"I...I'm Zhang Shuzhen!" The female knight watched Zhang Tie with vigilant eyes.

"I've got a condition. If you promise me, I will tell you the whereabouts of the colorful bird."

"What condition?"

"Hohoho, let this brother Cui kiss you enough right here. This brother Cui has not kissed a female knight yet." Zhang Tie revealed an "evil" laugh as if he was a timber wolf who had caught sight of a small white rabbit.

Zhang Shuzhen's face turned pale and red consecutively, "You said...kiss...kiss me here?"

"Don't waste my time. If you promise me, I will tell you that. If not, you'd better leave right away!"

"Just kiss...kiss my face?"

"Nonsense. Of course, I have to kiss your mouth. It's boring to just kiss your face." Zhang Tie said with an evil facial expression, "I don't want anything else, ho...ho..."

Zhang Shuzhen's breasts undulated while her face changed colors sharply as if she was struggling inside. After being silent for more than 10 seconds, when she saw Zhang Tie turning around and intending to leave impatiently, she finally made her determination. With the spirit of sacrificing herself to feed a lion, she closed her eyes as she raised her head and said, "I agree...you can..."

'Just one time, it will be okay after standing it a few seconds. By comparison, the silver secret item is more important...'

The female knight comforted herself.

"Don't bite my tongue!" Zhang Tie warned her when he moved closer to her. When she recalled Zhang Tie's rudeness and terror, the female knight's body quivered...

'Will he reach his tongue into my mouth?'

'It's just a kiss. Why does he kiss my tongue?'

The female knight felt disgusted about Zhang Tie's warning...

Watching Zhang Shuzhen clenching her fists and raising her delicate, stubborn face with quivering eyelashes, Zhang Tie smirked and moved his face closer to her. After sniffing her fragrance, Zhang Tie blew towards her face. The female knight became as stiff as a steel plate in a split second...

Zhang Shuzhen had already sensed Zhang Tie's heat while her heart pounded like beating a drum; meanwhile, her mind was completely blank like lying under the scaffold...

Zhang Shuzhen waited for a while; however, Zhang Tie didn't move...

After another a few seconds, Zhang Tie still didn't move...

Zhang Shuzhen then opened her eyes and found nobody in front of her at all.

Zhang Tie had already disappeared while his voice reached her ears in a secret way, "One of the two pearls of secret items is real, the one on the highest point of the cluster of metallic crystals and the one on the direction of 7 o'clock from where I stood on the ridge. If your motherf*cking senior fellow apprentice wants to pretend to be a hero, let him open the two pearls of secret items with you in 2 days! Young sister, you smell good, ha...ha..."

...

Zhang Tie belittled those who took advantage of others' difficulties, especially of women. Therefore, he only made a joke with this female knight of Zhang Clan, Tianlu Palace.

Because it was not Zhang Tie's temperament to give concession to a woman only because of the latter's few words on the premise that the two parties had a conflict just now. At this moment, how come Zhang Tie directly tell her the whereabouts of the colorful bird?

The reason why Zhang Tie told her two pearls of secret items was that he wanted the male knight of Tianlu Palace who pretended to be a hero to pay for his rudeness.

The period that they would stay in the hieron ruins was only enough for each knight to open one pearl of the secret item. In order to verify whether Zhang Tie's words were true or not, one knight of Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace had to spend longer than 2 days on a meaningless object or have each of the 8 knights of Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace waste 6 hours. This was the punishment for the male knight who had pretended to be a hero in front of Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie felt that he had done good enough.

After locking the two pearls of secret items, the possibility for them to find the right one would rise from $\frac{1}{8}$ to $\frac{1}{2}$.

Zhang Tie could imagine the fake hero's poor look.

'I will see whether you will continue to pretend to be a hero for the sake of a beauty at the risk of my benefits in front of me...'

...

On the way to the middle of the mountain, namely, above 5,000 m, Zhang Tie didn't have any chance to meet any virtual image of a silver secret item any longer...

From the halfway above, the mountain was covered with a cloud of mist while its temperature declined sharply.

The cloud of mist was actually composed of fine icy crystals suspending in the air. Without releasing the protective battle qi, anyone would suffer a cruel torture of being stabbed by tens of thousands of needles.

It was cold and almost air-free. As a result, it's hard for black iron knights to move and stay long in such an environment...

At this moment, two people appeared in the cloud of mist in front of Zhang Tie and disappeared in a wink.

The two people didn't see Zhang Tie; however, Zhang Tie caught sight of them.

They were Lu Zhongming and his wife.

Zhang Tie became stunned, 'Why are they moving towards the top of the mountain too?'

...

At the top of the Weapons Mountain, a magnificent hieron was standing there in a majestic way...

Old Monster Qi was the first one who reached the top of the mountain and caught sight of the hieron...

Chapter 945: Breaking the Gate of the Hall

At the top of the highest peak of the Weapons Mountain...

Old Monster Qi, who arrived here first, walked towards the hieron.

The hieron was built in the mountain and was integrated with the entire Weapons Mountain. The entire hieron was tall and majestic. It was completely made of a metal, which radiated the same luster as that on the floor of the lobby where the battle puppets stood. There were various mysterious reliefs of figures and animals on the exterior walls of the hieron...

If those metal reliefs could be cut off from the walls, they were extremely superb, priceless art treasures and the most precious materials for anthropologists and historians to study far-ancient civilizations.

However, they were just reliefs on the walls here.

Very few of those who came here would value artworks and care about the academic value and research value of them.

Because all those who could arrive here were at the top of the pyramid of humans. They were featured as being realistic, powerful and knowing what was most important for themselves.

It was too cold here. The temperature here almost reached the upper limit of all the living beings. Even earth knights had to release their protective battle qis so as to stay here a bit longer.

As the air here was thinner, people here would feel suffocated in the vacuum unconsciously.

What was more, those reliefs on the exterior walls were integrated with the hieron, which could not be cut off at all.

The gate of the hieron was higher than 10 m. It was completely closed. Therefore, Old Monster Qi could not see what was inside at

all.

In order to catch time, Old Monster Qi rushed to the top of the Weapons Mountain at the fastest speed at the cost of too much strength physically and spiritually.

As he walked towards the hieron, Old Monster Qi drank up a vial of all-purpose medicament. At the same time, he panted while widely opening his mouth.

Earth knights needed to breathe too. Although earth knights could hold breath for a long time in extreme conditions, Old Monster Qi could still breathe as more as possible at this moment so as to recover his physical strength and aura as faster as possible.

The oxygen content of ten breaths here was equal to that of two breaths at the foot of the mountain.

Old Monster Qi came to the front of the hieron while radiating shrewd eye lights. He circled around the hieron for a while as if he was looking for another entrance.

Pitifully, Old Monster Qi became disappointed.

The only access to the hieron was that closed gate.

After coming to the front of the gate, Old Monster Qi checked the gate for a few minutes before shaking his head. He then forcefully pushed the gate; however, the gate remained still. After that, Old Monster Qi moved a few steps back and took a deep breath before striking the gate of the hieron with his battle qi constantly and fiercely...

...

Old Monster Qi kept striking the gate of the hieron thousands of times in over 10 minutes.

Besides the bangs reverberating on the top of the mountain, the gate of the hieron remained still.

Facing the strikes of earth knights, even adamant steel would be

shattered into pieces; however, that gate remained still like nothing had happened.

"It's useless, Old Monster Qi..." A voice sounded behind Old Monster Qi. During the past 10-odd minutes, Zhang Anguo the grand elder of Tianlu Palace had already ascended to the top of the main peak and appeared behind Old Monster Qi, "I guess that you were leaving one step earlier than us for the sake of the benefits here. If the gate of this hieron could be opened so easily, it would be none of our business!"

Old Monster Qi stopped as he turned around and smirked, "Do you also want to pretend to be innocent in front of me? If you were not afraid of me occupying all the good items in the hieron, why did you come here?"

"Old Monster Qi, if you could really open the gate, according to the rule, all those who could see them would have a share, of course, I would share them with you! Let's see whether you could occupy all of them." The grand elder of Tianlu Palace said with a calm look.

As old guys were always shrewd, the grand elder of Tianlu Palace took it for granted.

Old Monster Qi replied with a cold harrumph.

"Among the hierons being discovered in the Earth-elements Realm, besides the sacrificial altar of the joss, most of them were clean and solemn, leaving no good items to people..." Saying this, Mountain Lifting Hermit jumped onto the platform on the top of this peak steadily as he continued, "In far-ancient times, these hierons were all majestic and solemn religious sites instead of treasure banks. The treasure bank here is in the palace complex where we've just passed by. It has been robbed by people tens of thousands of years ago. It'd be a surprise if we could find something good here; however, it'd be normal if there was no good thing here. Otherwise, we wouldn't get the key to this hieron only

at such a small cost!"

"Mountain Lifting Hermit, just admit it. Hohohoho, 4 decades ago, Dongfang Haori the head of Dongfang Clan in Lanzhou Province gained a heavenly-level space-teleportation equipment from a hieron's palace. It's said that that space-teleportation equipment is used for lighting an oil lamp, which looked pretty common. Therefore, Dongfang Haori got a good deal. This space-teleportation equipment has been the No. 1 treasure of Dongfang Clan, which is called Ocean-containing Bottle. Mountain Lifting Hermit, dare you to say that you don't want one like that?"

"Over so many years, humans have just found one Brightness Hieron in the Earth-elements Realm. Except for the Brightness Hieron, how could other hieron's temples contain such a space-teleportation equipment which is used for loading oil?" Mountain Lifting Hermit let out a sigh as he said with a faintly frustrated tone. It felt like a man who used to buy lottery tickets heard someone hitting the jackpot while he got nothing at all.

Mountain Lifting Hermit was longing for a space-teleportation equipment very much. He was more familiar with the process that how Dongfang Haori gained his Ocean-Containing Bottle than anyone else. He had seriously studied that.

As the Brightness Hieron needed to maintain its brightness, a space-teleportation equipment was used to light the hieron. People didn't meet such a surprise anymore in other hierons. Even though the far-ancient civilizations were pretty magnificent, people of those ages were not so luxurious that they would use space-teleportation equipment as a common container in each hieron or temple.

There were some advanced silver secret items in the battle god temples; however, this one was not a battle god temple, but an unknown one. Therefore, it could barely contain any silver secret items.

Based on the modern people's study about the far-ancient history and civilizations, a certain far-ancient age was full of religions; in that age, people worshiped and stood in awe of various deities. There might be tens of thousands of religions in that age, leaving the most hieron ruins.

However, few people could precisely distinguish the categories of hieron ruins.

It was a very profound learning about the source of humans and demons. Pundits in this discipline enjoyed a lofty position even among knights.

"Even though there's no space-teleportation equipment, I think the system control hub in the hieron is still well preserved. Why not attempt to join hands to open the gate? If there's a system control hub, we will see whether there are some surprises inside it. If there are, we can share it!" Old Monster Qi proposed after rolling his pupils.

"Old Monster Qi, it seems that you're desiring so much to open this gate!" The grand elder of Tianlu Palace opened his mouth abruptly.

Old Monster Qi uttered two weird shrieks before saying, "I just don't want to go back in vain. After all, we've been here. Why not have a try? Three people are much more powerful than one. It's also possible for a blind cat to meet a dead rat."

Mountain Lifting Hermit and Zhang Anguo exchanged a glance with each other before nodding at the same time.

Earth knights were all confident, powerful ones. If they were not confident about their powers or out of the bit of fluke mind and curiosity, the three earth knights would not come here. No matter what, as they had already come here, they would have a try, even though a heavenly knight could not break such a gate of hieron according to the legends.

'What if the gate was opened by accident? What if there're some surprises inside it?'

With the tentative thought, the three earth knights joined hands with each other and battered the gate of the hieron another 10 minutes by releasing their virtual images of battle qis.

Although the main peak of the Weapons Mountain vibrated under their strikes, when they stopped, the gate was still closed without any damage.

Mountain Lifting Hermit gave up his mind, "There might be nanobeads in the pearls of secret items near the top of the peak. As I have limited time, I will not waste it anymore, see you..."

As he said that, Mountain Lifting Hermit jumped a few times and disappeared in the mist.

"Hahaha, it seems that the legend is right. The gates of hierons could not be opened by sheer animal strength. I will go to somewhere else to find space-teleportation equipment. Old Monster Qi, don't daydream anymore. The Weapons Mountain itself is a mountain of treasures..." The grand elder of Tianlu Palace told Old Monster Qi before leaving here too.

As a result, after watching the triangular relief being composed of three scales on the top of the gate of the hieron for a while with a complex and rapidly changing look, Old Monster Qi could only let out a sigh before leaving...

Nobody knew what Old Monster Qi was thinking about.

...

When muffled thunders constantly drifted from the main peak of the Weapons Mountain, Zhang Tie stopped his footsteps as he looked up at the highest peak...

As it was so loud that even though it was far away from Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie could still feel the faint shocks at his foot like sensing a train passing by while standing not far away from the

railway.

'Are the three earth knights in a combat?'

Zhang Tie was shocked at once.

However, after sensing the locations of the three tracing feathers, Zhang Tie denied this possibility. If earth knights were in combat, they would not stand still even if they were in a close combat.

The tracing feather which entered here in the end also sensed the shocks drifted from the top of the mountain. After being still for a few minutes, the tracing feather accelerated its speed at once...

"Monitoring" the locations of those tracing feathers, Zhang Tie licked his mouth while a light flashed across his eyes.

'F*ck, this journey is becoming more and more interesting...'
Zhang Tie sighed with emotions.

Chapter 946: Enticing the Lions off the Top of the Main Peak

There were a lot of crystals near the top of the Weapons Mountain which contained more pearls of secret items than those below the halfway of the mountain. Therefore, Mountain Lifting Hermit, Zhang Anguo and Old Monster Qi sought for the pearls of secret items which might contain nanobeads and space-teleportation equipment near the top of the mountain.

One important feature of silver secret items was that they could break the physical and space limits of regular equipment such as size and existence form, which was out of commoners' comprehension.

Silver secret items could directly extract elements from the elements realm and form material objects. In commoners' eyes, this was definitely a myth.

By contrast, small space-teleportation equipment such as nanobead could have a large capacity.

As they could sense the existence of elements realm, knights could understand how silver secret items worked; whereas, they could not understand the working principle of space-teleportation equipment such as nanobead.

Was it a mini wormhole or a foldable space which could compress and restore materials in terms of quantum in a specific way?

Nobody knew about it!

People could only guess the working principle of space-teleportation equipment such as nanobead.

Scientists might be interested in the working principle of space-teleportation equipment. However, as for knights in this age, only weapons were most practical.

Although nanobead was a silver secret item, it was much more advanced than common silver secret items; additionally, being different from common silver secret items, nanobeads would not expose their virtual images of secret items at all.

Even earth knights could only have 80% of possibility to gain a nanobead.

As for the remaining 20% of possibility, they should refer to the features of pearls of secret items which might contain nanobeads through long-term learning.

Like how experienced fishermen and pearl catchers living on the sea judged whether the seashells that they had got contained pearls through the surfaces of the seashells, after about 800-900 years of inheritance and practice after the Catastrophe and numerous people's studies and conclusions, knights also worked out a learning on judging the value of pearls of secret item.

This learning was called "The Learning about Secret Items".

"The Learning about Secret Items" was the top secret knowledge and the most influential learning. This learning originated from Taixia Country and led the orientation and popular trend of human knights.

In Taixia Country, if a knight wanted to show off his talent and display his special taste, he had to show off his learning on secret items when he would win a lot of knights' admirations.

Knights, especially male knights didn't have to be handsome in Taixia Country. If an earth knight was ugly in Taixia Country, you could comment his ugly look in front of him and he would not get angry about that; however, if you said he didn't know the learning of secret items, it was equal to calling him an illiterate. It was like calling a rich people nouveau riche. 9 of 10 knights would get angry about that and you would face a very severe result.

Zhang Tie didn't know about the "Learning of Secret Items"

among the knights of Taixia Country. Waii Sub-continent was just a barren land for Taixia Country and no elders of Huaiyuan Palace could show off their learning about secret items. After coming to Taixia Country for a few days, Zhang Tie had been wanted by the supreme court. As Zhang Tie didn't communicate with the knights of Taixia Country especially knights above earth knights too much, he didn't know the popular learning about secret items among the knights of Taixia Country at all.

However, being different from Zhang Tie, Mountain Lifting Hermit, the grand elder of Tianlu Palace and Old Monster Qi had studied hard about the learning of secret items.

All three earth knights had gnosis about the learning of secret items; additionally, they were all a bit reserved.

...

The pearls of secret items were formed by the four elements in the elements realm, which carried a special attribute, namely, the greater the striking strength was on them, the more resistant and harder they would be. It was similar to those materials being invented in scientific means before the Catastrophe which could adjust their physical properties to the changing stress.

Therefore, an earth knight would only open a pearl of secret item 20% faster than a black iron knight. That was to say, if it would take a black iron knight 50 hours to open a pearl of a secret item, it would take an earth knight about 40 hours to open a pearl of a secret item.

The time in the hieron ruins was equally precious to the three earth knights.

...

According to the survey, each commoner who traded stocks would feel that they were a bit better than the average level; knights who studied the learning about secret items thought

almost as same as common stock traders.

In this world, commoners had many secret methods to trade stocks; similarly, knights had many secret methods of selecting pearls of secret items too.

...

After circling around 4-5 pearls of secret items in a cluster of crystals being not far from the top of the mountain for quite a while, Mountain Lifting Hermit compared the sizes, colors, feels and grains of those pearls of secret items. He even patted one after another like selecting a watermelon. Finally, he selected a pearl of a secret item and started to strike it with his battle qi.

The moment he started his work, he had made constant bangs.

...

As for the grand elder of Tianlu Palace, he took out 3 turtlebacks and stood still on the side of each pearl of secret item for a few minutes, during which period, he threw the three turtlebacks onto each pearl of secret item and made judgments according to the numbers of positive sides and negative sides facing upside.

He soon selected one pearl of the secret item too.

...

Old Monster Qi's method was more astonishing. He took out a file and scraped each pearl of secret item forcefully. Closely after that, he tasted a bit powder of each pearl of the secret item and finally selected one.

After occupying a cluster of crystals near the hieron at the top of the mountain respectively, the three earth knights got busy. Unconsciously, they surrounded the hieron.

...

The weird grey cloud of the mist of the demon baron stopped less than 0.7 miles away from the top of the main peak of the mountain

because it had heard the bangs and the specific battle cries of earth knights.

As this was still in the no-fly zone, actually there were just 2 or 3 paths leading to the top of the main peak. After circling around there for a while, the demon baron found that the three paths towards the top of the main peak were all blocked by earth human knights; therefore, it frowned unconsciously.

The demon baron was not afraid of any single earth human knight here; however, the situation became tricky when three earth human knights gathered together within a short distance.

The sharp senses of earth knights could never be matched by black iron knights. Therefore, no matter how much the demon baron excelled at disguising and hiding skills, as long as it was less than 100 m away from an earth knight, it would have a probability of 80% to be noticed by the earth knight; if it was less than 50 m away from an earth knight, it would definitely be noticed.

No matter from which side it would go up the hill, the demon baron would definitely be found by one of the three earth human knights. As long as one earth human knight found it, the other two would find it too. If so, the demon baron's plan would fail for sure.

The core of the demon baron's plan was to enter the main temple of the bloody sacrificial hieron and control the system control hub of the entire hieron. As long as it controlled the system control hub, it would be able to catch all the human knights here and gradually make all of them its bloody sacrifices.

It would take him some time; at least he didn't want to be bothered by people when he entered the main temple.

After looking at the top of the main peak with a fierce eye light for a few seconds, the demon baron turned around and ran towards another direction...

However, the demon baron didn't know that since he entered

this hieron ruins, his trace had been tightly monitored by a human knight.

...

Right then, Zhang Tie who was going up the hill became stunned. When a colorful light flashed by, Zhang Tie heard Lu Zhongming and his wife exclaiming at the same time. Closely after that, the two people started to chase after that colorful light at a faster speed.

After following the couple for a short while, Zhang Tie caught sight of something in the hands of this immortal couple. That thing was radiating a faint glow and was wrapped by them so that they could resist the coldness and reach 6,000 m above the Weapons Mountain.

As few black iron knights could reach here, therefore, there were more chances here than below.

Zhang Tie didn't follow up the couple anymore; instead, he frowned.

The last tracing feather stopped almost 0.7 miles away from the three earth human knights near the top of the main peak of the mountain.

Given the route of the tracing feather, Zhang Tie sensed that its destination was the top of the main peak. However, the three earth human knights blocked its way.

After making a circle below the three earth human knights, the weird cloud of mist didn't find any way to go up the hill.

Therefore, the tracing feather went down the hill; however, it didn't directly come to the foot of the mountain; instead, it rushed downwards like how a snake moved.

Those who had been scouts or soldiers must know that in a certain region such a snake walking route was evidently a tactical search action, which would not ensure you to encounter your

enemy at the fastest speed but could ensure you to find your enemy being nearest to the circle center of your moving route.

'Now that it didn't want to encounter Mountain Lifting Hermit, Zhang Anguo and Old Monster Qi near the top of the main peak, why would it choose to go downhill like a snake? Isn't he afraid of colliding with human knights? What's it thinking about?'

Zhang Tie's mind became as clear as crystal once again...

'He's enticing the three lions off the top of the main peak!'

Chapter 947: Making a Choice

Actually, many critical moments didn't have too many signs before arrival; instead, they came as natural as evening sunglow, thunders on rainy days and silkworms breaking out of cocoons. They always appear silently. When you understood that your choice would determine the fates of you and many people around you, the critical moments had already elapsed, leaving no chance for you to make a choice again.

Zhang Tie didn't know that he was facing such a choice. He only felt that the last tracing feather was very weird and had a strong will to reach the top of the main peak. Although he didn't know the guy's final target.

He had a few options.

First, ignore the weird mist. After all, there were three earth human knights here. Additionally, the new arriver didn't notice the existence of Zhang Tie. If the weird mist caused some trouble, the three earth human knights would handle it for sure.

That man passed the lobby so fast that Zhang Tie almost regarded it as a shadow knight. However, seeing that guy getting cold feet and wandering in front of the three earth human knights, Zhang Tie reaffirmed that that guy was an earth knight. If it was a shadow knight, it could continue to go uphill without caring about the three earth human knights at all.

Now that it could pass through the lobby so fast, it might have some special method.

The first option was selfish for Zhang Tie.

Second, Zhang Tie could make some noises so as to induce the three earth human knights towards the late arriver and destroy the guy's action and plan. It was even possible for them to round up that guy.

After thinking about it for a while seriously, Zhang Tie gave it up.

If Zhang Tie was a selfless sage, he might choose the second option at this moment. Without caring about possible dangers, exposing his trump card and standing on the frontline, he would definitely destroy the plan of the late guy who might harm the interests and safety of the human knights' teams.

However, Zhang Tie was not a sage; he might be a gentleman in some aspects; however, he was never a sage. He was even a wanted criminal who couldn't even expose his real status. Therefore, he didn't need to be a hero at this moment.

Zhang Tie could neither ignore it as it was too selfish nor sacrifice himself for the sake of others.

Therefore, after considering it for a while, Zhang Tie chose the third option while being driven by a great curiosity.

'I will not care about that guy's tactic for the time being; instead, I will reach the top of the mountain and check what that guy wants there. If that guy wants to harm all the human knights here, I will stop it or send a warning to the three earth human knights.'

'By that time, I will have a good excuse—I have an exceptional aptitude; additionally, through cultivating "Fire Dragon Sutra", I have an extremely strong cold-resistance ability. After coming to the top of the main peak, I caught sight of that stranger doing something. Therefore, I released the battle qi signal to attract the three earth human knights there.'

After thinking through it, Zhang Tie started to move.

As he paid attention to the route of the tracing feather, Zhang Tie avoided encountering the tracing feather. At the same time, he rushed all the way towards the top of the main peak.

After more than half an hour, Zhang Tie had reached a bit farther than 0.7 miles away from the three earth human knights near the

top of the main peak. After activating the effect of super hiding skill, he hid himself somewhere.

At that place, Zhang Tie could clearly sense and hear the bangs caused by the three earth human knights.

Zhang Tie then started to monitor the locations of all the tracing feathers in his mind.

The couple of Lu Zhongming stopped at somewhere above 7,000 m. They might have already targeted the pearl of a secret item which might contain that virtual image of the secret item.

The late tracing feather had already declined to about 8,000 m at the hillside and was continuously searching its enemies.

Zhang Tie predicted that the couple would encounter that grey cloud of mist for sure. At this moment, their vertical distance was only about 1,000 m. Of course, the linear distance between them was much farther; however, if the grey cloud of mist continued to search for its enemies in such a twisted way, it would encounter the couple who stood still sooner or later.

Zhang Tie held his breath and waited for the coming battle.

In less than 10 minutes, when the linear distance between the tracing feather and the couple was about 2,000 m, it suddenly stopped its snake walking search tactic. In a split second, it altered its route and rushed towards the couple like how a real python hunted its prey.

Zhang Tie knew that the tracing feather had already found the couple. Perhaps, the couple had made some noise which aroused its attention from 2,000 m away.

Sensing the tracing feather rushing towards the couple, Zhang Tie became intense at once even as an onlooker.

Although Zhang Tie had not seen it by eyes, he had a commanding deja vu about what was happening.

At this moment, Zhang Tie was a bit guilty. If the couple was not far away from him, actually, he wanted to send a warning to the couple; however, he could only sense it at this moment.

Thankfully, the couple's battle strengths were much greater than that of common black iron knights. Additionally, that guy should not just kill people; instead, it wanted to make some noise so as to entice the three earth human knights off the top of the main peak. Therefore, even if they fought each other, the couple would not lose their lives.

That tracing feather approached to 200 m away from the couple at an extremely high speed. After that, it slowed down and circled around them for a short while as it gradually narrowed the distance to 100 m...50 m...

'You still want to raid them as an earth knight? F*ck!'

At this moment, Zhang Tie almost wanted to swear it loudly. He also genuinely sensed the danger of that guy, who didn't mind using despicable means to reach its target.

In a split second, the tracing feather darted as fast as a lightning bolt and reached the side of the couple like a sharp saber.

Zhang Tie opened his eyes and didn't sense that tracing feather anymore; instead, he threw a glance at the location of the couple at the hillside.

Only after one second, a knight's battle qi signal had rushed into the sky...

It was Lu Zhongming's battle qi signal; Lin Huanxi's battle qi signal didn't rise up.

Zhang Tie could faintly hear Lu Zhongming's roar.

When Lu Zhongming's battle qi signal rushed into the sky, the bangs near the top of the main peak stopped at once. Apparently, the three earth human knights found the abnormal situation too.

In less than 10 seconds, Zhang Tie had seen Lu Zhongming's battle qi rushing downhill while the three earth human knights also dashed towards the battle qi signal of Lu Zhongming.

As for earth human knights, after entering the pyramid, they could not ignore the battle beside them; especially after someone of Old Monster Qi's team had been killed a few days ago.

After sensing the three earth human knights going downhill, Zhang Tie instantly sprung up from where he hid and rushed towards the top of the main peak.

Only in a few minutes, Zhang Tie had arrived at the top of the main peak.

Zhang Tie looked around and caught sight of the hall of the hieron at once.

He had not imagined that there was a hall of hieron over there.

'It's closed, does that guy want to enter the hall?'

At the sight of the clusters of crystals not far away from the gate of the hall, Zhang Tie rushed over there and hid in a metallic crystal.

The late tracing feather was close to the tracing feather of Lin Huanxi when they were rushing downhill, closely followed by the tracing feather of Lu Zhongming. The three earth human knights were chasing after Lu Zhongming's battle qi signal from over 10 miles away.

The front tracing feather suddenly sped up and left Lu Zhongming over 500 m away. It seemed that it had been out of Lu Zhongming's sight...

Zhang Tie found the front tracing feather just made a circle at the middle of the mountain where the mist was densest before going up the hill from the other side; however, Lu Zhongming rushed all the way down the hill...

Lu Zhongming lost his target...

Lu Zhongming's battle qi signal rushed all the way downhill together with the three earth human knights...

The tracing feather was both perilous and cunning.

Sensing the tracing feather speeding up towards the top of the main peak, Zhang Tie held his breath at once. At the same time, he started to breathe with the help of the space in Castle of Black Iron like how he breathed in water. Namely, he inhaled the oxygen from Castle of Black Iron and exhaled the carbon dioxide into Castle of Black Iron.

...

In over 10 minutes, the cloud of grey mist had flown onto the top of the main peak...

Finally, the cloud of grey mist dispersed, revealing the original look of the demon baron, who was holding Lin Huanxi. She had been in the coma due to heavy wounds with blood at her mouth corners.

'It's a demon, a real demon, an earth demon knight.' Zhang Tie was shocked inside.

At the sight of the hieron's hall, the demon baron revealed a faintly grim smile as it rushed directly towards the gate.

After coming to the front of the gate, the demon baron dropped Lin Huanxi onto the ground, causing her to spit out another mouth of blood while half of her body had been covered with blood.

The moment her blood touched the ground, it had turned into bloody ice scums which were giving off white vapor. The demon baron stepped onto Lin Huanxi's neck by one foot barbariously and cruelly while paying attention to the grains on the gate conscientiously.

A pair of black battle boots, white neck; a brutal demon and a

mistreated human woman with a painful look. Being stimulated by such a sharp comparison, Zhang Tie's pupils shrunk at once...

If not having activated his super hiding skill, Zhang Tie might have already exposed himself. The senses of knights; especially earth knights were out of commoners' imaginations.

...

The grains on the gate of the hieron's hall was very similar to those on the floor of the lobby where they had passed.

After watching it for half a minute, the demon baron had put one hand on one place of the grains; after a few seconds, it put its hand onto the other place of the grains...

The demon baron constantly pressed over 10 times in 2 minutes. When it pressed the last place, the gate slowly opened without making any noise.

When the demon baron found the gate was opened, it couldn't stand bursting out into laughter because it would soon gain the booty...

He caught the woman's hair and directly dragged her into the hieron.

Zhang Tie didn't know why would this demon have to enter the hieron's hall with such a trick. However, he knew that this guy was definitely going to do something bad.

We should oppose what the enemies supported, support what the enemies opposed and destroy what the enemies wanted to do!

This was always a classic proverb on fighting enemies.

At this moment, Zhang Tie's blood all over started to burn.

'Motherf*cker! You're dead!'

Watching the demon baron dragging Lin Huanxi into the hieron's hall with laughter, Zhang Tie sprung up and rushed towards the gate at the fastest speed and the most agile way.

When he rushed into the gate of the hieron, Zhang Tie caught sight of a giant joss and an altar on the other end of the hall while a crystal ball was silently suspending in the air in the middle of the hall.

The demon had rushed over 20 m away towards the crystal ball.

The moment Zhang Tie entered the gate of the hieron, the demon baron had sensed it. It turned around and caught sight of Zhang Tie.

A dumbfounded look appeared on the demon baron's grim face, closely followed by a brutal yet sportive eye light. The demon baron accelerated towards the crystal ball in a split second while dropping Lin Huanxi onto one side.

Sensing that the demon baron aimed to get that crystal ball, Zhang Tie also rushed towards that crystal ball at his fastest speed...

Chapter 948: The Wrestle Between Zhang Tie and the Demon Baron

Zhang Tie didn't know what was that suspending crystal ball; however, now that the demon was longing for it, Zhang Tie swore to stop it from getting it.

Zhang Tie only had such a thought at this moment.

The earth demon knight was closer to the crystal ball than Zhang Tie.

Given the short-distance explosive speed, Zhang Tie was not superior to the earth knight, although they both moved very fast.

Therefore, when Zhang Tie accelerated, his spear had been split into three parts.

Zhang Tie threw the part with the sharp edge of the spear towards the head of the demon.

The demon baron inclined its head and dodged away from Zhang Tie's strike.

Zhang Tie threw out the middle part of the spear, which was completely a stick.

This stick flew towards the back of the demon baron's heart. After it left Zhang Tie's hand, it caused an air-breaking sound in the hall.

Zhang Tie's strength was great. The spear was also powerful enough. If he was striking a LV 15 battle spirit, he could heavily wound his target for sure; however, although this stick could pose a threat to an earth knight, it was not fatal.

As for the second strike, the demon baron didn't even dodge away; instead, it just allowed the stick to hit its protective battle qi.

The earth knight's protective battle qi undulated a bit; however,

the demon baron didn't slow down at all. Zhang Tie's second strike was defused in this way.

The demon baron revealed a faint sneer as it mumbled, 'Naive, how could you dream to stop me by such average means?'

Knights moved too fast. Even though Zhang Tie launched two strikes in a split second, he didn't influence the demon baron's speed at all. As a result, the demon baron had been less than 20 m away from the suspending crystal ball. It would get it very soon.

The demon baron then stretched out its sharp claw towards the crystal ball.

At this time, Zhang Tie threw out the third part of his spear. Like the earlier two parts, the third part of spear didn't even aim at the demon baron at all as it flew by the demon baron's neck.

The demon baron revealed a ridicule. Compared to the earlier two strikes, the third one had even lost its precision. 'It seems that this black iron human knight has been flurried.'

In a split second, the demon baron was only less than 10 m away from the crystal ball.

At this moment, Zhang Tie roared as he threw out his gold-eaten tri-edged dagger from his waist's side.

Although Zhang Tie couldn't move as fast as the demon baron, his dagger could fly faster than the demon baron.

The dagger flew past the demon baron.

In the demon baron's eyes, it was another abortive throw. Precisely, it was not a throw at all. Because the human knight became flurried in the emergency, he just tossed the weapon towards it without even aiming it.

It was understandable. Knights who didn't excel at throwing weapons could not ensure that they would hit the target; especially in high-speed movements together with their target.

Throwing was a technology.

Zhang Tie's performance just now was almost like a knight who was not proficient in throwing. Therefore, the demon baron didn't doubt Zhang Tie's intention.

The demon baron's hand almost reached the suspending crystal ball.

The demon baron would win!

Therefore, it became ecstatic.

The gold-eaten tri-edged dagger that Zhang Tie threw out was a bit faster than the demon baron's fingers.

After passing the demon baron, the dagger suddenly rotated and changed its moving direction. When the demon baron almost touched the crystal ball, the rotating gold-eaten tri-edged dagger knocked onto the crystal ball, causing the crystal ball to shoot towards Zhang Tie after brushing against the demon baron.

Even earth knight could not respond to it in such a situation.

The demon baron's ecstatic yet grim smile froze at once as it watched the crystal ball flying backward.

"Haha, thanks!" Zhang Tie immediately caught the crystal ball and his dagger which flew back like a boomerang. In laughter, he turned around and intended to rush out of the gate.

What a shame!

Zhang Tie intended to show the white feather in the earlier three times not for striking the demon baron but for benumbing it. In another word, Zhang Tie's earlier three strikes were not aimed at the demon baron's body, but its soul. Zhang Tie intended to fix the mindset of the demon baron.

'Even if I exerted my full effort to launch a strike towards an earth knight, I would not pose any threat to it at all.' Therefore, Zhang Tie altered his tactic.

In the previous three times, his weapons flew along a straight line respectively and gradually lost their precision one after another. In this case, the demon baron could never imagine that Zhang Tie's dagger could hit the crystal ball intelligently like a boomerang and a bird.

It was like training a dog. Each time you threw a piece of bone towards afar, the dog would run towards the bone. When the dog was used to do that, even if you just pretended to throw out something, the dog would also run away.

The demon baron had been trained three times by Zhang Tie unconsciously.

From the time when Zhang Tie rushed into the hieron's hall to when he gained the crystal ball ahead of the demon baron, although it was just a couple of seconds, they had wrestled with each other on intelligence, insight, responsiveness and judgment besides moving speed and battle strength. The entire process was shocking.

The demon baron felt being humiliated as it had not imagined that it could be made fun of by a black iron human knight like a monkey.

The demon baron was driven mad out of indignation. With bloody eyes, it roared before releasing its battle qi the moment it saw Zhang Tie rushing towards the gate of the hieron's hall. At the same time, it shot a punch towards Zhang Tie's back and the gate with two hands at the same time.

Its fierce battle qi then shot out like a black light beam...

Zhang Tie who was rushing towards the gate had to dodge away from this strike. If not, he would suffer a great loss.

An earth knight had an overwhelming advantage over a black iron knight in battle strength.

When he turned around and intended to rush out of the hall,

Zhang Tie completed two things: first, he released his battle qi signal as he wanted to arouse the attention of the three earth knights; second, when he arrived on Lin Huanxi's side, he picked the heavily wounded female knight by his foot; at the same time, he caught hold of Lin Huanxi's waistband and intended to rush out of the hall like catching hold of a chick.

As Zhang Tie was very powerful, one more person's weight didn't slow down his moving speed at all.

The material of this hall was very special. Zhang Tie sensed that his battle qi could not break out of this place. Therefore, he had to jump away so as to avoid being struck by the demon baron.

The demon baron was not an idiot. Like how Zhang Tie tried his best to prevent it from getting the crystal ball, the demon baron also tried its best to keep Zhang Tie inside the hieron's hall.

The demon baron didn't mean to kill Zhang Tie; instead, it just wanted to prevent Zhang Tie from escaping away from the gate of the hieron's hall.

It might not be easy for the demon baron to kill Zhang Tie at least in a short period; however, it was easy for it to prevent Zhang Tie from leaving only by fully blocking the gate through its powerful strikes.

Zhang Tie attempted to rush out of the gate; however, the demon knight kept attacking him. Only in a few minutes, both parties had alternated their positions—the demon baron stood at the gate and blocked the way while Zhang Tie stood in the middle of the hieron's hall. The two knights were watching each other with a cold look with a distance of dozens of meters.

"You're the most powerful black iron human knight that I've ever seen. If you wish to surrender to us, I promise you that you will get everything you want!" The demon baron flickered its eyes in a weird eye light.

"Why don't you surrender to me? I promise to give you enough steam buns everyday!" Zhang Tie smirked as he derided the demon baron undoubtedly.

The demon baron looked solemn at once as it wanted to move one step forward. Zhang Tie raised up the crystal ball and intended to smash it on the ground, "Stop, if you move one more step forward, I will smash it!"

The demon baron stopped immediately.

During the process when he responded to the demon baron's strike, Zhang Tie realized that the demon baron was afraid of breaking the crystal ball like how someone was afraid of breaking the instrument when throwing a weapon towards a rat. Because of this, Zhang Tie could remain safe and sound in front of this earth demon knight a few minutes. The moment Zhang Tie raised up this crystal ball, he indeed frightened the demon baron.

"This crystal ball is the system control hub of this hieron. If it was broken, all the portals of this hieron would be completely closed. Nobody would be able to access it anymore and all of us would die here. If you want to commit suicide, I will accompany you at the cost of all the others..." The demon baron flickered his eyes as it walked towards Zhang Tie. Although it didn't rush towards Zhang Tie in a split second, it slowly approached Zhang Tie.

"Do you think that I dare not do that? My death is worthwhile with the life of an earth demon knight!" As Zhang Tie said that, Zhang Tie threw the crystal ball towards the ground. At the sight of this, the demon knight changed its face as it stopped its footstep immediately. However, the moment the crystal ball left his hand, Zhang Tie caught it at a faster speed. After that, Zhang Tie sneered at the demon baron and said, "Look, no crap, as a selfish guy, even if you were requested to die for the Emperor Xuanyuan, you would never do that. Am I right?"

A brutal eye light flashed across the demon baron's eyes...

When the two knights were in a stalemate, Mountain Lifting Hermit and Old Monster Qi appeared on the top of the Weapons Mountain at the same time...

Chapter 949: An Unexpected Scene

In the Knights' world, there was a proverb that no people could promote to a knight without diligent practice. This proverb fit earth knights more.

When Mountain Lifting Hermit reached the middle part of the mountain, he suddenly became vigilant and felt that something was wrong. Closely after that, Mountain Lifting Hermit made a decision and returned to the top of the main peak after noticing Zhang Anguo.

Zhang Anguo the grand elder of Tianlu Palace was responsible for catching up with Lu Zhongming and figuring out what happened.

Seeing Mountain Lifting Hermit returning to the top of the main peak, Old Monster Qi followed him back immediately.

As Zhang Tie was facing towards the gate, he caught sight of Mountain Lifting Hermit and Old Monster Qi firstly.

When he caught sight of the two human knights, Mountain Lifting Hermit and Old Monster Qi saw the open gate of the hieron's hall and the demon baron at the gate at the same time too. Of course, the demon baron also noticed them.

When two earth human knights encountered an earth demon knight in the hieron ruins, what would they do next?

Undoubtedly, the battle almost broke out in a split second.

Mountain Lifting Hermit released an earth knight-level battle qi signal while a virtual image that a giant embraced a mountain was manifested.

The rising earth knight-level battle qi signal on the top of the main peak told Zhang Anguo that something was happening over there.

Honestly, it was Zhang Tie's first time to see the battle qi signal

of an earth knight. Precisely, it was more like a battle qi tornado than a battle qi smoke. If the battle qi signal of the black iron knight was like the smoke of wolf's dung rushing into the sky, the earth knight's battle qi signal was already a tornado which was thicker, bigger and more eye-catching than battle qi smokes on both scale and look.

The battle qi tornado of Mountain Lifting Hermit was emerald which looked like a green dragon that connected the sky with the ground. The virtual image of Mountain Lifting Hermit rose up in the battle qi tornado while its flickering eyes were watching all the living beings below. It fully manifested the power of an earth knight...

When his battle qi tornado and virtual image appeared at the same time, it indicated that Mountain Lifting Hermit had exerted his full efforts.

Old Monster Qi also released his battle qi tornado and virtual image at the same time.

The demon baron turned around and threw a glance at Zhang Tie while its eyes were full of killing intent and indignation. The demon baron thought that its failure was fully caused by Zhang Tie at such a critical moment. Without Zhang Tie, it had long controlled everything here.

However, now that it could be a demon baron, a demon noble, it indicated that it must be outstanding in some aspect.

At this critical moment, when Zhang Tie thought that the demon baron would break out of the encirclement of the two earth human knights and escape away, the demon baron rushed towards Zhang Tie out of his imagination.

Seeing the demon baron rushing towards him, Zhang Tie was startled at once. Closely after that, he understood the intention of the demon baron.

'This earth demon knight has confirmed that I would never destroy the crystal ball anymore after the two earth human knights appeared.'

'Because my party has been in the advantageous position. It's not necessary for us to sacrifice ourselves by destroying the crystal ball. Therefore, the demon knight won a faint chance to gain the crystal ball.'

As for powerful and confident ones, there was no absolute crisis in this world. Crises and favorable turns were the two sides of a contradiction which could convert into each other at certain moments.

All the powerful ones excelled at seizing such a faint chance in such an adversity.

As he had tided over the most difficult moment, of course, Zhang Tie didn't want to be killed by this demon knight at this moment. Therefore, when the demon knight rushed towards him, he instantly turned around and escaped away. He even directly threw Lin Huanxi at a remote corner of the hall in an agile way.

When he caught Lin Huanxi, before escaping away just now, Zhang Tie had already poured a vial of senior recovery medicament into her mouth at the fastest speed. As Lin Huanxi was in a worse scenario, without taking any recovery medicament, she might have died before being saved. After sensing that Lin Huanxi's vital signs had been stabilized, Zhang Tie hurriedly dropped her onto a safe place. If the demon knight was driven madder and caught Lin Huanxi as a hostage, it would become more tricky.

As the demon knight was besieged by two earth human knights and wanted to rob the crystal ball in Zhang Tie's hand, it didn't have time to care about a woman who was going to die.

When he threw Lin Huanxi, Zhang Tie felt that Lin Huanxi opened her eyes and threw a glance at him with a painful look...

Just now, Lin Huanxi had been in the coma. She could only sense being caught by someone who ran and jumped rapidly and poured a vial of all-purpose medicament into her mouth. She knew that someone was saving her; therefore, she wanted to open her eyes to see who was the savior.

...

Soon after Zhang Tie dropped Lin Huanxi, the demon baron's battle qi strikes had rushed towards Zhang Tie like a huge net. With a roar, Zhang Tie released a punch. The moment their battle qis collided with each other, Zhang Tie had rolled out of the gate with the inertia of the great counterforce. Although his movement was not elegant, it was very practical. As a result, he successfully dodged away from the demon baron's strike...

During the period when he escaped, especially after he promoted to 1 change black iron knight and gained a chance to strengthen his overall strength, Zhang Tie's battle strength had improved greatly. Compared to when he was framed by people and was wounded by Feng Yuelun the cheji General of Yingzhou Province, Zhang Tie had reached new heights in battle strength, reaction speed and strike-resistant capability. At this critical moment, he could bear the strike of an earth demon knight easily.

To be honest, this earth demon knight's battle strength was not weaker than that of Feng Yuelun.

The demon knight closely chased after Zhang Tie while Mountain Lifting Hermit and Old Monster Qi kept chasing after the demon knight. Zhang Tie was gradually involved into the battle qis of the demon knight and dodged here and there. At the same time, the hieron's hall was filled with thunder-like bangs...

The demon knight's body became phantom once again while some clouds of humanoid mist gradually formed the look of the demon knight and joined the battle. Unless those clouds of mist were completely dispersed, the demon knight's original body could

hardly be identified.

After dispersing one cloud of mist, a new cloud of mist would appear out of the void in a mystical way...

It was Zhang Tie's first time to see such a weird secret method of demons. No wonder this demon knight dared rob his crystal ball at such a critical moment.

...

After a few minutes, an unexpected scene happened...

Old Monster Qi who was fighting the demon knight together with Mountain Lifting Hermit suddenly took out a red sharp driller out of the void. Closely after that, he sprung up and drilled it into Mountain Lifting Hermit's back. After that, he smacked onto Zhang Tie from a few meters away who had just dodged away from the demon knight...

Even though Zhang Tie had always been vigilant about Old Monster Qi and felt that this person was given to capricious moods, he had not imagined that Old Monster Qi could betray human knights and struck him at this critical moment. Being attacked by two earth knights, one of whom almost raided him, Zhang Tie instantly spat out a mouth of blood and was sent flying away...

Mountain Lifting Hermit also had not imagined that Old Monster Qi could strike him at this moment; additionally, Old Monster Qi's red sharp driller was very weird which almost broke Mountain Lifting Hermit's protective battle qi in a split second. As a result, Mountain Lifting Hermit didn't have time to respond to it.

When Old Monster Qi broke Mountain Lifting Hermit's protective battle qi with his red sharp driller, the demon baron immediately seized the chance and launched constant strikes onto Mountain Lifting Hermit...

Being struck by two earth knights at the same time, Mountain

Lifting Hermit was sent flying 100 m away and crashed onto one wall of the hieron's hall.

Old Monster Qi sprung up once again and picked the crystal ball which Zhang Tie had dropped off. Almost at the same time, he stayed away from the demon knight before guffawing...

Chapter 950: Life-or-Death Crisis

Old Monster Qi's strike at the critical moment not only heavily wounded Zhang Tie and Mountain Lifting Hermit but also robbed the crystal ball. As a result, the situation in the Hieron's hall reversed in a split second.

The betrayal from team members was always more destructive than enemies. Old Monster Qi proved this law once again.

Watching Old Monster Qi's unimaginable performance, the demon baron stopped its strike; instead, it narrowed its eyes and looked at Old Monster Qi's pleasant face out of curiosity.

...

After bearing the full-strength raid from an earth demon knight in such a short distance, Zhang Tie felt being hit by a bullet train at the speed of hundreds of miles per hour as he spurted out a mouth of blood. At the same time, his bones uttered a crisp sound. Closely after that, he was sent flying away and didn't stop until he rolled over 60 m away, leaving blood all the way there.

Zhang Tie struggled to kneel down with one knee. After that, he spurted out a mouth of blood once again while his guts felt being boiled. It was Zhang Tie's first time to encounter such a sharp pain. Old Monster Qi's battle qi was attached with a special damage function. After he was struck by him, Zhang Tie felt being overwhelmed with pain.

Old Monster Qi's strength was also very great, which would break at least a few bones of common black iron knights; the wounds would be severer if the broken bone stabbed into their guts. However, Zhang Tie was special. As he had taken so many iron-body fruits and had a great strike-resistant capability, Zhang Tie bore the test at the crucial moment. Zhang Tie's bones were not broken; therefore, the secondary damage was avoided. Meanwhile, the damage and erosion caused by Old Monster Qi's

battle qi had been weakened by his defensive ability.

After spurting out blood twice more, Zhang Tie's depression was greatly relieved. Although his wound looked severe, it was actually not that severe.

Zhang Tie just lay on the ground and gradually recovered his battle strength.

Compared to Zhang Tie, Mountain Lifting Hermit's wounds seemed to be severer. After the red sharp driller broke his protective battle qi, it started to drill into Mountain Lifting Hermit's body through the wound; at the same time, it gradually melted inside Mountain Lifting Hermit's body in a weird manner.

Mountain Lifting Hermit picked himself up from the ground with a pale face. After throwing a glance at Old Monster Qi and feeling his physical conditions, Mountain Lifting Hermit changed his face at once. The moment the red sharp driller disappeared in his body, Mountain Lifting Hermit's face had turned dark-purple while the blood vessels in his forehead and neck suddenly bulged like something was swimming inside and was going to break them. How terrifying it was...

Mountain Lifting Hermit started to punch himself; instead of punching Old Monster Qi and the demon baron while gritting his teeth, causing one thunder per punch.

Only by hearing the sound of the punches, onlookers would be shocked.

He was simply committing suicide...

Mountain Lifting Hermit punched his heart, livers, spleen, lungs and kidneys...

Each time he punched himself, he would spit out a mouth of blood.

The blood that Mountain Lifting Hermit spat out was black which contained soft pieces of the red sharp driller which had

disappeared in his body. Those pieces were hard previously; however, when they were spat out, they all turned soft; additionally, they were like a sponge which became swollen after absorbing water and looked disgusting and grim...

After heavily punching his five organs and spitting out the black blood and the swollen pieces of the sharp driller, Mountain Lifting Hermit became dispirited at once as his eye light became bleak. His aura seemed to have been heavily declined. He felt rocky and couldn't stand up until he supported the wall with two hands.

"Five Organs Damaging Driller on Blood and Soul ..." Mountain Lifting Hermit watched Old Monster Qi as his voice became hoarse. He felt to have iron slags in his throat. When he spat out those things, his throat was even wounded.

"Gagagaga...I've spent about 7 years on making this Five Organs Damaging Driller on Blood and Soul, during which period, I used 49 virgin boys' strength of blood and soul and lubricated them day by day with so many rare materials. Mountain Lifting Hermit, you should be satisfied with it..." Old Monster Qi uttered pleasant laughter.

"You're the remnant of Bloody Soul Temple??"

"Is anyone who has mastered the secret method of Bloody Soul Temple destined to be the remnant of Bloody Soul Temple? If so, there are so many remnants of Bloody Soul Temple in the top seven sects in Taixia Country. When the top seven sects in Taixia country besieged the Bloody Soul Temple, whether it was because that they were casting greedy eyes on the secret methods in Bloody Soul Temple or that the Bloody Soul Temple was going to build Immortal Bloody Sea which would rock the foundation of Taixia Country. You know the dirty inside story clearer than me. Pitifully, the top seven sects didn't get the "Supreme Bloody Soul Sutra" Old Monster Qi said with a faint ridicule.

Mountain Lifting Hermit became silent as he wiped the blood

stains off his mouth corners and poured a vial of recovery medicament.

Old Monster Qi just watched Mountain Lifting Hermit with a sneer, "There's no antidote for the Five Organs Damaging Driller on Blood and Soul, even if you spat out the pieces of the driller. Within 5 days, you will not be saved even by immortal pills. What are you struggling for?"

Mountain Lifting Hermit didn't speak. He just gazed at Old Monster Qi with a furious eye light as he slowly adjusted his breathing rhythm. In this case, everyone at present realized that Old Monster would never allow any one of them to leave out of here alive.

"Who're you?" The demon baron asked as it kept looking at Old Monster Qi.

"Actually, we have the same target. However, you and I are on different battle lines. I've not imagined that we could encounter today..." Old Monster Qi told the demon baron as he made a specific hand gesture.

"You are a member of Three-eye Association?" The demon baron asked as a shrewd light flashed across its eyes.

Like a commissioned officer or a common noble in a country who couldn't fully master the intelligence of all the agents on his side that were dispatched to foreign countries, the demon baron wouldn't know the agents of demons in Taixia Country as these intelligence were classified among demons. Only a few people at the top level could touch them. Even if it was a demon baron, it was not qualified to touch them at all.

The demon baron only knew that demons had never stopped their layout in Taixia Country since the last holy war between humans and demons. In other words, demons had never stopped fighting Hua people at all, whether before the Catastrophe or after, by force or not by force in all lines.

"In Taixia Country, Three-eye Association has another appellation, Heavens Reaching Church! I'm an elder of Heavens Reaching Church..." Old Monster Qi said.

"How did you know the secret of the bloody sacrificial temple?" The demon baron pumped instead of being relaxed.

"At the beginning, the secret methods of Bloody Soul Temple were gained from a bloody sacrificial temple in the underground world. I gained some classics of Bloody Soul Temple by accident and knew about this secret and some information about the bloody sacrificial temple. This time, I heard someone finding a hieron in the magma sea while there was the symbol of bloody sacrificial hieron on the key of this pyramid, therefore here I am!"

Old Monster Qi explained it to the demon baron patiently in order to eliminate the possible misunderstanding between them.

The demon baron's eyes flickered as it burst out into laughter and turned tender at once, "If so, hand the crystal ball to me! I know this place better than you."

"Hehehehe...although we're not enemies, we're not that familiar with each other. There's an old saying among Hua people, even if you should not think about harming others, you'd better prevent from being framed by others. I will hold the crystal ball in case of unpleasant things." Old Monster Qi replied hastily, leaving no face to the demon baron at all.

"You dare not follow my order?" The demon baron's qi became dangerous at once.

However, Old Monster Qi still didn't care about it; he even threw a contemptuous glance at the demon baron, "When you reach the level of the prince, it's not late to talk me in that way but you're not that qualified to order me at this moment!"

The two earth knights gazed at each other while Old Monster Qi's qi was not weaker than that of the demon baron at all.

After looking at Old Monster Qi, the crystal ball in his hand and the half-dead people in the hieron's hall, it finally made a compromise, "Alright, do you know how to use it?"

"Hahahaha, so easy. Just close the gate to beat the dogs, in water. We only need to close all the entrances of the hieron, lower the temperature outside this gate below the lowest limit by the system control hub of this crystal ball and restrict the air supply in the hieron, all the human knights will lose their ability to resist in less than 1 day. By then, their lives would be in my hands!" Old Monster Qi said as he suddenly threw a glance at the outside of the gate. Right then, a roar drifted from below the peak and was not far from here. "The old thing of Tianlu Palace is coming, we don't need to fight him; additionally, I don't have the second Five Organs Damaging Driller on Blood and Soul. This old thing is very tricky. Even if we two fought him together, one of us might be killed. Why not deal with him when he becomes a drowned rat?"

The demon baron nodded.

After Old Monster Qi finished his words, he cupped the crystal ball by two hands and closed the gate of this hieron's hall like that it had never been opened at all.

Within the hieron's hall, there were only 5 knights, namely Old Monster Qi, the demon knight who was safe and sound, Zhang Tie, Mountain Lifting Hermit who were heavily wounded and Lin Huanxi who was in the coma. Given the sharp contrast in battle strength, the result seemed to have been fixed...

Chapter 951: A Kid Before A Giant

Lying on the ground, Zhang Tie was not in a coma. He had listened to the dialogue between Old Monster Qi and the demon knight and noticed the situation of Mountain Lifting Hermit...

If it were on a battlefield, a common soldier might survive himself by pretending to be killed. However, in this hieron's hall, under the eyes of an earth demon knight and an earth knight of Three-eye Association, it didn't work by playing dead or being in a coma.

As Zhang Tie's head was facing the gate of the hieron's hall, when the gate was slowly closed under the control of Old Monster Qi and made it impossible for outsiders to enter it, Zhang Tie became depressed. He knew that it was the most dangerous moment that he had ever experienced since he was born.

If he were not that curious, he might have to face a worse situation if he was not here. However, now that he had come here, Zhang Tie didn't regret. If he didn't come here and just stayed somewhere in the Weapons Mountain, the demon knight who held the crystal ball would not let them feel better than now.

The crystal ball was the system control hub of the entire hieron, which was still safe and sound now. As long as it held the crystal ball, it would be able to control the temperature and air supply and flow in all portals in this huge pyramid. This was what Zhang Tie had known after injecting his spiritual energy into the crystal ball just now.

Portals, temperature, air sounded very simple; however, they were fatal to human knights in this pyramid under the control of the crystal ball which worked as the key of a house and the key of the air-conditioner in the house.

Zhang Tie struggled to pick himself up by one knee as he spat out another mouth of blood.

Only after a short while, under the control of the crystal ball in the hand of Old Monster Qi, the temperature in the hieron's hall had recovered 24 degrees Celcius from the icy temperature, arising Zhang Tie's reverence to the dreamlike far-ancient civilization.

Previously, Zhang Tie had heard about a theory about pyramid when in Blackhot City, which was taught by his nature teacher——many huge pyramids were able to disturb and regulate their climate in the partial region. Zhang Tie didn't believe in it until now.

The temperature in the hieron's hall became more comfortable; however, a greater crisis was coming soon, making Zhang Tie extremely flurried.

Zhang Tie threw a glance at the hieron's hall as he asked himself inside, 'Do I need to expose my trump cards?'

Zhang Tie had two trump cards: first, Castle of Black Iron. With Castle of Black Iron, even in such an environment, Zhang Tie could still have a chance to survive; second, the most mysterious and powerful knight's profession that he had promoted to. Since he killed the demon knight, Zhang Tie had not exposed that ability in the public.

However, even with the two trump cards, he might not be able to solve the problem, either.

As for the first trump card, if Zhang Tie used it, he would survive himself; however, he might not be able to save Mountain Lifting Hermit and Lin Huanxi. Additionally, his friends Gong Ziyao, Zhou Shufan and Filton would probably be in danger. Even if Zhang Tie escaped this time, he had to stop using the status of Cui Li from then on. Zhang Tie could imagine what the demons and the Three-eye Association would do when they knew that he had such a marvelous ability. Zhang Tie was afraid that Cui Li would not only face two earth knights by then.

As for the second trump card, even if he used it at his full efforts

now, he could only deal with one of the two earth knights who were safe and sound at this moment. He was not sure for success no matter how sharp was that knight's profession.

'What should I do then?'

'I have to fight at my full efforts!'

Zhang Tie's eyes became decisive as he struggled to pick himself up from the ground...

Old Monster Qi and the demon baron both saw Zhang Tie struggling to stand up; however, they directly ignored him after throwing a glimpse at him; especially Old Monster Qi, who had been shocked that Zhang Tie could still stand up after being struck by him at his full efforts. He didn't believe that such a common black iron knight could pose any threat to him. He despised Zhang Tie when the latter was safe and sound, not to mention this moment.

After sensing that they were destined to win and nobody else could threaten them, Old Monster Qi and the demon baron couldn't wait to negotiate about the division of their "booties"...

"Mountain Lifting Hermit and Cui Li belong to me, that woman belongs to you as you brought her in. As for the knights outside the gate, we go fifty-fifty..." Old Monster Qi suggested.

"You've taken all the benefits. Could you digest so many knights?" The demon baron sneered.

Although they were cooperating with each other, they didn't believe in each other at all. In front of the interests, neither of them would make a compromise.

"My earth chakra has been wounded and not recovered yet; additionally, I've got two secret battle skills which could reach their great perfections through this bloody sacrifice..."

"Now that you need it, I need it too. The earth knight belongs to me. The other two belongs to you. Actually, if you could knock

down that earth knight outside the gate, you could own him too. As for others, we go fifty-fifty!" The demon baron proposed its plan.

"No way!"

"Do you want to try my fist?" The demon baron looked aggressive.

After gazing at the demon baron with narrowed eyes, Old Monster Qi finally made a concession, "When we're going to deal with the elder of Tianlu Palace, you should fight him together with me!"

"That's the deal!"

After reaching an agreement in a few words, they turned around and walked towards their own "target"—the demon baron walked towards Mountain Lifting Hermit while Old Monster Qi walked towards Zhang Tie.

Seeing Old Monster walking towards Zhang Tie, given the safety of the crystal ball, the demon baron reminded Old Monster Qi, "Watch out, this black iron knight is very powerful and tricky. He's much more powerful than common black iron knights. You'd better keep well your crystal ball in case of losing it to this black iron knight! If you could keep him for the time being, I will exchange the other black iron knight for him with you. I will peel him off alive and watch him being sacrificed by me..."

Old Monster Qi burst out into laughter as he replied with a conceited look, "Hahahaha, he's just a black iron knight. I've killed so many black iron knights, including those elites of the top seven sects in Taixia Country. This man is still useful. I will not "sacrifice" him right away; I will release him out of here. This guy has a good human relationship with those people below us. Additionally, except for these people here, nobody else knows that I could control him with my soul-controlling method and have him work for me. When we go collect fish outside there, this guy could

help us a lot at the critical moment!"

As the old saying went, people should never be conceited at any time; even if deities disliked those conceited guys. The moment one became conceited, he would not face any good outcome for sure.

Old Monster Qi didn't know that Zhang Tie instantly changed his mind when he prepared to expose his second trump card after hearing his words.

'Soul-controlling Method?'

Zhang Tie had also mastered it. Additionally, Zhang Tie could trigger this secret method with his extremely strong spiritual energy.

Zhang Tie had reached a mysterious level on cultivating various secret methods of the "Soul-forbidden Skill".

Old Monster Qi was very confident; especially about the various secret methods of Bloody Soul Temple that he had mastered; however, he had not imagined that this muscled man in front of him cultivated and excelled at the same soul-controlling method of Bloody Soul Temple...

What shocked Old Monster Qi more was Zhang Tie's strong spiritual energy...

...

"Go die..."

When Zhang Tie was waiting for Old Monster Qi, Mountain Lifting Hermit sprung up and darted towards the demon baron with an unprecedented killing intent.

Out of the dignity of an earth knight, even though Mountain Lifting Hermit knew that he had no chance to win on the premise of being heavily wounded, he still launched an attack on his own initiative instead of waiting to be killed.

Although he was always silent and distant, Mountain Lifting Hermit's temperament was extremely staunch with moral integrity.

The moment he moved, his wounds had been aggravated in a split second while his eyes, ears, nostrils and mouth spurted out black blood at the same time. At the same time, an exotic, virtual long rainbow appeared in the air...

When the long rainbow crossed the sky, the cold wind was aroused while the dauntless assassin sacrificed himself to strike his enemy!

"I've not imagined that you have awakened the most powerful assassin bloodline among Hua people. Pitifully, if you were not heavily wounded, I might keep far away from your strike; however, your current strike is less than 20% of its full destruction..." The demon baron said casually with a contemptuous look as it easily dodged Mountain Lifting Hermit's strike. Closely after that, he punched Mountain Lifting Hermit and sent him flying away, spraying a lot of blood in the air...

...

"Go die..." Mountain Lifting Hermit sprung up and rushed towards the demon knight once again at the risk of his life...

When Zhuanzhu assassinated Liao the king of State Wu, it was like a comet rushing towards the moon and a meteor flashing by in the sky in daytime; when Yaoli assassinated Qingji, a son of Liao, it was like a falcon landing on a platform; when Niezheng assassinated Jifu the king of State Han, it was like a white light shooting into the sky. As a common earth knight, of course, he should always have a heroic spirit...

...

Watching Mountain Lifting Hermit's heroic movements, Zhang Tie's eyes turned wet...

"You son of b*tch, this father will fight you to death!" Zhang Tie was driven mad as he roared and rushed towards Old Monster Qi. It seemed that he was going to make the final try out of courage and braveness...

...

Only after a few minutes, Old Monster Qi with a sneer had pinched the neck of Zhang Tie, who was like a beast in the cage. Zhang Tie looked pretty miserable as he even lost his ability to struggle. It seemed that Zhang Tie had completely lost his ability to launch a counter-attack.

Catching Zhang Tie's neck, Old Monster Qi drew Zhang Tie to the front of his ugly face as he told the latter, "Look into my eyes..."

It seemed that Old Monster Qi's words were magical. The moment Zhang Tie heard that he became faintly absent-minded at once as he looked at Old Monster Qi's eyes unconsciously.

Two looming ghost flames instantly shot into Zhang Tie's eyes from Old Monster Qi's eyes...

...

Old Monster Qi's soul entered Zhang Tie's mind sea at once...

The moment it entered Zhang Tie's mind sea, Old Monster Qi had been startled. Because he had not seen such a vast mind sea before; additionally, Old Monster Qi had not imagined that Zhang Tie's mind sea was completely a cloud of mist, in which, his soul could not even identify directions.

'I have to locate the soul of Cui Li and control it as soon as possible.'

Old Monster Qi's soul started to fly as fast as light in Zhang Tie's mind sea.

All of a sudden, Zhang Tie's mind sea became dark. Out of curiosity, Old Monster Qi's soul looked up and saw a 300-m high

golden giant behind him. Old Monster Qi's height only reached the giant's knees.

Old Monster Qi's soul instantly became a 3-year old kid in front of a furious king kong.

'Wait, this guy doesn't look as same as Cui Li...'

Old Monster Qi had a doubt...

However, he could not get any answer anymore.

The familiar giant with a strange look sneered as he raised up one foot and stomped Old Monster Qi's soul into pieces with the latter's shriek and rapid kicks...

Old Monster Qi's soul was devoured by Zhang Tie's immediately in the fiercest way...

...

At this moment, Old Monster Qi who caught Zhang Tie's neck suddenly quivered all over as his nostrils, ears, eyes and mouth spurted out blood at the same time. Meanwhile, he looked like an idiot while his hand which was catching Zhang Tie's neck lost its strength and hung down at once...

After a solemn eye light flashed by, Zhang Tie picked the gold-eaten tri-edged dagger by his foot and held it by hand. Closely after that, he wove his dagger and cut off Old Monster Qi's head, sending his head flying out while a blood beam spurted out of Old Monster Qi's neck...

Zhang Tie put his dagger away as fast as a lightning bolt. After that, he caught Old Monster Qi's head by one hand and the crystal ball that had floated up from the latter's hand by the other hand. At the same time, he roared, "Stop..."

...

Right then, the demon baron put Mountain Lifting Hermit under his foot.

Hearing Zhang Tie's roar, the demon baron turned around and caught sight of Old Monster Qi's beheaded body lying on the ground, the head in Zhang Tie's one hand and the crystal ball in Zhang Tie's other hand.

Through Old Monster Qi's hand, the crystal ball returned to Zhang Tie's hand.

Although Old Monster Qi died, was Zhang Tie still alive? Nobody knew what happened at that moment except for Zhang Tie. Though Old Monster Qi seemed to have wasted some time in Zhang Tie's mind sea, actually, his soul had just searched in Zhang Tie's mind sea for less than 0.5 seconds...

Chapter 952: Spare the Rat to Save the Dish

After taking the crystal ball, Zhang Tie injected his spiritual energy into it right away. He sensed that Old Monster Qi had already closed all the portals in the hieron while the temperature inside the hieron was declined as low as that on the top of the Weapons Mountain. At the same time, the air was growing thinner...

Facing such abrupt changes, all the knights outside the gate must have been flurried.

Through the locations of his tracing feathers, Zhang Tie could sense that Zhang Anguo the grand elder of Tianlu Palace and Lu Zhongming were both at the entrance of the gate of this hieron's hall.

Zhang Tie immediately controlled the crystal ball to recover the temperature and air supply outside the hieron's hall. Closely after that, he opened the gate of the hieron.

When the gate of hieron's hall was opened, Zhang Anguo and Lu Zhongming rushed inside at once. Almost at the same time, the demon baron saw another earth human knight rushing in. It immediately caught Mountain Lifting Hermit's neck and flashed back to Lin Huanxi's side while stepping on her neck. Closely after that, the demon baron leaned against the inner wall and observed the situation inside the hieron's hall with gleaming eyes.

At this moment, Zhang Anguo and Lu Zhongming were actually shocked most.

What happened in the hieron's hall was too shocking and weird for the two knights who had just entered it. They had not imagined this scene when they entered the hieron's hall.

Old Monster Qi was dead!

His beheaded corpse was lying in front of Zhang Tie. As Zhang

Tie was holding his head and a crystal ball, it seemed that Old Monster Qi had been beheaded by Zhang Tie. Although Zhang Tie was also wounded, at least he was still standing there.

Besides, a demon baron was in the hieron's hall!

Mountain Lifting Hermit and Lin Huanxi were in the hands of the demon.

When Zhang Anguo rushed back onto the top of the main peak, he didn't see Mountain Lifting Hermit and Old Monster Qi. He only saw some blood stains outside the gate of the hieron's hall. Later on, the air supply and temperature inside the pyramid started to change. After receiving the messages from all the other knights of Tianlu Palace across the Weapons Mountain by remote-sensing crystal, Zhang Anguo changed his face greatly. He guessed that someone must have entered the hieron's hall and controlled the system hub of this hieron. However, no matter what, the grand elder of Tianlu Palace didn't imagine about such a scene inside the hieron's hall.

Even the one with the richest imagination could not imagine what happened inside.

Zhang Anguo could only ensure one thing, namely, a bloody battle had just happened in the hieron's hall.

"Let go Huanxi..." Watching his wife being stepped under the foot of the demon baron out of consciousness, Lu Zhongming who used to be genial turned his eyes fiery at once as he intended to rush towards the demon baron.

The demon baron faintly increased his foot's stress, waking up Lin Huanxi and causing her to groan painfully.

Lu Zhongming stopped his footstep at once.

"Anyone who dares rush over here, the two people will die together with me!" The demon baron roared with a vicious look.

The demon baron was also in a very dangerous situation.

After the crystal ball returned to Zhang Tie's hand, Zhang Tie had controlled the system control hub of the entire hieron.

One earth human knight was safe and sound. Besides him, there were 23 black iron human knights here, who could compose at least eight 3-in-1 formations.

If Zhang Tie closed all the portals of the hieron, the demon baron was destined to be killed here facing the consecutive strikes of an earth human knight and over 20 black iron human knights.

Additionally, the demon knight didn't know the cause of death of Old Monster Qi. Although it was dealing with Mountain Lifting Hermit just now, it spared a bit spiritual energy to observe the battle between Old Monster Qi and Zhang Tie.

In the demon baron's eyes, Old Monster Qi's battle strength was overwhelming. Only in a few minutes, Old Monster Qi had defeated the tough man called Cui Li and caught him like catching a chick. The tough guy called Cui Li had already lost his ability to resist. It seemed that everything was in control.

However, in a couple of seconds, Old Monster Qi died while his head was in Cui Li's hand.

Even a performance would have premonitions and transitions; there would be a thunder or at least a few dark clouds before the rain. However, what happened in the hieron's hall didn't have any transition or premonition before Old Monster Qi who was destined to win was beheaded.

An earth human knight died when he grasped the neck of a black iron human knight who had lost his ability to resist...all of a sudden?

How did Cui Li do it?

The demon baron didn't know why. Therefore, it became scared of Zhang Tie.

When Old Monster Qi was beheaded, he was doing two things:

first his fingers were pinching Zhang Tie's neck for a long time; second, Old Monster Qi was applying his secret method of Bloody Soul Temple.

After a temporary and rigorous logistic analysis, the demon baron guessed that Old Monster Qi's death was probably related to the two things.

'This black iron knight called Cui Li might have some terrifying rank poison or dangerous items. When I chased after him so long just now, I was safe and sound. However, when Old Monster Qi took the wind, the moment he touched that black iron knight's neck, he was dead, it's too strange; otherwise, something might have happened to Old Monster Qi's secret method of Bloody Soul Temple, sparing a chance to the black iron knight...'

What a demon noble! The demon baron could not be matched by common earth demon knights on both intelligence and battle strength. Through a brief analysis, although the demon baron didn't figure out the truth, he had almost hit it.

...

"Old Monster Qi was a member of the Three-eye Association of demons...summon the others...to kill the demon knight..."

Although being controlled by the demon knight, Mountain Lifting Hermit immediately plucked his courage to roar at the sight of the grand elder of Tianlu Palace.

The moment Mountain Lifting Hermit roared, with a cracking sound, his entire hand had been broken by the demon knight. After uttering a muffled harrumph, he spurted out a mouth of blood once again.

Because of Mountain Lifting Hermit's words, the grand elder of Tianlu Palace determined who was the true enemy in the shortest period. To be honest, watching Zhang Tie holding the head of Old Monster Qi, the two people were not sure whether Zhang Tie was

the enemy or the friend. Now, their target became the demon knight.

As to why Zhang Tie killed Old Monster Qi and why Mountain Lifting Hermit was severely wounded and fell in the hand of the demon knight, although they were curious about these questions, it was not the right moment for them to discuss that. What counted most was to deal with this demon knight in front of them.

After rushing inside the hieron's hall, Zhang Anguo faced Zhang Tie and the demon knight at the same time. Now, he moved his footsteps and faced the demon knight with an extremely solemn look while releasing his battle qi.

Although the demon baron was the last one who wanted to be besieged by all the human knights, it had to glare at Zhang Anguo fiercely as it said, "As Hua people usually say, even if I die here, I will have some of you die with me. I've got 2 sacrifices, who would like to be the 3rd?"

...

After killing Old Monster Qi, Zhang Tie had been pretty silent.

Zhang Tie became silent because of regret. He felt the elapsing energy of Old Monster Qi's earth chakra; however, he could not absorb it at this moment. Just now, he could only choose one between killing Old Monster Qi rapidly or slowly absorbing his earth chakra. Therefore, he chose the first one.

'This is a complete earth chakra of an earth knight. Such a chakra would contain very abundant earth elements. It's a rare tonic. After absorbing it, I might promote to 2 changes black iron knight.'

Zhang Tie sighed inside.

Being silent, Zhang Tie's mind became as clear as crystal once again. He started to recall each detail and each word since he encountered the demon baron.

Finally, what impressed Zhang Tie most was the bargain between

Old Monster Qi and the demon knight.

—My earth chakra has been wounded and is not recovered yet. Additionally, I've got two secret battle skills which could reach complete perfections through this bloody sacrifice...

—Bloody sacrifice...recovery...bloody sacrifice...chakra recovery...

Zhang Tie's brain cells and nerves all over became extremely spirited due to the two phrases "bloody sacrifice" and "chakra recovery".

The more spirited he was inside, the calmer Zhang Tie would look.

Zhang Tie threw a deep look at the demon baron...

At this moment, Zhang Tie's eyes were not full of animosity anymore.

Of course, the others could never read Zhang Tie's eyes.

As a Hua proverb went, when you wanted something; you had to gift it to others in advance.

'F*ck, no matter what, I will have a try.'

"You can leave!" Zhang Tie opened his mouth towards the demon baron, which aroused all the others' attention. Zhang Tie just beheld the demon baron as he dropped off Old Monster Qi's head whose eyes were still open, "Leave Mountain Lifting Hermit and Lin Huanxi here, we will not find you trouble and allow you to leave the pyramid. As one person has been killed, it's unnecessary for us to fight to death in this place. You will never defeat us; if we want to kill you, we have to pay at least 2 human lives. How about giving a concession to each other. You let them off, we let you go. After leaving the pyramid, we can fight whenever we want..."

Chapter 953: Divine Dominator

The moment Zhang Tie opened his mouth, the two parties who were confronting in the hieron's hall, including severely wounded Mountain Lifting Hermit moved their eyes onto Zhang Tie immediately.

After giving a concession to each other, the conflict would be resolved for the time being. When they exited the pyramid, they could fight to death whenever they wanted!

Honestly, Zhang Tie's solution was very practical and had had all the parties' interests into consideration.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, the demon baron flickered his eyes. Nobody knew what he was thinking about.

Lu Zhongming threw a glance at Zhang Tie out of gratitude. His wife Lin Huanxi was a hostage of the demon knight. As long as the two parties started a fierce combat, his wife would be killed right away. As the couple was affectionate with each other, how could Lu Zhongming stand watching his wife being killed in front of him? Therefore, Lu Zhongming agreed with Zhang Tie's proposal very much.

Zhang Anguo the grand elder of Tianlu Palace became faintly shocked as he had not imagined that "Cui Li" who looked rude could propose such a wise solution.

Mountain Lifting Hermit didn't speak; he only felt warm inside after listening to Zhang Tie's proposal. He knew that he was not deceived in Zhang Tie.

Mountain Lifting Hermit had a firm standpoint on major issues; additionally, he always faced the music. Neither was he afraid of death. However, nobody would like to be a martyr if he could survive himself. Although Mountain Lifting Hermit was not afraid of death, he didn't want to die at this moment. It would be too

pitiful if he was killed by an earth demon knight at this moment. If not being raided by Old Monster Qi, Mountain Lifting Hermit wouldn't be in such an embarrassed state.

"You're just a black iron knight. Do your words count? Don't forget that there's one more earth knight on your side." The demon baron responded.

The demon baron would still alienate Zhang Tie from Zhang Anguo and break the unity between human knights at this moment.

A shrewd eye light flashed across Zhang Tie's eyes as he realized that this demon knight was still unwilling to leave without any achievement at this moment.

This was what Zhang Tie wanted.

Those who flaunted one's superiority mentally would definitely die out of their mental superiority; those who depended on their force would definitely die out of their force.

"Cui Li's opinion is my opinion. Given the current situation, we should give a concession to each other instead of fighting to death here!"

Before Zhang Tie replied, the grand elder of Tianlu Palace had opened his mouth. The grand elder of Tianlu Palace was very clear about the demon knight's intention. Therefore, he didn't spare any chance to it.

The demon baron rolled its eyes as it said, "Well, I can leave the hieron. However, before I leave this hieron, I have to take the two people as my shield in case of your regret. When I exit the gate of the pyramid, I will let them go for sure!"

"I'm afraid that the moment you walk out of the gate of the pyramid, you will kill the hostages. Do you really think that we're that stupid?" Zhang Tie sneered.

In the current situation, the demon knight could kill Mountain

Lifting Hermit and Lin Huanxi in a split second. If the demon knight left with Mountain Lifting Hermit and Lin Huanxi as hostages, Zhang Tie was sure that the demon knight would break its words and kill the two hostages the moment it strode out of the gate of the pyramid. Would demons keep their words? No kidding!

'You let Mountain Lifting Hermit and Lin Huanxi go now, we promise you that we will let you go safe and sound!" Zhang Anguo said in a muffled voice.

"Hahaha, do you think that I will entrust my life to your creditability?" The demon knight sneered as it continued, "I'm afraid that the moment the two hostages are out of my control, you will join hands to kill me!"

"We won't do it!"

"Hehe, according to the learning of military tactics of you Hua people, military tactics depend on changes. Now that we're in hostile state, how do I believe you?"

"You can let go that woman first!"

"No dream. This woman is not common. She's a knight. Do you think I'm stupid?" The demon baron sneered.

...

The two parties reached an impasse on whether to let go the two hostages first. In this situation, any party which gave a compromise would indicate that the party lost its initiative completely. Due to the deep-rooted mistrust between both parties, they couldn't give any concession to each other on this point.

After the grand elder of Tianlu Palace disputed with the demon baron for a short while, they could not reach any constructive agreement at all.

When they were arguing with each other, Zhang Tie frowned purposefully as if he was contemplating about it. After finding that Zhang Anguo and the demon knight didn't speak anymore, Zhang

Tie suggested in a hesitant tone, "I've got a method...we can exchange hostages. You let go Mountain Lifting Hermit and Lin Huanxi, we will leave a person to you with the crystal ball in his hand in the hieron's hall. 3 days later, when all the other human knights completely leave the pyramid, you two could leave here at the same time. In this way, no party would be concerned about being screwed by the opponent. The crystal ball in my hand could deliver this order to close the gate of this hieron's hall 3 days..."

After hearing Zhang Tie's suggestion, Zhang Anguo's eyes gleamed at once, "Good, I like this method. I will take the crystal ball and stay 3 days with you in the hieron's hall. We will leave 3 days later. After all, we're both earth knights and could balance each other!"

The demon baron radiated a blue eye light, "Do you think it's still called exchanging hostages if you stay with me? If you stay with me alone, although we cannot hurt each other; however, with the crystal ball in your hand, you could control the hub of the hieron. Under this circumstance, you're fully in the advantageous position. How could I defeat you? If you want to exchange the hostages, just let the guy with crystal ball stay with me in the hieron's hall!"

The demon baron pointed at Zhang Tie, revealing his malicious intention.

"No way!" Zhang Anguo denied it right away. 'Are you kidding me? Leave a black iron human knight with a demon earth knight? Isn't it sending a sheep into a lion's mouth? It's too dangerous.'

"You can leave another person; however, he should not be an earth knight; additionally, you should leave the crystal ball which's used to control the hub of the hieron!" The demon baron's blue eye light jumped a bit as it revealed a casual sneer.

"I will stay with you!" Zhang Tie said heroically.

"But..."

"He cannot defeat me in a short period! Additionally, I could protect myself..." Zhang Tie pointed at the corpse of Old Monster Qi as he said generously, "I will set the procedure in the crystal ball. In 3 days, the gate of the entrance of the pyramid will open while the temperature outside this hieron's gate will remain normal. If it doesn't work, I will smash the crystal ball and commit suicide together with him. Now that I propose this suggestion, I will bell the cat even if it's dangerous. It's not unfair for another one to do that."

In Zhang Anguo's and Lu Zhongming's eyes, Zhang Tie's image became much more brilliant in a split second.

Such a righteous people who could rush into the battlefield and spare living chance to others at the critical moment would win others' respect wherever he was.

This was the extremely righteous deed of a gentleman. Although there were thousands of enemies in front of him, he would still fight them dauntlessly!

Mountain Lifting Hermit moved his lips silently as he threw a deep glance at Zhang Tie...

This method could only be reluctantly accepted by both parties, at least apparently.

The demon baron was very careful. He proposed further requests on the details about exchanging hostages. It told Zhang Anguo and Lu Zhongming to leave the Weapons Mountain and release their battle qi signals at the foot of the mountain so as to indicate that they were not hiding nearby the top of the main peak of the mountain. It even told Zhang Tie to close half of the gate of this hieron's hall and fully close it after the two hostages left. Within 1 minute, even if the two severely wounded hostages were out of the gate of this hieron's hall, they would still be in its sight on the top of the main peak of the Weapons Mountain; additionally, Zhang Anguo would not come back in 1 minute. Before the hieron's gate

was completely closed, the two hostages were actually still in its hand.

The demon baron was really considerate, leaving no chance for human knights to reverse the situation.

"Now that I could enter this hieron alone, of course, I know this better than you. I could identify what orders you've sent from the grains on the gate of the hieron's hall. Therefore, you'd better not play tricks in front of me in case of troubles!" The demon baron warned Zhang Tie.

...

After making a decision, Zhang Anguo and Lu Zhongming left the hieron's hall.

Before leaving there, Lu Zhongming threw an unwilling glance at Lin Huanxi. Finally, he gritted his teeth and rushed down the mountain together with Zhang Anguo.

The temperature and air supply outside the hieron's hall had been recovered to the normal state by Zhang Tie. Therefore, it took Zhang Tie and the demon baron less than 5 minutes to see the rising battle qi tornado and battle qi smoke at the foot of the Weapons Mountain at the same time.

After seeing the battle qi tornado and the battle qi smoke, the demon baron turned around and told Zhang Tie, "It's your turn!"

"I've just thought about something. If you fetch demon knights here to revenge my partners or ambush outside the pyramid by remote-sensing crystal in the 3 days, won't my partners be in danger? Now that I've expressed my sincerity, it's also your turn to express your sincerity. Throw your remote-sensing crystal to me. Don't tell me that you as an earth demon knight don't even have a remote-sensing crystal with you!" Zhang Tie slowly said.

The demon baron threw a glance at Zhang Tie. Closely after that, it took out its remote-sensing crystal and threw it to Zhang Tie.

After taking that remote-sensing crystal, Zhang Tie crumbed it right away, "The ring on your left index finger seems to be a remote-sensing device too. Come on, throw it to me! With the two remote-sensing crystals, you could contact the demon's strength in the first abyss and your clan members! I was told that powerful clans also ruled everything among demons. You must be from a big clan."

The demon baron's eyes flickered as it had not imagined that Zhang Tie had such sharp eyes. It then silently picked off the remote-sensing ring and threw it to Zhang Tie.

At such a critical moment, two remote-sensing devices were nothing important at all.

Zhang Tie shattered the remote-sensing crystal in the finger ring into pieces by his battle qi.

"Oh, you earth demon knight should have space-teleportation equipment...hmm..I find the ring on your right index finger...look like a space-teleportation ring being made of a nanobead. You'd better throw it to me, I will keep it three days for you!"

The demon baron was driven infuriated at once, "Don't be too excessive!"

Zhang Tie let out a sigh, "You're an earth knight; I'm a black iron knight. You're trickiest and more powerful than me. As we need to stay here 3 days, if there was anything sharp in your space-teleportation ring, I would be screwed many times in 3 days. If you didn't give me the space-teleportation ring, I would always be worried that you would take something out of the space-teleportation ring. The moment I became worried, I would easily become nervous spiritually. If I suddenly overreacted, I might break the crystal ball. If so, you would have to die together with me. Therefore you'd better give me your finger ring now. No matter what, I will not escape away from you. I cannot even defeat you after 3 days. It's not worthwhile for me to break my promise

only for a space-teleportation device, right?"

Hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, the demon baron changed its look. After considering it for a few seconds, it picked off the space-teleportation ring and threw it to Zhang Tie.

After taking the finger ring, Zhang Tie put it on his own finger pleasantly.

At the same time, Zhang Tie was shocked inside, 'This demon knight would never pick off the space-teleportation ring and throw it to me if it couldn't guarantee that I wouldn't leave this hieron's hall. The demon knight is making me drop my guard in case I do something in a desperate way.'

"It's your turn..." The demon baron said in a muffled voice.

"No problem, this Cui is always a man of honor..."

The moment Zhang Tie finished his words, half of the gate had been closed. The demon baron then came to the front of the gate with Mountain Lifting Hermit and Lin Huanxi in his hands. After observing the flowing grains on the gate of hieron's hall for half a minute, it nodded. Closely after that, it moved one step back and allowed Mountain Lifting Hermit and Lin Huanxi to leave the hieron's hall while supporting each other with their hands.

Nobody would play any trick at this moment. Both Zhang Tie and the demon baron were seemingly waiting for the gate of the hieron's hall to close once again.

In less than 1 minute, the gate of the hieron's hall was closed while Mountain Lifting Hermit and Lin Huanxi fully disappeared in front of Zhang Tie and the demon baron.

The gate of this hieron's hall would not open until 3 days later.

The demon baron then turned around. After that, Zhang Tie and the demon baron gazed at each other for about 2 minutes.

In such a silence, the atmosphere in the hieron's hall became

weird abruptly.

"Ahem...ahem..." Zhang Tie coughed twice while his echo reverberated in the open hieron's hall, "In the following 3 days, we'd better take the central axis of this hieron's hall as a demarcation line. You don't come to my side, and I won't go to your side. You will be in the front part of the hall and I will be in the latter part of the hall. If you pass the central axis of the hall and want to kill me, as I cannot defeat you, I could only shatter the crystal ball and perish together with you!"

When the gate of the hall was closed, Zhang Tie had moved back to the rear of the hall, who was definitely over 100 m away from the demon baron.

The demon baron's green eye light jumped as it narrowed its eyes and stared at Zhang Tie for a second. It then nodded and walked to the wall near the gate silently. Sitting with crossed legs against the wall, it started to recover its physical strength.

Zhang Tie stood far away from the demon baron. As he watched the demon baron, he stroked the crystal ball in his hand. Of course, nobody knew what Zhang Tie was thinking about.

After a few minutes, the demon baron who was recovering its physical strength suddenly felt that the temperature in the hieron's hall had declined to a terrifying, super low state, which was absolutely below zero 100 degrees Celcius. As a result, the moisture in the air froze in a split second. The demon baron instantly became stiff while its body was covered with a layer of white frost.

"What are you doing?" The demon baron was driven infuriated as it instantly sprung up and released its protective battle qi, shattering the frost into pieces at once.

"It's good ... to be cold, it's good ... to be cold..." Zhang Tie stammered as he also released his protective battle qi, "If it's cold, I'll be clear-minded and spirited and wouldn't be easily screwed by

you! Even I can bear it, don't tell me you can't!"

Watching Zhang Tie withstanding the super low temperature, the demon baron didn't speak any more; instead, he sat down once again.

The demon baron didn't believe that it, as an earth demon knight, couldn't match a black iron human knight in cold-resistance ability.

'Let's see, when you almost use up your battle qi, I will deal with you!' The demon baron felt thrilled as it swore Zhang Tie inside, 'You're seeking for death.'

However, it didn't know that Zhang Tie's battle qi was endless. Additionally, after setting free so many sandscale fish, Zhang Tie's cold-resistance ability was many times greater than that of the demon baron. Therefore, Zhang Tie was definitely more adapted to cold than the demon baron.

...

1 hour...

2 hours...

...

10 hours...

11 hours...

Half a day flew past...

The demon baron gritted its teeth and withstood it...

Zhang Tie's protective battle qi became ramshackle a few times. However, he stabilized his protective battle qi each time. The ramshackle protective battle qi stimulated the demon baron to wait a bit longer each time it wanted to launch its attack towards Zhang Tie.

After one day, Zhang Tie's protective battle qi became thinner

and thinner. However, he could still doggedly withstand such a low temperature. Finally, the demon baron realized that something was not right.

'Even I couldn't bear the great consumption of protective battle qi in such an extreme environment, how could this black iron human knight stand for so long?'

It seemed that Zhang Tie was also a bit fatigued as he was leaning against the wall far away from the demon baron with his eyes half closed.

The demon baron finally determined to launch an attack.

Sitting there, the demon baron's eyes were also half closed. However, it always threw a glimpse at Zhang Tie stealthily. Gradually, the demon baron started to radiate some invisible mist, which was almost transparent. The cloud of mist slowly floated towards the back of Zhang Tie along the floor and against the wall like creeping worms. In a few minutes, the cloud of mist gradually formed a figure.

The misty figure silently moved towards Zhang Tie from his back. When it was a few meters away from Zhang Tie, the demon baron instantly opened his eyes while that cloud of mist darted towards Zhang Tie as fast as a lightning bolt. Its target was the crystal ball beside Zhang Tie.

The demon baron widely opened its eyes. It even thought that it was going to succeed right away. Because that misty figure was only one step away from Zhang Tie. It seemed to reach it with its hand immediately.

It's going to reverse the situation once again. As long as it got the crystal ball, given its knowledge about the bloody sacrifice hieron, all the human knights outside the gate of this hall would definitely become its sacrifices.

The secrets of the bloody sacrificial hieron could not be well

understood by a person who had just got the crystal ball for less than an hour. Even though the order had been sent from the crystal ball, it could still be altered. The secret of this alteration was the bloody sacrifice.

'Human is still a bit naive.'

The demon baron revealed a faint, pleasant smile.

All of a sudden, something flickered in front of the demon baron's eyes while the misty figure behind Zhang Tie was shattered into pieces and disappeared completely...

It happened so fast that even an earth knight's eyes couldn't catch what happened. Before the demon baron figured out what happened, its incarnation had been completely dissipated.

However, Zhang Tie didn't even move at all.

Until that misty figure disappeared did Zhang Tie lazily open his eyes and stretch out his limbs and stand up. He then revealed a sneer towards the demon knight, "You're really patient. You finally launched an attack after bearing such a super low temperature for a day, by the way, I've almost recovered myself. Do you like it?"

"Go die..." Now that it had determined to launch an attack, the demon baron didn't waste time any longer. It instantly sprung up and darted towards Zhang Tie as fast as a lightning bolt.

Zhang Tie just watched the demon baron with a faint sneer...

The demon baron moved so fast with such a great momentum...

However, due to a high speed and great momentum, the demon baron suffered a bigger loss in a split second...

In high-speed movement, the demon baron was blocked by some invisible blades in the air. In a split second, the demon baron rushed into an invisible trap decisively. Due to sharp frictions, the demon baron's protective battle qi was broken. Before Zhang Tie moved, the demon baron had suffered over 10 fine wounds on its

neck and body, flowing out blood at once...

The demon baron was greatly startled as it rapidly moved back to the original place. It then gazed at Zhang Tie like looking at a ghost.

'What happened? Why were there invisible blades in the air?'

The demon baron widely opened its eyes with a flurried look. As it saw nothing in front of Zhang Tie, if not the sharp pains caused by its bloody wounds, it almost thought that it was an illusion...

Without its protective battle qi, based on its high speed and momentum, the invisible, dense sharp blades in the air could cut its body into pieces in a split second.

In order to verify its judgment, the demon baron kicked off Old Monster Qi's beheaded body and had it pass by that invisible yet fatal space.

As it had predicted, Old Monster Qi's corpse instantly split up like a piece of soya bean being cut off by steel wires when it flew through that space.

The demon baron took in a deep breath, 'What a terrifying secret method! How could such an invisible lethal trap be set in the air silently?'

The demon baron watched Zhang Tie with its eyes widely opened. It wanted to say something; however, it finally became silent as it saw the sharp spearhead which had been lying on the ground floating up silently in the air and targeting at it like a ballista being ready to fire...

In the entire process, Zhang Tie didn't move at all; instead, he just stood aside and looked at the demon baron with a distant look.

In a split second, a term that made the demon baron tremble all over occurred to the demon baron's mind, causing it to shriek with a flurried look, "Divine Dominator..."

Divine Dominator was the top knight, the legendary figure among knights. Even the demon baron had not seen a divine dominator until today. Previously, the demon baron thought that the so-called divine dominator might only be a legendary figure.

It had not imagined seeing a real human-divine dominator today.

At this moment, the demon baron was not thinking about how to survive itself. It even forgot about those human knights in the hieron. It only thought about passing out the message of the human-divine dominator. A high-rank divine dominator would be the disaster of all the demons, including demon knights. Such a person should be killed at any cost.

In the same rank, a divine dominator could dominate everything like the God as an unrivaled existence. It was the most mysterious and terrifying profession.

According to the legend, the divine dominator's spiritual energy had reached a fantastic realm and could convert into material objects and casually manipulate everything.

The invisible blades in the air which had wounded the demon baron's body should be composed of the divine dominator's spiritual energy.

The demon baron wanted to take out its remote-sensing crystals; however, it remembered that it had long given them to Zhang Tie, which had been destroyed in front of it.

'Had he...'

"Now you know why I confiscated your remote-sensing crystals. If you released the message to the outside, I would have to escape once again!" Zhang Tie revealed a sneer...

The demon baron noticed the words "once again". As for why "once again" was used by Zhang Tie, it might never find the answer...

Because Zhang Tie's strikes had arrived.

Zhang Tie was standing in the distance as if he was watching a performance with his arms crossed. The spearhead of the abyss battle spear had immediately flown over 100 m in the air and stabbed into the demon baron's protective battle qi. It compressed and rubbed against the demon baron's protective battle qi violently...

The demon baron's protective battle qi withstood Zhang Tie's first strike; however, due to the great strength, the demon baron was sent flying backward like being collided by a train.

Before the demon baron fell down, the second strike had arrived.

Closely after that, the abyss battle spear's head attacked the demon baron in an increasingly higher frequency, which had surpassed the latter's maximal reaction speed. After being compressed, the demon baron's protective battle qi exploded like crackers constantly.

No matter how fast a demon could react, it would never match that of a divine dominator's spiritual energy.

The spearhead turned into a fierce and bloody living being which kept tearing and engulfing the demon baron as fast as a lightning bolt.

The demon baron finally released its battle qi tornado and virtual image.

Its virtual image of the secret method that it cultivated was a fierce and bizarre monster who was blowing clouds.

The demon baron also started to put up a desperate fight. If not, it would not have a chance to do that anymore.

After a light flashed by its hand, a grim saber which was almost 2 m in length appeared in the demon baron's hand, a silver secret item.

After finding a chance, the demon baron launched an attack. With a roar, a fierce blade qi's shock wave swept towards Zhang

Tie.

However, when the demon baron's blade qi approached Zhang Tie, a shield suddenly appeared in front of Zhang Tie. Suspending in the air a few meters before Zhang Tie, the shield shattered the demon baron's strike in a split second like a firm reef that belittled winds and waves.

Zhang Tie's shield was also a silver secret item.

The demon baron was shocked instantly; closely after that, it became completely disappointed.

In this round of the fight, Zhang Tie was as steady as Mountain Tai without even blinking his eyes...

...

Chapter 954: What a Righteous Man

As for all the human knights in the pyramid, they didn't realize something was wrong until the battle qi tornadoes of Mountain Lifting Hermit and Old Monster Qi rose at the top of the main peak of Weapons Mountain.

Battle qi tornadoes of earth knights were very eye-catching. Additionally, they were released on the top of the main peak of Weapons Mountain. Therefore, when the two battle qi tornadoes shot into the sky, all the other human knights were shocked as they stopped what they were doing and watched the top of the main peak for quite a while.

Many people even thought that Mountain Lifting Hermit and Old Monster Qi were fighting over there.

When Lu Zhongming's battle qi smoke rose up, many people thought that there was some conflict between the black iron knights; someone even guessed that perhaps Lu Zhongming was sending a signal to his wife Lin Huanxi as they were chasing after the same virtual image of the silver secret item. At that moment, nobody could imagine that an earth demon knight had entered the hieron.

However, when the battle qi tornadoes of two earth knights rose up, many people realized that something was wrong.

In a few minutes, Old Monster Qi had started to grab the crystal ball. After that, he controlled the temperature and air supply in the pyramid. At that moment, all the black iron knights in the hieron changed their faces greatly.

Given the suddenly "dropping" temperature and the suffocated air supply, the pyramid was slowly close to icy vacuum. In this state, even black iron knights started to feel bad. Like fish out of water, they could barely stand too long in this state. Even Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan started to panic. Someone even ran out of

the Weapons Mountain and prepared to leave the hieron.

What happened later made them confused. As a result, they didn't know what to do.

The suffocated vacuum state in the Pyramid only lasted less than 10 minutes. After that, the air supply in the pyramid recovered its sufficiency while the temperature inside recovered normal at once, which even felt comfortable. Such a sudden change stopped the black iron knights who were escaping away from the pyramid.

Before the other human knights recovered their composure, the battle qi signals of Zhang Anguo the grand elder of Tianlu Palace and Lu Zhongming rose up at the foot of the Weapons Mountain at the same time.

'Was Zhang Anguo fighting Lu Zhongming?'

The other human knights were puzzled by these weird things. They just felt that everything had gone chaotic in the past 1 hour. They didn't know what happened at all.

When they saw Zhang Anguo and Lu Zhongming rushing towards the top of the main peak, all the other black iron knights in the hieron almost rushed towards the top of the main peak at the same time out of deep doubts, restlessness and curiosity.

At the top of the main peak, they saw Mountain Lifting Hermit and Lin Huanxi who were severely wounded.

Through Lin Huanxi, Zhang Anguo and Mountain Lifting Hermit, they all knew what happened on this mountain over the past 1 hour.

An earth demon knight stealthily slid into the hieron and raided the couple. As a result, Lin Huanxi was severely wounded and was robbed away by the earth demon knight. Lu Zhongming released his battle qi smoke and chased after the demon knight; however, he was screwed by the demon knight's trick, enticing the three earth human knights to leave the top of the main peak of the

Weapons Mountain. As a result, the earth demon knight gained a chance to enter the hieron's hall on the top of the main peak.

Before the earth demon knight grabbed the crystal ball that controlled the hub of the hieron, Cui Li grabbed the crystal ball away at the risk of his life for the first time.

Later on, Mountain Lifting Hermit and Old Monster Qi returned to the top of the main peak when they found the open gate and a demon knight. They then rushed inside to fight the demon knight. However, Mountain Lifting Hermit and Cui Li had not imagined that Old Monster Qi was a member of the demon's Three-eye Association. At the critical moment, Old Monster Qi raided Mountain Lifting Hermit and Cui Li. As a result, Mountain Lifting Hermit was severely wounded and Cui Li's crystal ball was robbed away by Old Monster Qi. The situation deteriorated at once.

When Old Monster Qi and the demon knight ruled everything in the pyramid, they closed all the exits of the hieron and wanted to kill all the human knights here. However, Cui Li launched a counter-attack and killed Old Monster Qi, relieving the life-or-death crisis of everybody else.

Finally, Cui Li voluntarily served as a hostage on behalf of Mountain Lifting Hermit and Lin Huanxi with the crystal ball in his hand. He had to stay in the hieron's hall together with the demon knight and couldn't leave until 3 days later.

The other human knights had not imagined that they could meet such a dramatic plot.

If not Cui Li, all the human knights in this pyramid would have been like the fish on the chopping board.

Unconsciously, Cui Li had saved all the human knights here twice.

After knowing what happened, all the other human knights were shocked. After thinking about it for a short while, many people

even oozed sweat. However, they didn't know that they almost couldn't leave the pyramid anymore just now.

"What a dauntless and smart man! How righteous brother Cui Li is! How righteous he is..." The grand elder of Zhang Clan in Tianlu Palace let out a deep sigh which was full of emotions as he looked up at the sky.

Zhang Anguo had not experienced most of the part of this process. After listening to the explanation of Lin Huanxi and Mountain Lifting Hermit, Zhang Anguo finally knew what righteous deeds had Cui Li done.

This time, Cui Li saved Lin Huanxi and Mountain Lifting Hermit in front of Zhang Anguo and saved all the other knights of Tianlu Palace.

Zhang Anguo had not seen such a righteous figure!

"Elder Zhang, can't we open the gate of this hall?" Gong Ziyao asked anxiously, "Brother Cui and that earth demon knight are still inside..."

"The gate of this hall has been set by brother Cui, it will not open until 3 days later. If not, that earth demon knight would not agree to brother Cui's condition. This hieron's gate is very firm. It could not be rocked by knights below heavenly knights!" Zhang Anguo sighed, "If I were close to Tianlu Palace, I could notice the clan and have Elder Anjin who's cultivating indoors invite the powerhouse in Taiyi Fantasy Sect to give a favor to Tianlu Palace. As long as they knew that brother Cui had saved so many people of Zhang Clan, Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace would never ignore my proposal; however, even if I notice them, it will take the heavenly knight of Taiyi Fantasy Sect at least 2 weeks to arrive here. It would be too late by then..."

Hearing that only heavenly knights could rock the gate of hieron's hall, all the human knights outside the hall became silent.

There were very few heavenly knights across Taixia Country. Even the top clan Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace didn't have one, not to mention the others——besides Xuanyuan Hill and the top seven sects in Taixia Country, there were very few heavenly knights across Taixia Country. In front of any heavenly knight, any people at present was junior. They were not qualified to sit together with a heavenly knight, not to mention inviting one at their wills;

"If so, can we ask for a favor from the heavenly knight in the Lion Fortress?" Filton who had treated Zhang Tie as a bosom friend asked loudly.

"There's indeed a heavenly knight in the Lion Fortress. However, each movement of the heavenly knight in the Lion Fortress is concerned about the safety of the Lion Fortress and would arouse the corresponding responses of demons in the Earth-element Realm. Unless a very important event that was involved with numerous lives of humans or receiving an order from Xuanyuan Hill, none of us could have the heavenly knight in the Lion Fortress save brother Cui!" Zhang Anguo revealed a bitter smile.

"What should we do then?"

"The reason that brother Cui agreed with the demon knight to open the portals in this hieron 3 days in normal temperature is to not let us come here in vain. We should understand brother Cui's intention. Therefore, in the following 3 days, we should seek for our own fortunes so as to live up to brother Cui's sacrifice and contribution. 3 days later, we will leave the hieron and wait for brother Cui outside the gate!" Zhang Anguo said.

The others at present became silent as they had understood the intention of the grand elder of Tianlu Palace, namely, if Cui Li didn't come out or the demon knight was the last one who came out, they could only revenge for brother Cui Li.

"I believe that Cui Li will definitely come out!" Filton loudly

spoke, "We will wait for Cui Li outside the gate of the pyramid 3 days later. I'm waiting to have a drink with him! Now, don't waste the time that Cui Li has fought for us."

After saying that, Filton bade a farewell to Gong Ziyao and Cecilia before rushing away from the top of the main peak.

The remaining black iron knights exchanged glances with each other. Most of them soon left no matter what they were thinking about.

Under this circumstance, even though they all wanted to help Cui Li, they couldn't. Therefore, they had to seize the opportunity to get a silver secret item as soon as possible instead of just standing here. If Cui Li lost his life, they could have a greater probability to revenge for brother Cui Li 3 days later.

Some of them chose to stay near the top of the main peak. When they looked for the virtual images of secret items near there, they observed the hieron's hall.

Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan stayed near the top of the main peak. Lu Zhongming brought Lin Huanxi who had not fully recovered back to the place where they had been raided by the demon baron at the middle part of the mountain. Because they had found a virtual image of a secret item over there. Within 3 days, as long as there was no accident, the couple would gain a silver secret item for sure.

Zhang Anguo stayed on the top of the main peak near the hieron's hall. Mountain Lifting Hermit who was severely wounded also stayed there after taking a few vials of recovery medicament. Right beside Zhang Anguo, Mountain Lifting Hermit sat down with crossed legs and recovered his physical strength. At the same time, he kept his eyes closely on the gate of the hieron's hall.

After being replaced by Zhang Tie, Mountain Lifting Hermit became more silent.

After coming to the top of the main peak, Bai Suxian the young sister had been standing at the gate of the hieron's hall and watching the gate with a silly look. Until everybody else left did she flash away...

Nobody knew what the young sister was thinking about at that moment. However, Zhang Anguo caught sight of her tear stains when she left the top of the main peak.

The gate separated the two people!

Those outside the gate could never imagine what was happening and what would happen inside the gate.

Everyone was concerned about Zhang Tie. However, they had not imagined that the one who was worried after they left was actually that earth demon knight.

Because the earth demon knight had been screwed by Zhang Tie since the beginning.

1 day later, the demon knight who felt something was wrong launched an attack while Zhang Tie exposed his second trump card in a solemn look...

When the combat in the hieron's hall was extremely fierce, all those outside the hall were worried about Zhang Tie.

...

If it were in the normal outside environment, even though Zhang Tie exposed his trump card, he was still not sure that he could defeat an earth knight. Because even though the earth demon knight could not defeat him, it could at least fly away. However, in this enclosed space, the earth demon knight could not fly at all. Therefore, each step became difficult for it. The demon knight could not fly away. Even though it could run fast, it would always be scared of Zhang Tie's frightening striking ability. Additionally, it was very cold here, the demon knight's battle strength would be restricted in this space. Furthermore, part of the demon knight's

battle strength had been consumed in advance. By contrast, Zhang Tie's battle strength was almost not influenced by that.

Since the beginning, the demon knight had fallen into Zhang Tie's trap. After that, it gradually made a compromise to Zhang Tie, losing its dependence and becoming weaker step by step.

The demon knight voluntarily jumped into the trap because it had a malicious intention to reverse the situation.

The demon knight was too confident due to the sharp difference in ranks between an earth knight and a black iron knight. The demon knight had been used to overlook all the black iron knights. However, it had not imagined that this black iron knight might be a lion in the skin of sheep.

Divine Dominator was such a lion in the skin of sheep.

'As I've gained all the favorable conditions on time, geographical position and human relationship, if I can still not beat an earth demon knight, I should go die...'

Zhang Tie was confident to win the battle. The confidence originated from his great battle strength, his crystal ball and Castle of Black Iron. The three strengths determined that Zhang Tie was destined to win the battle the moment the gate of the hieron's hall was closed...

Whereas, the demon baron didn't know anything about Zhang Tie's strengths at all. It still thought that it had a chance to win. It was still struggling, roaring and releasing its battle potential as it dreamed of killing a human-divine dominator in an unwilling fear...

How many divine dominators could practice with an earth knight?

Therefore, Zhang Tie also treasured this chance very much...

Chapter 955: An Insurmountable Mountain

What could Zhang Tie do by combining Castle of Black Iron with the crystal ball that controlled the hub of the hieron?

First, if Zhang Tie liked, he could completely turn the hieron's hall into a vacuum state. In this state, he could breathe the air in Castle of Black Iron while fighting the earth demon knight in the vacuum.

In the fight, the earth demon knight would consume its physical strength and battle qi greatly which should be maintained by breath. How many hours could the earth demon knight fight in high intensity while holding its breath, 3 hours or 5 hours?

Second, the laziest method was to keep the gate of the hall closed in super low temperature and vacuum. Under this circumstance, Zhang Tie didn't need to care about the earth knight, he only needed to enter Castle of Black Iron before coming out to pick up the dead fish 2 days later.

The demon baron's remote-sensing crystals had been destroyed; however, its space-teleportation ring was still in Zhang Tie's hand. Under this circumstance, the demon baron was like a rat in a hole.

The demon baron was destined to lose the battle the moment the gate of the hieron's hall was closed.

The demon baron's failure lay in its greed, arrogance and ignorance about Zhang Tie's trump cards.

The reason that Zhang Tie didn't select the above two methods lay in the current rare opportunity. He had to grasp the opportunity to squeeze out the maximal value of the earth demon knight.

...

Being besieged by the only spearhead, the demon baron was like a buffalo who was besieged by a pack of wild wolves. No matter how

much it tried, it could not completely break the ring of encirclement.

The demon baron realized that the mere chance that he could defeat Zhang Tie was to draw close to Zhang Tie. Otherwise, it was only a living target of Zhang Tie and would be mistreated by Zhang Tie to death. All of his long-distance strikes would be blocked by that shield floating beside Zhang Tie. Only through close combat could the demon baron reverse the battle situation.

No matter what, the demon baron was just facing a black iron knight. In close combat, it had an overwhelming advantage. Additionally, as soon as it drew close to Zhang Tie, the destructive power of the long-distance strike of divine dominator would be weakened.

Although being in dilemma, the demon baron was still very clear-minded.

Only by drawing close to the divine dominator could the demon baron defeat the latter; otherwise, the demon baron was fighting nobody but air.

"Go die..." The demon baron spurted out blood while resisting one strike of the abyss battle spear with its protective battle qi. Closely after that, the demon baron roared while its battle qi rumbled and swept towards the transparent weapons in front of it.

The demon baron didn't target at Zhang Tie in the distance but the "shackles", "traps" and "blades" in the air being composed of Zhang Tie's spiritual energy, which were invisible roadblocks. Only when it touched them could it find them. In the beginning, the demon baron almost suffered a big loss. However, after fighting for a while, the demon baron realized that it could break these roadblocks by battle skills before touching them.

It was like minesweeping. Only when it swept the mines on the way ahead could it approach to Zhang Tie safely.

Although the mines would be rearranged, there was a short time difference, during which period the demon baron might seize the opportunity to win the battle.

Most of the energy of the demon baron's battle qi strikes would be diminished when it hit the invisible roadblocks in the air. As to the afterwaves of the battle qi strikes, they had been blocked by the shield flying around Zhang Tie before reaching Zhang Tie.

In a split second, the demon baron had been attacked over 30 times by the spearhead.

The demon baron's protective battle qi was extremely compressed. Although the spear head didn't penetrate through the demon baron's protective battle qi, its great momentum and strength could still pass to the body of the demon baron.

As a result, the demon baron spurted out blood once again. Gritting its teeth, it accelerated towards Zhang Tie with a grim look while its battle qi rumbled once again and swept the mines ahead.

When the demon baron bore the strikes, it swept the mines and darted towards Zhang Tie.

It was a real bloody path. Almost every step forward, the demon baron would suffer dozens of strikes.

The divine dominator's attack was too fast that the demon baron although being an earth demon knight could not respond to it. Therefore, it could only cut off all means to retreat.

Standing in the distance, Zhang Tie just watched the demon baron inching towards him with a cold look.

By now, the demon baron had been fighting Zhang Tie for over 12 hours, during which period the demon baron lived up to the honor and battle strength as an earth knight. Even Zhang Tie was surprised by and admired about the battle strength of this earth knight in dilemma.

Compared to black iron knights, earth knights were too powerful.

Under this circumstance, even 10 black iron knights would be killed by Zhang Tie as a divine dominator. By contrast, this earth demon knight was just wounded. It still maintained a powerful battle strength. Like a bull who had taken viagra, it still had vigorous spiritual energy, physical strength and battle qi and was hard to tame.

This earth demon knight was much more powerful than the demon general in all aspects.

Zhang Tie asked himself inside, 'What would be the result if I simply fought this earth demon knight with my current battle strength and all that I've learned?'

'It was impossible for me to win the battle without using my trump cards. Under this circumstance, if I couldn't escape, I would only stick to 2 hours at most before being killed.'

Earth knights had overwhelming battle strength than black iron knights.

If black iron knight's battle strength was regarded as a bee, undoubtedly earth knight's battle strength would be a bumblebee. If not depend on the advantage in quantity and environment, a bee could almost not defeat a bumblebee in an independent combat.

However, during the past 10 hours, although Zhang Tie didn't kill the earth demon knight, he had gained a lot.

Zhang Tie gained the chance to practice the battle skills of the powerful profession as a divine dominator for the first time.

This earth demon knight was Zhang Tie's best training partner. This was the most practical battle facing the most powerful opponent. Zhang Tie gained the initiative and was confident to win the battle. What a rare opportunity!

Since he left Waii Subcontinent, Zhang Tie had not got a chance

to practice his battle skills as a divine dominator, even in trouble-reappearance situations. Those living beings in trouble-reappearance situations could be killed by Zhang Tie with his battle strength as a knight. Therefore, he could never get a chance to practice the battle skills as a divine dominator. In trouble-reappearance situations, Zhang Tie felt as boring as practicing shooting.

...

Watching the demon baron rushing towards him, Zhang Tie felt like watching a wild beast darting towards the high platform in an arena.

This was not the first time for the earth demon knight to attempt to rush towards him. The earth demon knight had attempted 7-8 times; however, each time, it was beaten back by Zhang Tie's invisible blades before it drew close to the central axis of the hall.

This time, the earth demon knight seemed to be a bit different.

Zhang Tie became vigilant.

When the demon baron approached the central axis once again, it suddenly sprung up. Before the spearhead touched it once again, it roared, "Split..."

Soon after its roar, the demon baron's body had turned into a cloud of dense mist. At the same time, over 10 humanoid mists dropped onto the ground. Closely after that, they darted jumped and darted towards Zhang Tie as fast as lightning bolts. As a result, Zhang Tie could not distinguish its original body from the others.

As an earth demon knight, the demon baron also had its trump cards.

If commoners met such an emergency, they would be flurried for sure; however, Zhang Tie just revealed a disdainful sneer...

At this moment, consecutive metallic shrieks sounded in the hall...

Besides the spearhead of the abyss battle spear, the other parts of the abyss battle spear rose up in a split second.

In the blink of an eye, the three parts of the abyss battle spear broke the 10-odd dense humanoid mists...

The last dense humanoid mist darted forward and almost passed the central axis of the hall.

1/3 of the spear slashed the mist fiercely all of a sudden like how a stick hit a baseball, causing a loud echo, "bang"...

The dense mist dispersed, revealing the demon baron's unimaginable look——what happened? The spearhead was far away from me...

The demon baron was sent flying 10 m away. Until being slashed by the 1/3 of the spear did the demon baron find that two more metal sticks were floating in the air and joined the battle.

With consecutive loud sounds "bang..." "bang..." "bang...", the demon baron was always slashed back to its original position no matter how hard it struggled like a football being passed by two players...

At this moment, the spearhead gave a fierce blow to the demon baron, causing it to spurt out blood once again...

The central axis in the hall became an insurmountable mountain in the eyes of the demon knight...

Chapter 956: The Tragedy of the Demon Baron

As the old saying went, a fighter would pluck up his full courage in the first attack; as for the second time, his courage would decline; as for the third time, he would lose his courage completely. The demon baron had tried to approach to the central axis of the hall many times. Being besieged by the three weapons under the control of Zhang Tie, the demon baron didn't break through the central axis until it fell down.

When the demon baron was attacked by the spearhead, it was like a wrestle between a wild wolf and a mad buffalo. Under that circumstance, the demon baron still had a chance to launch a counter-attack towards Zhang Tie although being bitten by the wild wolf. When the other two parts of the abyss battle spear joined the battle, the number of wild wolves rose to 3. This buffalo would gradually become fatigued, sluggish and finally fall down no matter how mad and fierce it was at the beginning.

The demon baron was shedding blood through the wounds. The constant strikes and pricks gradually weakened the demon baron's battle strength. When bearing the constant strikes, the demon baron's protective battle qi undulated more and more fiercely and became increasingly thinner, causing more and more harms to the demon baron...

Facing such a fierce attack, even an iron sheet would fuse, not to mention flesh.

As the demon baron had not fought a divine dominator before, it was not sure whether all the divine dominator could control many weapons independently at the same time as granting those weapons with lives and intelligence.

The sharp spearhead pierced through the central positions also the key body parts of the demon baron as fast as lightning bolts.

A part of the spear fiercely slashed the demon baron's head and shoulders like being held by an invisible knight floating in the air. Wherever the demon baron was, the stick would always follow after it and fiercely slashed it.

The third part of the spear kept sweeping the demon baron's legs fiercely from 10 cm above the ground. Whenever the part of handle touched its protective battle qi, the tremendous strength would pass to its legs, causing a sharp pain. It seemed that the part of the handle would never stop until breaking its legs.

All the counter-attacks of the demon baron were blocked by the shield in front of Zhang Tie.

The three parts of the abyss battle spear struck the demon baron's heart, head and legs ceaselessly like worms gnawing at its bones.

After another 10 hours, the demon baron's protective battle qi finally collapsed together with the demon baron's physical strength and the battle will.

After fighting a divine dominator in such an extremely disadvantageous environment like being mistreated over 20 hours, the demon baron finally collapsed.

The demon baron thought that it would die right away while its heart would be penetrated through and torn apart by the spearhead; however, it didn't.

The spearhead didn't penetrate through its heart but broke the qi sea below its lower abdomen.

The iron stick which had always been hovering above its head didn't smash its head either; instead, it broke its two arms, breaking each bone on its arms into numerous smaller pieces.

The iron stick that was responsible for attacking its legs battered its shins and knees.

All the strikes almost occurred at the same time.

The sharp pain caused the demon baron to kneel down and utter a painful shriek unconsciously.

When it shrieked constantly, a part of the abyss battle spear suddenly stabbed into its mouth. With a simple stir, all the sharp teeth of the demon baron were broken apart.

The demon baron fell down while looking up at the roof; its mouth was filled with bloody ice scums; its limbs were twisted like noodles. At the same time, it spurted out blood-bubbles. The moment the blood left its body, it had started to get frozen. The demon baron completely lost its strength to resist and struggle and just waited for the arrival of the final moment.

This was the result of the battle between the demon baron and the divine dominator. The demon baron stood over 20 hours; however, the battle came to an end in less than one second.

When the demon baron fell down, the temperature in the hall suddenly recovered to normal. If not, in such an extremely low temperature, the severely wounded demon baron would die in 10 minutes.

Zhang Tie stopped his attack. He then slowly walked towards the demon baron followed by the shield and the crystal ball in the air.

In the spacious and tranquil hall, Zhang Tie's caligae stepped onto the ground, causing extraordinarily silvery and loud sounds, "Kaka", which was especially impressive in the hall.

At this moment, Zhang Tie had a bizarre, surging feeling, which contained pride and great excitement. As a result, Zhang Tie became a bit thrilled.

'Is this the feeling of defeating an earth demon knight?' Zhang Tie asked himself inside. Undoubtedly, Zhang Tie had made a great, symbolic breakthrough in this battle, during which process, he defeated an earth demon knight in a head-on manner. It was an outstanding success. When in Waii Subcontinent, the demon

general who had almost promoted to an earth knight could topple over the entire Waii Subcontinent. Count Long Wind would make every move after mature consideration had just promoted to an earth knight and stabilized his position as the provincial governor of Youzhou Province. Therefore, Zhang Tie knew the power of an earth knight.

In this age, many small subcontinents didn't have an earth knight at all. Even in major human countries like Taixia Country, an earth knight was always unrivaled in one region as a provincial governor and cheji general of a province. Therefore, it was epoch-making for Zhang Tie to defeat an earth knight in a head-on manner.

Unlike Old Monster Qi who was killed by Zhang Tie in the trick, the earth demon knight was defeated by Zhang Tie by force in a head-on manner.

Zhang Tie came to the front of the demon knight. Lowering his head, he watched the earth demon knight who was lying on the ground.

Zhang Tie felt pretty satisfied as a conqueror when he overlooked an earth knight who was defeated by him.

"Just kill me..." The demon baron mumbled as its teeth had been knocked out. However, Zhang Tie could still understand its meaning basically.

"No way..." Zhang Tie sneered as he drew out his gold-eaten tri-edged dagger. At the same time, he stepped onto one shoulder of the demon baron and squatted down. After that, he picked one arm of the demon baron and gashed the chakra of the muscles and bones on the demon baron's arm. Then, he seized a black thick tendon on the demon baron's arm and drew it forcefully by hand. As a result, the demon baron's eyes almost popped out as it shrieked miserably.

Knights would also feel pain. Additionally, due to the strong

body, knights' muscles, tendons and bones were much more powerful than that of commoners. Facing such a cruel torture, knights would feel much more painful than commoners.

Therefore, the moment Zhang Tie drew its main tendon, the demon baron couldn't stand to shriek miserably.

Due to Zhang Tie's movement, the demon baron's claw and arm twisted in a weird manner.

When a light flashed by, Zhang Tie directly chopped off the main tendon from the arm of the demon baron by his gold-eaten tri-edged dagger...

Zhang Tie held the main tendon and watched it for a while. After that, he threw it aside like littering. He then picked himself up from the ground and came to the other side of the demon baron. Like how he treated the earlier arm of the demon baron, Zhang Tie cut off the main tendon on the other arm of the demon baron.

As a result, the demon baron almost passed out due to extreme pain...

Chapter 957: You Cannot Die

In Waii Subcontinent, Zhang Tie had witnessed so many people's tragic and hopeless lives under the rule of demons.

In the underground mountain cave of Misty Wood in Selnes Theater of Operations, Zhang Tie saw that demons and Three-eye Association forced people to eat people alive. In the swarthy and gloomy underground cave, human skeletons were piling up as high as mountains, sending out stink...

Many cities in dozens of human countries in the north of Selnes Theater of Operations deteriorated into empty cities or cities being covered with corpses due to demonized puppets disasters. When the night fell, many pye-dogs, wild wolves and rats who had eaten so many human corpses started to wander in the cities and the wilderness near the cities while radiating bloody, green eye light...

Even in the territory of Three-eye Association, most humans were as cheap as draught animals. The grave-tower demons devoured and converted batches of humans into demonized puppets; demonized puppets ate a lot of humans. Numerous male, female, old and young people would deteriorate into the lowest-level bloody slaves, which were actually food of demonized puppets being raised by demons.

In the eyes of the demon general, hundreds of millions of human lives were nothing but sh*t. As long as it sent an order, the puppet worms would kill hundreds of millions of humans and turn them into the walking dead.

After witnessing and experiencing all this, no demon was qualified to be sympathized by Zhang Tie.

Now that demons could treat humans as draught animals, Zhang Tie could also treat a demon as a draught animal, the most damned draught animal.

In Zhang Tie's eyes, although the demon baron was a powerful demon knight, it was just a powerful draught animal with sharp fangs, claws and a big bloody mouth, who would eat people at any time.

'When the demon baron entered this hieron's hall, it was ready to eat and kill people. If I don't appear timely, all the human knights here would be the sacrificial offerings of the demon baron.'

Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't pity the demon baron at all. He would have no mental burden even if he treated the demon baron in the cruelest manner. Zhang Tie treated all this as a matter of course——an eye for an eye, an ear for an ear, a tooth for a tooth.

Of course, Zhang Tie was not just airing his grievances by drawing out two thick tendons from the demon baron's arms; he was not that boring. Neither was he interested in the physiological anatomy of demons. He didn't mind using the cruelest means to punish the demon. His penalty methods were purposeful; instead of pure entertainment.

The demon baron deserved to die; but not now. This demon was pretty valuable; especially in this bloody sacrificial hall.

After cutting off the two thick tendons on the arms of the demon baron, Zhang Tie's hands became bloody like that of surgeons who were operating a surgery.

Of course, surgeons wore disinfectant rubber gloves when they operated a surgery; however, Zhang Tie didn't.

The demon baron had passed out.

Squatting down, Zhang Tie patted the demon baron's face by his bloody hands as he received no response. Zhang Tie then touched its neck and poured some all-purpose medicament into its mouth.

Zhang Tie really didn't want this guy to die so fast.

The all-purpose medicament soon took effect. In less than 2 minutes, the demon baron had slowly opened its eyes while it

immediately shrieked miserably like being dragged to the hell due to the extreme pain.

"Kill me...kill me...kill me right away..." The demon baron roared towards Zhang Tie with red eyes.

At this moment, the demon baron knew that it had fallen in the hand of a divine dominator. In this place, it had no chance to survive at all. Therefore, it could only beg for death, which was also a moksa for it.

The demon baron thought that Zhang Tie was just torturing it.

"Ho...ho...no way!" Squatting in front of the demon baron, Zhang Tie played with the gold-eaten tri-edged dagger as he exposed his white teeth to the demon baron, which looked gloomy and icy, "I have something to ask you. Tell me about the bloody sacrifice in the bloody hall."

"Kill me...kill me..." The demon baron shrieked loudly as it ignored Zhang Tie's question.

Zhang Tie let out a sigh, "It seems that it's not painful enough. Given your performance, you're not sincere to communicate with me. I hate to repeat the same question. Now that you don't answer me, I could only aggravate your pain..."

Zhang Tie had already stood up and walked to the feet of the demon baron. He picked the broken shin below the demon baron's one knee and stabbed into it with his gold-eaten three-edged dagger from the back of its knee. After that, Zhang Tie raised his dagger and moved the thick and black tendon out of the demon baron's flesh. Zhang Tie then stepped onto the demon baron's lower abdomen as he caught this main tendon and forcefully drew it, curling up the demon baron's one foot.

The demon baron's shriek was earthshaking; it almost tore apart its throat. The main tendon on its leg was as hard as the steel bar. Due to its hardness, the demon baron became more painful when

being harmed.

"There's a bloody sacrifice furnace...right below the joss of the God of Bloody Sacrifice. There's a groove matrix on the altar which is used to trigger bloody sacrifice awareness and bloody sacrifice furnace...You can drop your blood into that pattern to establish a relationship with the God of Bloody Sacrifice...Then, the bloody sacrifice furnace will work...after throwing living beings into the bloody sacrifice furnace...you will be able to hold a bloody sacrifice rite..."

The demon baron realized that it was meaningless for it to go against Zhang Tie any longer; it only sought for death as soon as possible. If Zhang Tie could throw it into the bloody sacrifice furnace, it would have its dream come true. What it told Zhang Tie were not deep secrets. As long as Zhang Tie spent some time to study the usage of the bloody sacrifice furnace, it would be found by him sooner or later.

"What is bloody sacrifice used for?"

"Bloody sacrifice is a confidential rite based on the exchange principle of life and energy...it could...could help people recover their wounds...evolve and strengthen their skills...and break through their limits in cultivation..."

"Can it recover the damage on the chakra of an earth knight? I remembered that Old Monster Qi said that he wanted to recover his chakra by bloody sacrifice." Zhang Tie asked with an extremely profound eye light...

"Yes..."

"Hmm, nice, now that you've given me a sincere reply, I will satisfy your dream..." As Zhang Tie replied, he rapidly cut off another part of the main tendon on the leg of the demon baron as fast as a lightning bolt.

After dropping off this leg, Zhang Tie quickly picked the other leg

of the demon baron and cut off the main tendon on the other leg at the fastest speed.

The demon knight was so in pain that it twisted and rolled on the ground before passing out once again.

As for earth knights who were very vigorous, they could easily heal their broken bones, not to mention the wounds on their muscles and skin. Only when their main tendons were cut off and they had no super effective senior recovery medicament or treatments could they not recover their wounds.

The moment he broke the protective battle qi of the demon baron, Zhang Tie had broken the demon knight's hands and feet. However, it was not enough. Only by cutting off the main tendons of its limbs could Zhang Tie completely disable its limbs. Actually, Zhang Tie did this to stop the demon baron from committing suicide.

Perhaps, the demon baron didn't believe it; however, it was indeed what Zhang Tie was thinking about.

If the demon baron knew what Zhang Tie was thinking about, it must have regretted that it had not committed suicide a few hours ago.

Zhang Tie broke its qi sea to prevent the demon baron from exploding himself or breaking its heart meridian by its battle qi after recovering a bit. Like a person could not blow up a broken balloon, as long as the wound in its qi sea was not healed, the demon baron would not be able to release its battle qi.

Zhang Tie didn't know whether the earth demon knight would commit suicide by biting off its tongue. In case of the possibility, he broke the demon knight's teeth along with its tongue.

From this perspective, Zhang Tie had cudgeled his brains to keep the demon baron alive.

Over the past 20-odd hours' combat, Zhang Tie had a deeper and

more intuitive recognition about the battle strength of an earth demon knight. Honestly, Zhang Tie was scared about the battle strength of this earth demon knight. In order to put this earth demon knight under control in case of any loopholes or sparing any chance for the demon knight to reverse the battle situation, Zhang Tie had to adopt the most unyielding means.

When the demon baron passed out once again, Zhang Tie took away all the equipment from the demon baron and eliminated the final threats.

The demon baron had a dagger which was slightly shorter than the gold-eaten tri-edged dagger and a necklace. The two items might be bronze secret items, the functions of which were to be further authenticated.

After taking away all the possible weapons from the demon baron, Zhang Tie saw the demon baron's hands, feet and lower abdomen were still bleeding. He then took out his spare medicine for knife wounds and carefully daubed some onto the wounds of the demon baron's limbs to stop bleeding for it. After that, he poured some all-purpose medicament into the mouth of the demon baron who was in a coma.

The demon baron had been fully disarmed by Zhang Tie. It could not even commit suicide. Conversely, it had to be a bit energetic.

After dealing with the demon baron's wounds, Zhang Tie stood up and walked towards the joss at the end of the hall, leaving the demon baron lying on the ground alone...

Chapter 958: The Discovery

After staying in the hall for almost 2 days, honestly, it was Zhang Tie's first time to seriously watch the joss in this hall.

This joss was higher than 30 meters. Standing in front of the joss, Zhang Tie looked up and felt being oppressive like watching a furious giant spirit.

This joss had the features of both humans and demons. Its upper body was like that of humans while its lower body was like a snake. The joss lowered its head with closed two eyes while a vertical eye between its eyebrows was overlooking a location on the altar. Its snake-shaped lower body coiled around a bizarre, tall furnace. The joss integrated with the furnace in an organic way.

If it was a joss, the furnace beneath the joss would be the base of the joss; if it was a furnace, the joss would be a bizarre and exaggerating ornament above the furnace.

The joss was purple all over as if it was made of red copper. However, it was just a judgment from its texture; actually, this joss could never be made of a common metal such as red copper.

There were dense, numerous runes and patterns and reliefs of various lively strange animals on the furnace. The altar was in front of that furnace, which was precisely put in front of the vent of the furnace. The entire altar was connected with the furnace. It could be regarded as a part of the furnace or the lower structure of the entire joss.

There were also many reliefs and mysterious runes over the altar.

If this joss was a sculpture, it must be a priceless art treasure.

After looking at the joss for a while, Zhang Tie recovered his composure. After that, he moved his eyes onto a small platform in the middle of the altar. The platform was over 1 m above the ground like a speech table. There was indeed a groove-shaped

matrix which was as large as two palms.

In Zhang Tie's eyes, the so-called matrix was just a mysterious pattern combination composed of some intricate geometrical patterns. The center of this pattern combination was that strange triangular symbol being composed of three scales on the top of the hieron's gate.

When he remembered the demon baron's words, Zhang Tie slightly made a minor wound on his palm by the gold-eaten tri-edged dagger and filled the matrix in the groove slowly with his blood.

In a split second, Zhang Tie's blood was absorbed by the matrix. Closely after that, the pattern combination started to radiate a glow. The small platform where the matrix lay had slowly shrunk into the altar, leaving the red mysterious patterns in the center of the altar.

After the platform completely shrank into the altar, Zhang Tie immediately sensed a connection between his spiritual energy and the joss while some strange information occurred to his mind unconsciously.

Those information were all about how to make the bloody sacrifice.

At this moment, those information were like the instructions of a set of machine. When this set of machine started, its instructions occurred to Zhang Tie's mind.

The instructions included three points.

First, the process and skills of the bloody sacrifice. The bloody sacrifice had to be completed with living beings.

Second, as Zhang Tie had started the bloody sacrifice altar with his blood, this bloody sacrifice would be dominated by Zhang Tie's will. It would exchange what Zhang Tie would sacrifice for what he demanded.

Third, the bloody sacrifice could heal his wounds and help him break through some skills. All of these proceeded according to a mysterious principle of exchange at equal value. If he wanted to cure severer wounds, he had to sacrifice more advanced living beings. The law also fit skills breakthrough; especially the latter. The bloody sacrifice didn't fully correspond to skills breakthrough. There's a chance of success. That was to say, even if he had sacrificed living beings, he wouldn't necessarily make a breakthrough in skills. The more advanced the skills were, the lower would be the possibility of him succeeding. However, the benefit was that he could try next time.

After learning these contents, Zhang Tie's face turned pale as he felt that this bloody sacrifice was like a senior pawnshop or a gambling house. Instead of exchanging or gambling money, it was exchanging and gambling blood and lives. Through bloody sacrifice, Zhang Tie would heal his wounds and make a breakthrough in skills.

'Did this bloody sacrifice hall serve as a special "community hospital" in the far-ancient times? It could not only heal one's "physical diseases" and help one make a breakthrough in skills'. An absurd thought occurred in Zhang Tie's mind.

Zhang Tie shook his head as he tried to be clear-minded, 'I don't care what this bloody sacrifice hall was used for in the far-ancient times; what counts most is that this hall is still available for me now.'

Zhang Tie then put his palm onto that platform where the matrix was set as he started to speak according to the "Holy Bible", "the Constitution" or some solemn classic pledge, "With my blood as the witness, I wish to piously offer enough blood and lives here as the equal and fair exchange for what I want!"

The moment Zhang Tie finished his words, the vent of the furnace in front of the altar had opened. As high as an adult man, the vent looked like a huge bloody mouth of a boa. The black flame

in the furnace looked empty yet terrifying, which seemed to be able to burn everything in the secular world...

Only by sensing the black, empty flames in the furnace, Zhang Tie had changed his face. Any living being, as long as he fell into the furnace would vanish immediately, even knights.

After the bloody sacrifice furnace was started, it would close automatically in 3 days if there was no bloody sacrifice in this period. After that, if Zhang Tie wanted to offer sacrifice to it, he could only restart it.

After starting the bloody sacrifice furnace successfully, Zhang Tie became relieved inside. He then left the altar for the demon baron.

Old Monster Qi's corpse was lying scattered near the central axis of the hall in numerous pieces.

After killing Old Monster Qi, Zhang Tie had not searched his corpse. Later on, his corpse was used to explore Zhang Tie's invisible blades in the air and was finally split up into 7-8 pieces. Scattering over the ground, they looked pretty bloody.

Zhang Tie had seen much bloodier scenes than it; therefore, it didn't scare Zhang Tie too much.

After coming to the side of the pieces of Old Monster Qi's corpse, Zhang Tie squatted down and started to search for booties carefully.

As an earth knight; especially a remnant of Three-eye Association who had hidden his real status so many years, how could he not take some good items with him? Even though Old Monster Qi was dead, his items should still be there.

Zhang Tie mainly checked the parts near the hands and below the neck.

After checking some pieces, Zhang Tie became faintly stunned. Although he had searched over two hands of Old Monster Qi, he didn't see any items on the ten fingers at all, not even a finger

ring...

Neither did he see any item below the neck, even a necklace. Besides a bloody fragmented boa robe, a soft gold waistband which contained a well-preserved diamond-shaped metal plate which was used to access to the pyramid, some vials of medicament and gold checks, Zhang Tie saw nothing else.

Although the boa robe and the soft gold waistband were a bit valuable, especially the rare medicaments and the hundreds of thousands of gold coins, they were too dowdy for an earth knight. Even though a fresh black iron knight might have more properties than him. How could this earth knight be so poor?

'F*ck, are you kidding me?' Zhang Tie swore as he would never believe that Old Monster Qi was that cleanhanded.

When he killed Old Monster Qi, he had wasted his earth chakra; if he couldn't get any booty as a compensation, Zhang Tie really could not accept it.

However, even though he had peeled off Old Monster Qi's clothes, he still didn't find anything valuable.

'F*ck, what a poor wretch!'

Zhang Tie became speechless...

'Could it be that Old Monster Qi had hidden his good items in the Lion Fortress or somewhere in the wild after knowing that this action was dangerous?'

'It's possible. What a weirdo! How could he know that he would lose his life in this pyramid?'

Now that there was no good item on Old Monster Qi's corpse, Zhang tie could only accept the reality besides letting out a sigh.

As these segmented flesh were too bloody and didn't look good; additionally the temperature in the hall had recovered to normal, they would smell bad in 2 days if they were left over there.

After throwing a glance at the bloody sacrifice furnace, Zhang Tie ran his spiritual energy and had those segmented fleshes float up and fly towards the bloody sacrifice furnace——At this moment, the bloody sacrifice furnace was the best tool to deal with wastes.

After walking a few steps away, Zhang Tie suddenly stopped his footstep and turned around. All the segmented flesh were behind him in the air while the farthest one was already over 50 m away from him...

Zhang Tie gazed at a part of the calf of Old Monster Qi and caught sight of a bulgy place behind the part of the shin, which faintly revealed a regular shape...

If the part of calf didn't fly by him, Zhang Tie couldn't notice the abnormal look of that part of the calf.

Zhang Tie ran his spiritual energy to cut open the skin of the part of the calf, exposing a bloody rectangular metal plate as large as two fingers which then flew towards Zhang Tie...

...

Chapter 959: Secret Warehouse and Purgatory

After being moved out of the calf of Old Monster Qi, the metal plate was covered with blood. Zhang Tie then ran his spiritual energy and directly summoned a gush of water from Castle of Black Iron to rinse the rectangular metal plate...

The limpid current appeared out of the void 1 m away in front of Zhang Tie. Like coming out of an open water faucet, the current directly flushed onto that metal plate while the water being splashed down disappeared out of the void and was teleported back into the abyss of chaos in Castle of Black Iron.

The current appeared and disappeared out of the void magically. If someone watched it aside, he must be exclaiming about it and called it a mysterious manifestation.

The metal plate rolled in the air automatically like taking a bath. In about half a minute, it had been cleaned.

Zhang Tie stretched out his hand while the metal plate fell onto his hand. At the same time, the current in the air disappeared.

This metal plate looked like a soldier's identity plate. Zhang Tie held it and felt that it was heavy.

It was about 8 cm in length, 3 cm in width and less than 2 cm in height, which was made of precious violet gold and mithril. There were delicate patterns of pavilions and mountain peaks on this plate, the craftsmanship of which was definitely above the level of Zhang Tie as a great artisan master.

After overturning the plate, Zhang Tie saw a tortoise-like beast on the other side of the plate, with a stele on its shell. There were some small seal Hua characters—Xuanwu Secret Warehouse of Bloody Soul Temple.

The moment he read the two words "Secret Warehouse", Zhang

Tie's heart pounded, 'Is that a space-teleportation equipment?'

Closely after that, Zhang Tie injected his spiritual energy into this metal plate.

When his spiritual energy entered the metal plate, Zhang Tie sensed a nanobead inside it.

It was indeed a space-teleportation equipment. After Old Monster Qi died, his spiritual shackles on this space-teleportation equipment completely collapsed; therefore, Zhang Tie's spiritual energy could reach inside smoothly.

As soon as Zhang Tie's spiritual energy entered this space-teleportation equipment, he had widely opened his mouth as he almost sprung up due to excitement...

The capacity of this space-teleportation equipment was too large. Besides Castle of Black Iron, this space-teleportation equipment had the largest capacity that Zhang Tie had ever seen. It was absolutely a huge warehouse whose capacity was over 125,000 cubic meters, namely; the length, width and height of which was over 50 m respectively.

Compared to the small space-teleportation finger ring whose capacity was less than 30 cubic meters, this space was pretty huge.

Such a space-teleportation equipment was a rare top-level item among space-teleportation items.

Given the characters Xuanwu Secret Warehouse of Bloody Soul Temple, now that it was collected by Bloody Soul Temple, which was qualified to be besieged by top seven sects in Taixia Country, it wasn't strange that the Bloody Soul Temple could have such a space-teleportation equipment. However, this space-teleportation equipment was too precious. Even the Bloody Soul Temple would not have so many similar space-teleportation equipment.

Black dragon, white tiger, Xuanwu, which was similar to tortoise and rosefinch were four mythical animals in Hua legends. If this

item could be named by Xuanwu, it meant that there might be only 3 more similar space-teleportation equipment in Bloody Soul Temple.

'I'm rich!'

After gaining such a rare space-teleportation equipment, Zhang Tie's journey became worthwhile.

As a result, Zhang Tie burst out into laughter...

All the private belongings of Old Monster Qi were in a trivial corner of this space, which didn't even account 1/100 of its capacity.

Among those private belongings, Zhang Tie saw piles of bullion and secular properties, treasures and antiques, which might be worth about 300 million to 400 million gold coins in total.

There was a rack beside the hills of treasures. On the upper level of the rack, there were some vials of medicaments; on the lower level of the rack, there were 40-50 huge terrines which were similar to the terrains of pickled vegetables. Zhang Tie didn't know what was inside those terrines. There was a desk beside the rack. Some crystal boxes were put on the desk. Additionally, some cooked food, boxes and nice-looking weapons such as sabers and swords were lying beside the rack and the desk...

These were Old Monster Qi's total properties.

Watching these items, Zhang Tie realized that Old Monster Qi had many trump cards. Pitifully, he couldn't use them anymore. Old Monster Qi must be very depressed in the hell.

It was not the right moment to sort and count the properties of Old Monster Qi. After all, Zhang Tie had enough time to do that later; therefore, he just recovered his composure and put away this Xuanwu Secret Warehouse of Bloody Soul Temple before walking towards the demon baron.

The demon baron had already woken up once again. Being

affected by the all-purpose medicament that Zhang Tie had poured into its mouth, the demon baron's look recovered a bit while the wounds on its limbs didn't bleed anymore. Besides losing his mobility, the demon baron had recovered to normal.

After fighting Zhang Tie for over 20 hours, although the demon baron's bones, teeth, qi sea and tendons were destroyed completely, they were not fatal injuries for a knight. As an earth knight, the demon baron's great vitality was not weakened too much. If not his broken qi sea and his poor mobility, the demon baron would recover a great battle strength in only a few hours.

Lying on the ground, the demon baron watched Zhang Tie walking towards him with an animosity, "Don't be pleasant too early. Even if I was sacrificed by you today, you would be sacrificed by others one day..."

"Sacrifice you? Who told you that?" Zhang Tie asked in a good mood and with a kind look.

"Humph, humph, stop pretending. You've already started the bloody sacrifice furnace. What else do you want to do except for sacrificing me?" The demon baron had already prepared for the coming death as it didn't think that Zhang Tie could get any benefits from it besides sacrificing it in the furnace.

The fact was that the demon baron was a bit naive. It thought that the status of a divine dominator was Zhang Tie's biggest trump card. He couldn't figure out what Zhang Tie was going to do with him until now. He didn't even understand why Zhang Tie would paralyze it and feed it medicine. Such a figure who went antagonistic against Zhang Tie in such a place was destined to have a tragic outcome.

"Perhaps, you don't believe me; but I really started the bloody sacrifice furnace to save you..." Zhang Tie came to the front of the demon baron's head and squatted down while putting his hand on its head, 'How energetic earth elements! As it has promoted to an

earth knight, it has fully formed its earth chakra. Of course, the contents of earth elements in its chakra could not be matched by that of common black iron knights.'

"Save me?" The demon baron sneered, "Are you kidding me?"

"I'm not kidding you. You will know it right away. As you've already become the fish on the chopping board, do you think it is necessary for me to cheat you..."

The demon baron wanted to say something. However, it suddenly felt a stress on its head while Zhang Tie had already had it stand up by seizing its head like seizing a ball...

After then, Zhang Tie seized the demon baron's head by one hand while supporting its back by the other hand and lifting it up in the air.

Although the demon baron was not light in weight, it was like a straw in Zhang Tie's hands.

Watching Zhang Tie's mystical eye light and the faint grin at his mouth corners, the demon baron suddenly became frightened, "Ah, what are you doing..."

"I'm creating a chance for you to be cured!"

As Zhang Tie replied, he triggered his purgatory samsara method...

All of a sudden, the demon baron felt that his earth chakra was fiercely knocked by a heavy hammer as it changed its face greatly, 'How could a secret method attack knight's chakra?'

The earth chakra rocked once again...

After that, the striking frequency gradually increased while the demon baron's earth chakra rocked in an increasingly higher frequency.

"You're an alchemist monster?"

The demon baron roared out of extreme fear as if its guts cracked

while its face became out of shape. As a noble demon, it finally remembered the human knight who frightened all the demon knights. Its fear didn't fully come from death; but that the alchemist monster would destroy the belief of demon knights besides destroying their flesh.

As for all the demon knights, their lives and everything they owned were gifted by the Demon God. Even if they were dead, all of their belongings would return to Demon God instead of being taken away by others. However, the alchemist monster, the terrifying human knight could refine and devour the most precious chakra of knights. As a result, even if the demon knights were dead, they could not return themselves to the Demon God completely. That was what they feared most.

"I forgot to tell you about that. I'm the apprentice of an alchemist monster!" Zhang Tie smiled as he continued to strike the demon baron's earth chakra...

"Ah..." The demon baron shrieked loudly like a naive maiden being insulted by a group of savages while its miserable shriek resonated around the hall.

As for any demon knight, the purgatory samsara method meant the real purgatory.

...

As earth knights had already formed a complete earth chakra, like concrete being reinforced with steel bars, their earth chakra was much firmer than that of black iron knights.

After being constantly struck by the purgatory samsara method for 4 hours, the demon baron's earth chakra finally collapsed...

As a result, the demon baron spurted out his blood once again before becoming exhausted completely.

After its earth chakra collapsed, its earth elements were melted and broken like ice cubes before being pumped away...

The demon baron's body quivered all over like screening a winnowing fan while Zhang Tie's eyes turned increasingly brighter...

Extremely energetic and purest earth elements surged into Zhang Tie's earth chakra...

Chapter 960: Another Trump Card

It was a bumper harvest and the first time for Zhang Tie to absorb the complete earth chakra of an earth knight. It took him almost 6 hours to absorb 90% of the earth elements of the demon baron's earth chakra.

The poor demon baron passed out once again.

When a knight's chakra was broken, it would suffer a severe strike both physiologically and mentally. Although the strike was not fatal to the demon baron, it had suffered a great loss. Besides its broken limbs, it had become as soft as a noodle.

Zhang Tie loosened his grip, causing the demon baron to fall onto the ground.

Zhang Tie didn't know what secret method did the demon baron cultivate, he felt that its earth chakra was very thick and vigorous which contained so many earth elements. After absorbing almost 90% of the demon baron's earth chakra, Zhang Tie felt that he could at least light 20 scales on his earth chakra.

The space in Zhang Tie's earth chakra had been filled with a lot of earth elements which Zhang Tie had refined and absorbed. Therefore, Zhang Tie felt full. The reason that Zhang Tie left 10% of the demon baron's earth chakra lay in that he felt that the demon baron would recover its earth chakra in an easier way with the remaining 10% of earth elements when accepting the bloody sacrifice.

The gate of the hall had been closed for over 2 days, leaving about 20 hours to the other human knights outside the gate.

'I hope all of them could gain something.'

'This is a rare chance for me. I should never give it up. I could only let my friends leave this pyramid first and explain it to them in the future...'

Thinking this way, Zhang Tie input some more orders into the crystal ball...

Standing in the hall, Zhang Tie looked around this spacious hall and thought for a short while before revealing a faint smile. He then shook his head and caught the demon baron's neck like catching a chick. Closely after that, he disappeared together with the crystal ball out of the void.

The hall recovered tranquility once again, leaving the bloody sacrifice furnace and the blood stains which indicated what happened during the past 2 days.

...

At this moment, the small tree in the middle of the lobby was brilliant and releasing a strong, bizarre fragrance, which filled the air. Undoubtedly, new fruits had come into being.

Especially the bizarre fragrance, which smelt both strange and familiar, impressed Zhang Tie deeply. Zhang Tie had not smelt the same fragrance since he left the Selnes Theater of Operations for so many years.

Zhang Tie immediately caught sight of that bloodline fruit on the small tree from far away.

The bloodline fruit was half red and half black. As a 16-side structure, it was as brilliant as a treasure.

This bloodline fruit was much bigger than the last one that he got in Selnes Theater of Operations.

It was a gift for killing Old Monster Qi.

Zhang Tie couldn't stand to burst out into laughter. When he determined to join this adventure, he had not imagined that he could be the last winner.

"Castle Lord, do you want to enjoy these fruits now? It's indeed a bumper harvest!" Heller asked.

"Not now. I've not recovered my wounds which were caused by Old Monster Qi; additionally, as I've fought the demon knight for almost a day, I have consumed a lot of spiritual energy and am not in a good physical condition. It's not the right moment to take fruits. I want to take a nap and recover my spiritual and physical strength first!" Zhang Tie told Heller after moving his eyes from the small tree.

Heller nodded as he found that Zhang Tie became maturer.

"Oh, how's that corps..."

"As long as Castle Lord needs them, they will sacrifice everything for you!"

"That's fine. I will take a look at them after getting up!" Zhang Tie replied as he walked upstairs towards his bedroom. At the same time, he took out a vial of medium-level recovery medicament and poured it into his mouth...

...

After Zhang Tie returned to his bedroom and fell asleep, Heller entered the underground tunnel from the entrance in the lobby of the palace tree for over 10 minutes before coming to an underground space beneath the hinterland of the immortal mountain.

This underground space was pretty cold. In the beginning, it was used to store flesh of the huge deep-sea monster; however, at this moment, this space was over 100 times bigger than the cold storage warehouse.

The endless soldiers of the demon corps were standing in this space like ice sculptures as if all of their life activities had come to a stop...

Nobody outside Castle of Black Iron could imagine that the super demon corps which had vanished in Waii Subcontinent and was said to have been eliminated by the terrifying full-moons miasma

that raged across the Waii Subcontinent could stay here...

With the arrival of Heller, a part of space remained as cold as before; however, the other part of space gradually recovered to normal temperature while the frost over many soldiers of the super demon corps started to melt...

The frozen soldiers of the super demon corps almost opened their bloody eyes at the same time...

Chapter 961: The Real Knight

3 days soon elapsed, during which period, all the human knights entering the pyramid were breaking the pearls of secret items that they had selected around the clock.

Only a few knights had caught up with the virtual image of the secret item and fixed their pearls of secret items; most of them including Zhang Anguo the grand elder of Tianlu Palace was selecting their targets according to their experience or weird sciolistic "Learning of Secret Items". As for the latter method, the possibility for them to find a silver secret item was pretty low.

In the team of Mountain Lifting Hermit, only 3 members had seen the virtual images of silver secret items, 2 of them were a couple, Lu Zhong Ming and Lin Huanxi, who found a brilliant long hook with cold light. The moment the long hook was waved, the surrounding air would be frozen with a very powerful cold damage.

The weapon long hook was rare among silver secret items. Therefore, it was pretty precious.

The other one who found a silver secret item was Zhao Youxian, a clan elder of Zhao Clan from Military Province. Zhao Youxian's silver secret item was a shield.

If Zhang Tie saw this shield, he must be surprised as it was as same as that he had gained from the demon general.

The team of Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace only gained one silver secret item which was gifted by Zhang Tie to Zhang Shuzhen. Finally, it was found by Zhang Suzhen and her elder brother Zhang Anshi after breaking two pearls of secret items.

It was a longsword. Compared to the long hook gained by the couple, this longsword was dreamlike as it could automatically release four brilliant, powerful birds out of the void.

Given the less population of Old Monster Qi's team, none of them had gained a silver secret item during the past 3 days.

Zhang Tie's friends Gong Ziyao, Zhou Shufan, Filton, Cecilia and Bolam didn't gain anything either.

After entering the Weapons Mountain for 3 days, the team of almost 30 members only gained 3 silver secret items in total, most of them including the grand elder of Tianlu Palace returned in vain.

Silver secret items were especially attractive to knights right because they were hard to get.

After 3 days, at the sight of the battle qi tornado of the grand elder of Zhang Clan, all the human knights gathered at the top of the main peak of the Weapons Mountain and kept their eyes onto the gate of the hall which was still closed.

After 3 days' rest, Mountain Lifting Hermit had recovered his physical strength and battle strength a bit; however, his face still looked as shallow as that of a sick lion. The sorcery bloody-soul driller on guts was extremely insidious, whose damages could not be recovered in only 3-5 days.

Even though Lu Zhongming, Lin Huanxi and Zhao Youxian were unwilling to do that, they still presented their silver secret items for the selection of Mountain Lifting Hermit.

This was an agreement reached between them before they joined the team of Mountain Lifting Hermit. According to the agreement, if Mountain Lifting Hermit didn't gain any space-teleportation equipment or silver secret item, he would have the right to select one from the silver secret items gained by his team members.

At this moment, no matter whose silver secret item did Mountain Lifting Hermit select, the other team members would present many precious earth elements or other treasures to recuperate the loss of that person. It was a relatively fair method just like buying

the entrance ticket of this hieron ruins.

As the most powerful one who had spent most efforts for his teams such as gaining the diamond-shaped key and the one who organized this activity, Mountain Lifting Hermit enjoyed the privilege in the team wherever he was.

If there was a silver secret item in a pearl of a secret item, a colorful light beam would shoot into the sky the moment the last layer of the pearl of the secret item was broken, presenting an abnormal phenomenon, which could never be covered at all. Therefore, in Weapons Mountain, anyone who gained a silver secret would attract a lot of onlookers right away. They could not cover the message that they had gained a silver secret item at all.

When Lu Zhongming, Lin Huanxi, Zhao Youxian, Zhang Shuzhen and Zhang Anshi gained their silver secret items, a lot of people went to watch that with extremely "admiring" looks.

Watching Lu Zhongming, Lin Huanxi and Zhao Youxian presenting their silver secret items to Mountain Lifting Hermit and waiting for the latter's selection, all the others at the top of the main peak of Weapons Mountain moved their eyes onto Mountain Lifting Hermit's face as they were guessing which silver secret item would Mountain Lifting Hermit choose. Both the long hook and the shield were unique, one for strike, the other for defense. It was really difficult for people to guess his choice.

Only after throwing a glance at the two silver secret items, Mountain Lifting Hermit had shaken his head as he said with a disappointed look, "Now that you've gained them, just keep them. As my life has been saved by brother Cui Li at risk of his life, you've already paid off the price for entering the hieron ruins. I would like to give up my right to make a choice!"

Soon after Mountain Lifting Hermit finished his words, the others at present had thrown their admiring eyes onto Mountain Lifting Hermit as they were hailing him inside. They had not

imagined that Mountain Lifting Hermit could be so generous to give up the chance to gain a silver secret item in such a casual way.

Lu Zhongming, Lin Huanxi and Zhao Youxian bowed deeply towards Mountain Lifting Hermit at the same time.

After straightening up, Lu Zhongming watched Mountain Lifting Hermit and said with a solemn look, "Brother Cui Li also saved my wife's life. I've already negotiated with Huanxi, if Mountain Lifting Hermit doesn't take this long hook, we will present it to bother Cui Li so as to extend our sincerity when brother Cui Li leaves the hieron. After all, a silver secret item could never match my wife's life!"

After Lu Zhongming said these words, he exchanged a glance with Lin Huanxi while their eyes contained rich love and privity.

"After brother Cui comes out, he will be the savior of Zhao Clan of Homesick Palace in Military Province; if he needs our help, our Zhao Clan will never say no even at the risk of our lives!" Zhao Youxian also expressed his stance in a muffled voice.

Without Cui Li, Zhao Youxian might not even survive himself this time; not to mention to gain a silver secret item. Therefore, as an elder of Zhao Clan of Homesick Palace in Military Province, Zhao Youxian's decision was reasonable.

...

At this moment, Zhan Anguo the grand elder of Tianlu Palace let out a sigh inside. When Zhang member gained a silver secret item, Zhang Shuzhen told him about the process of the conflict between Cui Li and her. Honestly, if Cui Li really wanted to strive for this silver secret item with Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace, Zhang Clan would definitely lose the oral dispute wherever they were.

"Being righteous and generous. Cui Li is a real hero!"

"Now that all the people have gathered here, it's time for us to leave the hieron. We'd better wait for Cui Li outside the hieron!"

Zhang Anguo told the others calmly.

"Elder Anguo, why not wait for brother Cui Li here?"

"When the gate of the hall was opened, the earth demon knight would definitely not agree to have brother Cui leave him if it saw so many people standing outside the gate in case of being mired in a dilemma. If so, brother Cui would be in trouble. Therefore, besides being useless to brother Cui here, we would even cause him trouble!" Zhang Anguo explained patiently, "If something happened in the 3 days and brother Cui Li had destroyed the crystal ball and died together with the earth demon knight, after a few hours, when the preset time was on due, the hieron would be absolutely closed at once. By then, we would have to die here. Therefore, we'd better wait for brother Cui outside the hieron. If brother Cui could leave out of here safe and sound, we will talk about it later!"

Now that they were useless here and might bring trouble to Cui Li, everybody agreed with Zhang Anguo's suggestion to leave out of here.

...

After reaching an agreement, all of them went down the mountain to leave the heiron.

Compared to when they came here, the temperature in the pyramid had recovered to normal. The knights could move freely. Even though they could not fly, they were still moving as fast as lightning bolts. Only after a short while, they had reached the foot of the Weapons Mountain and passed through the plain and the palace complex.

As they were leaving out of here, when they passed through that lobby with two rows of powerful battle puppets, those battle puppets didn't move. Therefore, they could pass the lobby easily.

After passing the lobby, they stepped onto the spiral steps of the

pyramid and soon reached the top of the pyramid before walking out of the entrance one after another.

Although they had just entered the pyramid for a few days, most of them felt having stayed inside a hundred years.

Before coming here, none of them could imagine that this journey could be so perilous and unpredictable. Besides being traced by an earth demon knight, it was really out of their imaginations that the Old Monster Qi, a team leader of humans was a lackey of demons. The moment they thought that the earth demon knight and Old Monster Qi joined hands to screw them inside, they had felt cold inside.

...

After leaving the pyramid, every one of them just waited at the entrance of the pyramid and expected to see Cui Li walking out of there...

...

However, after a few hours, when it was on due, Cui Li didn't appear; however, the gate of the pyramid suddenly closed.

All the people at present changed their looks at the same time.

Soon after the preset time was on due, the gate of the pyramid closed on time. Didn't it mean that brother Cui Li had destroyed the crystal ball and died together with the earth demon knight?

"Brother Cui Li..." Gong Ziyao dropped off his tears at once when he watched the gate of the pyramid closing up and recalled the moments with Cui Li since he acquainted with him...

Mountain Lifting Hermit's face turned ashy as his lips quivered. Although he wanted to say something, he couldn't. Clenching his fist, he quivered all over...

Lu Zhongming and Lin Huanxi dropped off tears at the same time. Zhang Anguo also let out a long sigh.

The eyes of Filton, Bolam and Cecilia turned red too...

Although they had seen many dead people, this time it was different because Cui Li proposed to sacrifice himself for the lives of all the others.

"Cui Li is the real, bravest knight with knighthood!" Filton heavily punched his own chest with red eyes as he made a military salute towards the gate of the pyramid.

...

All of a sudden, someone burst out into tears as she rushed towards the gate of the pyramid and forcefully thumped the gate of the pyramid like a lunatic.

Her cries sounded pretty heartbreaking. It was as heart-wrenching as a cuckoo's lament. Anyone who listened to it would feel grieved and drop off tears.

It was the young sister Bai Suxian of Zhang Tie...

"Wuh...whu..wuh, you heartless guy! How could you just leave in this way? You've molested me twice and left me alone...how'd I live from then on?"

...

Bai Suxian's sadness was out of everyone's imagination. They didn't even know when Cui Li had conquered this woman's heart at all.

...

Even though the gate of the hieron was already closed, they still had a slim hope and stayed outside the gate one more day, expecting that the gate of the hieron would open once again.

Until 1 day later before the terrifying abyss hurricane sealed this isolated island in the ocean once again, they had to bid a farewell to Cui Li.

After leaving the magma sea and watching the abyss hurricane

reappearing, they finally gave up their last hope of seeing Cui Li coming out of there...

As Old Monster Qi had one key of the gate of the hieron, the key was finally left in the hieron too. Therefore, after the gate of the hieron was closed, it indicated that nobody else would enter it from then on...

...

"Brother Gong, as you're familiar with brother Cui, do you know whether brother Cui has any relatives in Yongzhou Province? If he has, our Zhang Clan of Tianlu Palace would pick his relatives to Tianlu Palace. If brother Cui Li has offsprings, our Tianlu Palace would instruct them seriously for sure..." Zhang Anguo asked Gong Ziyao as he was suspending above the magma sea and watching the abyss hurricane across the magma sea.

Gong Ziyao shook his head, "Brother Cui told me about his family that he was the only kid in his family. He has not got married; additionally, his parents have passed away many years ago. Besides some servants in his old mansion, he didn't have any more relatives!"

The human knights then left here one after another, leaving sighs...

From then on, the name of Cui Li started to spread over the Lion Fortress. Everyone would praise Cui Li as a righteous man!

Chapter 962: Recovery

The powerful recovery effect of his preliminary recovery body plus the vial medium recovery medicament that Zhang Tie had drunk before going to bed enabled Zhang Tie to complete the regeneration of his somata and the recovery of his physical functions.

When in Blackhot City, Zhang Tie had developed a frugal living habit.

Although he had a lot of vials of senior recovery medicaments; as he his wounds could be recovered by medium recovery medicament and preliminary recovery body, Zhang Tie just took one vial of medium recovery medicament instead of a senior one.

As for a knight, a vial of senior recovery medicament was not a big deal. However, Zhang Tie knew that a vial of senior recovery medicament might save one more human life. He still remembered that Grandma Teresa took out a very vial of the most precious all-purpose medicament from a well-preserved box with a solemn look and daubed it onto his wounds in the orphanage of Blackhot City.

Benevolence was priceless——Grandma Teresa told him at that moment.

'I wonder about the current situation of those little guys in the orphanage and Grandma Teresa?'

Perhaps this thought had always hidden deeply in his mind, Zhang Tie who didn't have a dream for a long time dreamed about Grandma Teresa and those kids in the orphanage once again.

In the dream, Grandma Teresa's breasts were still that soft and warm, making him reassured.

After then, fire broke out in the orphanage while numerous grim demon fighters appeared in the dark and charged at barehanded Grandma Teresa and those little guys whose eyes would turn

bright at the sight of rice soup...

Zhang Tie then woke up...

'It was a dream.' Zhang Tie revealed a self-mocking smile before getting up.

In the bedroom of the palace tree, everything was very special. Everything in this bedroom was growing out of the palace tree naturally besides the table clock and the beddings.

The shell-shaped big bed, the peanut shell-shaped bathtub, the waterpipes hiding in the wall, the beehive-shaped cupboard, the tree leaves which covered the window like a curtain. Everything inside was natural and fairytale-like. Any kid living inside would be very thrilled.

When he recalled his three sons, Zhang Tie felt a bit depressed. After then, he cut off these thoughts being irrelevant to the current environment. Being spirited, he went to cleanse himself in the washroom.

After that, he revealed a smile at the tall and stalwart figure in the mirror. He then ran his spiritual energy to recover his original look with constant cracking sounds.

If someone caught sight of this scene, he must widely open his mouth out of amazement as he would think that he had met some bizarre spirit. Because it was completely out of the range of disguising skill. It was a complete transformation from one person to another.

Before leaving the bedroom, Zhang Tie threw another glance at the table clock and knew that the other human knights had already left this pyramid for sure.

Zhang Tie slept for almost 2 days. When he woke up, his wounds had long recovered while his spiritual energy recovered to the best state.

'Perhaps they thought I was dead!'

'I will explain it to them in the future if there's a chance.'

Zhang Tie soon arranged thoughts in order.

...

"Deity Lord..." The moment Zhang Tie walked out of his bedroom, the two girls standing outside his bedroom had lowered their heads and knelt down on the ground in the grandest manner. They even dared not raise their heads.

After Zhang Tie came back, Heller had noticed all the youngsters in the palace tree. Therefore, Zhang Tie's bedroom would be served around the clock.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, the two girls who treated him as a deity quivered all over due to excitement even though they were kneeling down on the ground.

Touching his bald head, honestly, Zhang Tie was really unaccustomed to such a grand etiquette. He felt uneasy all over as if many ants were creeping on his body.

"Erm, no need to kneel down when you see me in the future..."

"Ah?" The two girls raised their heads and threw a glance at Zhang Tie. They then hurriedly lowered their heads in a flurried way; one of them was scared so much that she even cried, "Deity Lord...Deity Lord...are you going to abandon us and deprive our belief?"

"Erm..." Zhang Tie widely opened his mouth as he didn't know what to say. Since he had no experience in worshipping a deity; therefore, he couldn't feel how the worshippers and believers were shocked when a deity told them about this.

Additionally, Zhang Tie felt extremely embarrassed and uneasy about the appellation "Deity Lord". If he were a real deity, how could he still be wanted and couldn't return to his home until now? Is there any deity more miserable than him?

"Deity Lord means that you only need to kneel down in front of him by one knee from now on. Only clergies who were approved by Deity Lord and would like to sacrifice their lives to Deity Lord are qualified to kneel down on the ground created by Deity Lord in front of Deity Lord so that their hearts could stay closer to Deity Lord. As for the higher-level etiquette in which people have to put their heads, hands, feet and chests onto the grounds, nobody is qualified to do that in front of Deity Lord until now..."

Heller dissolved the problem for Zhang Tie at the critical moment. Soon after they heard Heller's explanation, the two girls hurriedly knelt down on the ground by one knee. Zhang Tie then let out a sigh inside and didn't explain any further.

'What is talent?"

"Heller is!"

Zhang Tie had not imagined that such a humble thing to others could indicate his supreme status through Heller's explanation. The humbler they were in front of him, the higher their status was!

What a brainwash!

Heller wove his hands and told the two flurried girls to leave. He then led Zhang Tie to the dining hall for breakfast.

On the way, Zhang Tie asked Heller in a hesitated way, "Erm...Is it a bit excessive?"

"All the human behaviors are neither good or bad. The behavior by touching one's knees with the ground is neither noble nor humble. People feel it is noble or humble because of their own opinions. In this world, the most hypocritical and untrustworthy things are people's opinions and recognition. We found it's ridiculous for a man to wear a skirt now; one day, if the demons dominate humans, in order to mock and make a fool of humans, they might order all the man in the countries being ruled by Three-

eye Association to wear a skirt without an underwear. After hundreds of years later, those men being ruled by demons and Three-eye Association would feel that it's glorious and traditional for men to wear a skirt without an underwear. Will you say that those men are not right in skirts?"

Zhang Tie became speechless about Heller's answer. Zhang Tie knew that he was never as eloquent as Heller.

"After this batch of youngsters leaves, tell those residents to not send more people here. I want the palace tree to be a bit quieter!" Zhang Tie let out a sigh, "Being worshipped by these people like a deity, I almost feel being a bit lunatic. Each time I see them when I come back, I will feel uneasy all over!"

Previously, Zhang Tie wanted those residents to send youngsters here to gain knowledge; however, he underestimated his influence among those people and overestimated his adaptability. Someone would feel funny being worshipped as a deity by people; however, Zhang Tie didn't feel it funny at all. Castle of Black Iron should be where he relaxed himself; whereas, he became intense inside it.

"As you wish, Castle Lord!" Heller answered respectfully, "However, now that Castle Lord has come back, I've arranged those youngsters to meet you after you finish breakfast!"

"Just meet me?"

"Yes, as long as Castle Lord meet those youngsters in the lobby of the palace tree, you would satisfy their biggest hope on the Immortal Mountain."

"Do I need to say something?"

"It depends on you!"

...

Zhang Tie's breakfast was bumper, which included over 10 kinds of fruits, various food and pastries.

The food in Castle of Black Iron was pretty yummy. The aura in Castle of Black Iron was very affluent. The soil inside was very fertilized and clean. The fruits inside Castle of Black Iron were much better than those outside. Additionally, some fruits and food inside had mutated and tasted more delicious. Therefore, Zhang Tie, after sleeping for 2 days, enjoyed a big meal.

It was worth mentioning that those residents in Castle of Black Iron were all those who refused to eat human flesh. After settling down in Castle of Black Iron, although their living materials gradually became affluent, they still felt like vomiting at the sight of flesh due to the dark experience in the Misty Woods. Therefore, besides the warehouse of palace tree which contained flesh, no other flesh could be found in Castle of Black Iron.

Eating those super tasty fruits and various outputs such as grains and drinking sweet and limpid aura mountain spring, Zhang Tie also lost his interest in the flesh after returning to Castle of Black Iron.

Especially the bean curds made of beans, aura mountain spring and fungi on the Immortal Mountain, which was much more delicious than any flesh that Zhang Tie had ever tasted. Zhang Tie spoke high of this food.

After enjoying a tasty breakfast, Zhang Tie met those youngsters.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, all those youngsters quivered all over due to excitement, male or female; some of them even cried. However, Zhang Tie felt his face as stiff as fossils. He felt embarrassed no matter what he would say; therefore, he just became silent.

However, in the eyes of those youngsters, Zhang Tie's performance reflected the majesty and mystery as a deity.

Soon after these youngsters left respectfully, Edward and Aziz had pushed one thing to the front of Zhang Tie like presenting a treasure...

At the sight of that thing, Zhang Tie widely opened his mouth...

Heller dissolved the problem for Zhang Tie at the critical moment. Soon after they heard Heller's explanation, the two girls hurriedly knelt down on the ground by one knee. Zhang Tie then let out a sigh inside and didn't explain any further.

'What is talent?'

"Heller is!"

Zhang Tie had not imagined that such a humble thing to others could indicate his supreme status through Heller's explanation. The humbler they were in front of him, the higher their status was!

What a brainwash!

Heller wove his hands and told the two flurried girls to leave. He then led Zhang Tie to the dining hall for breakfast.

On the way, Zhang Tie asked Heller in a hesitated way, "Erm...Is it a bit excessive?"

"All the human behaviors are neither good or bad. The behavior by touching one's knees with the ground is neither noble nor humble. People feel it is noble or humble because of their own opinions. In this world, the most hypocritical and untrustworthy things are people's opinions and recognition. We found it's ridiculous for a man to wear a skirt now; one day, if the demons dominate humans, in order to mock and make a fool of humans, they might order all the man in the countries being ruled by Three-eye Association to wear a skirt without an underwear. After hundreds of years later, those men being ruled by demons and Three-eye Association would feel that it's glorious and traditional for men to wear a skirt without an underwear. Will you say that those men are not right in skirts?"

Zhang Tie became speechless about Heller's answer. Zhang Tie knew that he was never as eloquent as Heller.

"After this batch of youngsters leaves, tell those residents to not send more people here. I want the palace tree to be a bit quieter!" Zhang Tie let out a sigh, "Being worshipped by these people like a deity, I almost feel being a bit lunatic. Each time I see them when I come back, I will feel uneasy all over!"

Previously, Zhang Tie wanted those residents to send youngsters here to gain knowledge; however, he underestimated his influence among those people and overestimated his adaptability. Someone would feel funny being worshipped as a deity by people; however, Zhang Tie didn't feel it funny at all. Castle of Black Iron should be where he relaxed himself; whereas, he became intense inside it.

"As you wish, Castle Lord!" Heller answered respectfully, "However, now that Castle Lord has come back, I've arranged those youngsters to meet you after you finish breakfast!"

"Just meet me?"

"Yes, as long as Castle Lord meet those youngsters in the lobby of the palace tree, you would satisfy their biggest hope on the Immortal Mountain."

"Do I need to say something?"

"It depends on you!"

...

Zhang Tie's breakfast was bumper, which included over 10 kinds of fruits, various food and pastries.

The food in Castle of Black Iron was pretty yummy. The aura in Castle of Black Iron was very affluent. The soil inside was very fertilized and clean. The fruits inside Castle of Black Iron were much better than those outside. Additionally, some fruits and food inside had mutated and tasted more delicious. Therefore, Zhang Tie, after sleeping for 2 days, enjoyed a big meal.

It was worth mentioning that those residents in Castle of Black Iron were all those who refused to eat human flesh. After settling

down in Castle of Black Iron, although their living materials gradually became affluent, they still felt like vomiting at the sight of flesh due to the dark experience in the Misty Woods. Therefore, besides the warehouse of palace tree which contained flesh, no other flesh could be found in Castle of Black Iron.

Eating those super tasty fruits and various outputs such as grains and drinking sweet and limpid aura mountain spring, Zhang Tie also lost his interest in the flesh after returning to Castle of Black Iron.

Especially the bean curds made of beans, aura mountain spring and fungi on the Immortal Mountain, which was much more delicious than any flesh that Zhang Tie had ever tasted. Zhang Tie spoke high of this food.

After enjoying a tasty breakfast, Zhang Tie met those youngsters.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, all those youngsters quivered all over due to excitement, male or female; some of them even cried. However, Zhang Tie felt his face as stiff as fossils. He felt embarrassed no matter what he would say; therefore, he just became silent.

However, in the eyes of those youngsters, Zhang Tie's performance reflected the majesty and mystery as a deity.

Soon after these youngsters left respectfully, Edward and Aziz had pushed one thing to the front of Zhang Tie like presenting a treasure...

At the sight of that thing, Zhang Tie widely opened his mouth...

Chapter 963: A Big Surprise

Precisely, it was the demon baron being bound to a lot of machines.

At first glance, it was like a complex wheelchair, an operating table or a recreational facility in the playground. The demon baron's limbs were fixed on a movable metal support; something like snaffle was inserted into its mouth. As a result, the demon baron couldn't speak.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, although it couldn't speak, it widely opened its eyes like seeing a ghost.

Only after throwing a glance at the demon baron, Zhang Tie had known what it was thinking about.

The demon baron must have a lot of questions about this space of Castle of Black Iron, these people beside Zhang Tie and the marvelous palace tree. At this moment, it might wonder where it was, how long had passed and why it fell into the hands of strangers.

'Whatever, I have no time to explain all this to it. After a couple of days, I will take it to the hall for a bloody sacrifice. I'm afraid that it would be more flurried by then.'

Zhang Tie had already recovered his original look which demon baron had not seen before. Watching this strange face, the demon baron struggled for a short while as if it wanted to say something; however, Zhang Tie ignored that.

"Castle Lord, what do you think about this device?" Edward asked out of excitement.

"Erm..this one...is not bad. It looks good. But is it a bit complex?" Zhang Tie asked as he rubbed his face.

"It's not complex, it's not complex, look..." Edward explained as he spoke to Zhang Tie.

As Edward casually moved an operating arm on the wheelchair, the demon baron involuntarily stood up with the help of the metal skeleton and metal support. Edward continued to operate it; the demon baron then started to walk with the movable support.

The demon baron might have never imagined that it could be casually operated by people. It threw a fierce and brutal glance at Edward. Although it wanted to struggle, it had no strength at all.

"I named this system as exoskeleton semi-automatic prisoning cabin. It's made of super powerful alloy. Even an earth knight with full battle strength could not damage it in a short while. Due to this system, this demon knight would be harmless as its action capability was forbidden. Additionally, it could be forced to move with the operation of external force, namely, doing exercise. We could also have it make various postures to meet our demands, such as squatting down, sitting or standing..."

With the operation of Edward, the demon baron made various postures like a marionette. Some postures were even hilarious, making Zhang Tie speechless. 'Such a ruthless earth demon knight deteriorated into a marionette in the hands of Edward, Agan and Aziz. How poor it is! However, now that it has fallen into my hand, it's destined to have a poor fate. I should not sympathize with any demon.'

"I posed the idea of exoskeleton semi-automatic prisoning cabin. Edward made it under my supervision. Through proper movement, this injured beast would heal its wounds and recover its physical functions at a faster speed. We can occasionally push it to breathe fresh air for the sake of long-time breeding..." Aziz hurriedly claimed merit for himself.

'Breeding?'

Hearing this word, the demon baron became thrilled once again; however, it was useless.

"Not bad, not bad!" Zhang Tie had to praise their perfect work.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that they could build such an auxiliary instrument for this demon baron. Although it was complex, it was very useful.

After hearing Zhang Tie's performance, Edward's and Aziz's faces turned bright as their life philosophy was to serve Zhang Tie.

"Have you thought about preventing it from committing suicide by breaking its own heart meridian?" Zhang Tie posed a question.

Edward revealed a pleasant smile as he pulled up the lower hem of the demon baron's gown, revealing its lower abdomen, "Look, Castle Lord..."

In order to cover the demon baron's butt, they wore a cloth for the demon baron after fiddling with its full body, which was the only "right" that the demon baron could enjoy at this moment...

The injury near the qi sea at the lower abdomen of the demon baron which was penetrated through by the abyss battle spear two days ago had been cured. Additionally, the injury was beset with a metal patch. There was a plug on the patch just like a bottle stopper.

They made a special surgery for this demon.

Zhang Tie prodded the metal bottle stopper on the patch and found it was movable like a piston of a steam engine.

Marvelous!

It was equal to that the qi sea at the demon baron's lower abdomen was always leaking. Therefore, it could not trigger its battle qi at all. Precisely, its physical structure had been destroyed, causing it unable to trigger its battle qi to commit suicide by breaking its own heart meridian.

The qi sea was a special energy structure. Like surging points over one's body, qi sea could not be found physiologically on anatomy; however, it indeed existed; additionally, it attached to a specific physiological structure. Being similar to that a person

would never light his surging points after his hands were chopped off, if a person's lower abdomen where the qi sea existed in was penetrated through, he could not trigger his battle qi that formed in the qi sea either.

Therefore, the earth demon knight completely deteriorated into a marionette being fiddled with by others.

"Where's Agan?"

"Agan is preparing for an exclusive cell for this guy in the dungeon of the palace tree. That cell is firm and it could help it recover..."

Zhang Tie nodded, "Thanks for your hard work. I will use it after a couple of days. You can take it away now..."

"Yes, sir, Castle Lord!"

With the demon baron's lament and resent, Edward and Aziz pushed it away from the lobby of the palace tree jubilantly.

...

"This guy has not seen light for two days, we should push it outside the palace tree to breath fresh air so that it could recover a bit faster and Castle Lord would better use it!" Aziz told Edward as they walked.

"Where?"

"How about the bank of the pool near the small waterfall. It's abundant in visible light and moisture in the air, which are beneficial to its soma!"

"Are we walking a dog?"

"Castle Lord's thing should be a bit more advanced than a dog anyway!"

When they talked, they gradually left Zhang Tie's vision.

...

Watching Edward and Aziz leaving, Zhang Tie smiled and shook his head. After that, he walked towards the small tree.

The small tree was covered with various fruits.

This was a big harvest.

When Old Monster Qi was alive, he didn't create any value for Zhang Tie. His complete earth chakra had been wasted too. However, when he was dead, Zhang Tie made a bumper harvest.

Besides the most precious bloodline fruit, there was also an extremely brilliant fruit of brilliance and a fruit of judgment.

Additionally, the fruits of redemption from the gratitude of gulf shrimps and hairy shellfish were also swaying on the small tree. What made Zhang Tie a bit amazed were the three fruits of redemption from golden uangs which had not appeared for such a long time. It indicated that Paul had found the channel to purchase golden uangs. What a good news!

Of course, there were always leakless fruits.

It took Zhang Tie almost 1 week to digest these fruits.

The fruits of brilliance which contained the full spiritual energy of Old Monster Qi was a big tonic. After taking it, Zhang Tie's spiritual energy increased by 30%.

After taking that bloodline fruit, Zhang Tie increased 1784 points of bloodline energy.

An earth knight's death could really bring him a great achievement. Zhang Tie remembered that when he killed that three-eye knight by accident in Selnes Theater of Operations, his first bloodline fruit only contained 361 points of bloodline energy. This time, after killing an earth knight, he gained 5 times more bloodline energy points which could be used to trigger ancestral bloodlines. This really drove Zhang Tie ecstatic as if he had picked up a treasure.

There were three fruits of judgment.

A fruit of judgment evolved Zhang Tie's super rapid moving skill into master-level rapid moving skill. With the effect of master-level rapid moving skill, Zhang Tie's flight speed increased by 10%. With the second fruit of judgment, Zhang Tie's hiding skill promoted to master-level too. With the effect of master-level hiding skill, Zhang Tie could not only hide his qi and integrate himself with the surrounding environment through mimicry, but also control the properties and intensity of his qi freely in an all-round manner. Additionally, the effect of the master-level hiding skill would not decline even in movement.

What amazed Zhang Tie most was the third fruit of judgment, which was a wholly new one. It contained a new skill that Zhang Tie had not imagined——preliminary mirror separation...

Chapter 964: Starting the Bloody Sacrifice Furnace Once Again

With the preliminary mirror separation skill, Zhang Tie could have a virtual body in a short period.

Of course, the so-called mirror separation was not the real incarnation concerning the "Great Wilderness Sutra". It was a mirror image which had some features of Zhang Tie's original body. The so-called mirror image was like an inverted image in the mirror. Of course, it was a false appearance. However, this false appearance could own some of Zhang Tie's abilities in a short period.

God's rune skill——mirror separation skill!

Level——Preliminary.

The currently available quantity of mirror images/maximal storage quantity——1/3.

The duration of mirror image——1 hour.

The features of mirror image——In 1 hour, the mirror image would maintain the speed of the original body. Besides, its battle strength, vitality and defensive power could reach LV 10 of its original body. However, it could not use the special skills of its original body. Even though its original body has triggered the body-changing immortal bloodline, its physical features refer to the physical features of its original body.

This was the introduction of the mirror separation skill in Zhang Tie's mind.

From its introduction, Zhang Tie knew that the so-called mirror separation skill was not for battle. Because powerhouses at knight level could ignore the battle strength of LV 10 fighters. The biggest effect of mirror separation skill was that it could be used to entice Zhang Tie's enemy for the sake of Zhang Tie's escape or

concealment at the critical moment or substitute Zhang Tie for doing something dangerous in certain environments. Under such circumstances, mirror image was definitely a sharp weapon for Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie became ecstatic.

A few days ago, he was admiring the earth demon knight's weird hiding and separation skill, which made the two earth human knights flurried and even caused Zhang Tie a great loss. Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could master the similar mirror separation skill. By contrast, undoubtedly his mirror separation skill was much more advanced than that of the demon baron.

...

After taking these fruits, Zhang Tie increased his potential battle strength a lot.

Besides leakless fruits, fruits of redemption and fruits of brilliance, the other fruits on the small tree would instantly take effect the moment they were eaten. As for the bloodline fruit, after taking it, Zhang Tie didn't trigger his ancestral bloodlines with the 1784 points of bloodline energy for the time being.

Zhang Tie thought that he should make a good plan on triggering his ancestral bloodlines. After all, he had enough time to do that. But not now, as he had a lot of things to deal with.

It took Zhang Tie 1 week to digest all the fruits. After that, it took him another 3 days to convert the earth elements that he had absorbed from the demon baron's earth chakra into a part of his own earth chakra.

Finally, 90% of the total earth elements of the earth chakra of the demon baron lit 21 scales of Zhang Tie's earth chakra. If all the earth elements of the earth chakra of the demon baron were absorbed by Zhang Tie, they could light 23 more scales of Zhang Tie's earth chakra. That was to say, Zhang Tie's Roc King Sutra

required over 16 times more earth elements than that required by the cultivation method of the earth demon knight.

It took Zhang Tie totally 10 days to digest those fruits and converted those earth elements of the demon baron.

On the 11th day, Zhang Tie left Castle of Black after making all the preparations and returned to the hall of the hieron in the pyramid.

...

Zhang Tie reappeared in the hall together with the crystal ball which was following him up like a pet under the control of his spiritual energy as a divine dominator.

Zhang Tie had left this place for 13 days. The bloody sacrifice furnace had already closed up automatically. The hall looked empty and pretty deserted.

After looking around the hall, Zhang Tie didn't go to open the bloody sacrifice furnace right away; instead, he touched the crystal ball to open the gate and recover the temperature and air flow in the pyramid.

When he put his hand on the crystal ball, he had known that he was the only one in the pyramid. All the others had left 10 days ago. Zhang Tie tried to sense the tracing feathers and confirmed that all the human knights had already left the island. Therefore, this place became completely tranquil.

The magma sea must have been covered by the terrifying abyss hurricane. Even earth knights would have a great difficulty in entering it, not to mention those weaker ones.

'They might be thinking about perishing together with the demon baron, I wonder whether the group of Gong Ziyao has gained something.'

Thinking about this, Zhang Tie leisurely walked out of the gate of the hall. Standing on the top of the main peak of the Weapons

Mountain, Zhang Tie looked at the scenery below.

The middle part of the Weapons Mountain was still enshrouding with mist. These days, in order to fabricate a "false phenomenon" that he had perished together with the demon baron, Zhang Tie had input an order to the pyramid through the crystal ball—— 3 days later, the gate of the hieron would close up; at the same time, the temperature in the pyramid would slowly drop to its lowest limit while the entire space of the pyramid would be vacuum.

Zhang Tie was concerned that someone was still hiding here, therefore, he decided to frighten them if there really was.

3 days after he closed the gate of the hall, the temperature in the pyramid dropped abruptly while the air supply was reduced. Even earth knights could not stay here for too long, not to mention others.

When Zhang Tie walked out of the gate of the hall, the entire pyramid had gradually recovered to normal temperature while the sufficient air flow caused the mists and clouds to roll over the Weapons Mountain once again. Among the surging clouds and mists, Zhang Tie could occasionally see colorful lights flashing by, which were virtual images of secret items on the Weapons Mountain.

Watching the scenery below and sensing that the entire pyramid had recovered its vitality, Zhang Tie felt pretty pleasant.

The colorful lights flashing by the mists and clouds made Zhang Tie's heart pound as he almost couldn't wait to catch up with them. However, when he remembered what he was going to do, Zhang Tie yielded to the impulse.

'The coming days will be long, I will have a lot of time to do that.'

After standing on the top of the main peak for a short while, Zhang Tie returned to the hall. Like how he did the last time, he started the bloody sacrifice furnace by dropping his blood onto the

altar...

After that, Zhang Tie ran his spiritual energy and teleported the demon baron onto the altar while demon fighters constantly appeared in the hall in terms of teams...

Chapter 965: You Were that Bear

After reappearing on the altar in the hall, the demon baron felt empty for a few seconds. Closely after that, it realized that it had teleported from one space to another; therefore, it started to struggle and twist in the exoskeleton semi-automatic prisoning cabin.

After its qi sea was broken, it could not trigger its battle qi; additionally, the tendons and bones on its limbs were all damaged. Therefore, the demon baron could only twist its body. As its main body, shoulders, waist and neck were all fixed with metal shackles, how could its weak strength by twisting its body could destroy this set of equipment which was delicately prepared for it by Edward. This set of equipment could even lock up a lion, not to mention a cat. Therefore, his struggles and twists were useless like an ant trying to shake a giant tree.

Zhang Tie then teleported fighters of the super demon corps whose level ranged from LV 9 to LV 15 one team after another from Castle of Black Iron into the hall. In tidy footsteps, the fighters stood into rows of teams in the spacious hall.

When he teleported over 1,800 demon fighters from Castle of Black Iron into the hall, Zhang Tie stopped and turned around to watch the demon baron who was still twisting its body painfully like a worm.

The demon baron widely opened its bloody eyes and goggled at Zhang Tie and the demon fighters which were constantly appearing in the hall.

What it saw shocked it too much. As for those who saw such a scene for the first time, it was absolutely an immortal manifestation.

"Wuh wuh wuh wuh..." As a part of "snaffle" deepened into the demon baron's mouth, it could not speak; instead, it could only

utter weird voices while drooling.

An earth demon knight who could dominate a subcontinent deteriorated into such a poor look.

Zhang Tie revealed a sneer. Of course, he would not sympathize with a demon knight. However, he realized that the demon baron wanted to say something; therefore, he ran his spiritual energy to open the metal stopper on the mouth of the demon baron...

"Who are you...who the hell are you..." The demon baron exerted its full strength to roar.

It had been wanting to roar over 10 days ago.

"Hehehe, quiet. Nobody cares about you no matter how much you scream!" Zhang Tie sneered, "If you're finished, you can shut up now!"

Closely after Zhang Tie's words, the metal stopper automatically floated up and was going to close up the mouth of the demon baron once again.

"What do you want...what do you want to do with me..."

The demon baron uttered the second question.

Perhaps it had been silent for so long, the moment it got a chance to speak, it would repeat it. Zhang Tie noticed this detail as he couldn't help bursting out into laughter, "Have you heard about taking gall from a living bear? This was the cruelest thing that humans did to animals before the Catastrophe. I could tell you that from today on you're my living bear while your gall is your earth chakra..."

Before the demon baron said anything more, the metal stopper had closed up the demon baron's mouth, causing it to struggle helplessly.

It was a very cruel behavior to take gall from a living bear. Zhang Tie browsed the relevant passages and pictures in Hidden Dragon

Island. Some bears couldn't stand being a gall supply machine; therefore, they kept scratching their bellies and chests to commit suicide. Some female bears even killed their babies as they didn't want their babies to live the same miserable life...

In the pictures, those living bears being used for supplying gall gazed at the visitors with despairing tears. Even hard-hearted people would feel sad at the sight of them.

If Zhang Tie was facing a real bear or another animal, he would never mistreat this animal in such a brutal way. However, it was different for a demon. If demons won the holy war, all the humans would deteriorate into the "live bears" of demons. The tens of millions of bloody slaves in the ruling area of Three-eye Association were the "living bears" being used for supply blood by demons and Three-eye Association. An eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth, Zhang Tie didn't feel guilty about doing this to the demons at all.

...

"I would like to sacrifice enough lives and blood for recovering the severely wounded earth chakra of the demon on the altar."

After putting the demon baron onto the middle of the altar, Zhang Tie left there as he raised his head to communicate with the joss using his awareness.

The giant joss overlooked the altar while the eye in the middle of its forehead gradually turned bright while releasing a luster, covering the demon baron.

"There are many wounds on the demon baron, are you sure to only recover its earth chakra this time?"

A spiritual wave appeared in Zhang Tie's mind.

"Yes, only recover its earth chakra, ignore the other injuries on it!"

"Fine, only recover its earth chakra, ignore the other injuries.

The effect of its recovery depends on the quality of the bloody sacrifice. When the bloody sacrifice stops, the effect of the recovery will stop!"

...

At this moment, Zhang Tie confirmed that this hall was not consecrating a deity, but this joss; precisely, the intricate super machine in front of him.

Since the beginning, Zhang Tie didn't feel that there was any relation between this joss's ability and the fantastic deity. All the secrets lay in the body of the joss. This joss was the fruit of a far-ancient civilization, which could be judged from the intricate runes on the bloody sacrifice furnace and the altar.

This joss was a machine which could convert the energy and vitality between different lives.

Additionally, a few halls like this one had been discovered in the earth realm. This might be the second bloody sacrifice hall besides the bloody soul temple. Therefore, people didn't know too much about such a hall, neither did they know that there was such a set of machine in it.

Without the experience in Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie might be frightened by what happened in front of him and would attribute everything he saw to deities and ghosts which were always regarded as a superstition by people. However, with Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie found that the communication between him and the joss was like that between him and Castle of Black Iron. Even the "frequencies" in spiritual communications were similar to each other. In the words of human civilizations before the Catastrophe—there was a very advanced artificial intelligence which was still working until today in Castle of Black Iron and this joss. This artificial intelligence could communicate with the outside world with spiritual energy as the media while the blood that the communicator dropped onto the altar could help the

artificial intelligence to identify the identity of the communicator.

Before integrating with Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie also dropped a drop of blood onto it by mistake.

...

After communicating with the joss, Zhang Tie wove his hand while the fighters of super demon corps which had long been waiting in the hall queued up and jumped into the black flames of the bloody sacrifice furnace voluntarily one after another.

The bloody sacrifice furnace was like a black hole with black flames which constantly devoured demon fighters.

When the first demon fighter jumped into the bloody sacrifice furnace, it instantly burned up in the black flames and disappeared in the blink of an eye...

As the demon fighters jumped into the bloody sacrifice furnace one after another voluntarily and "dauntlessly", the eye in the middle of the forehead of the giant joss gradually glowed dazzlingly. The bloody glow slowly covered the demon knight on the altar, causing Zhang Tie unable to see clearly what happened in the glow. He could only sense the powerful vitality and waves from the glow.

The bloody sacrifice furnace was like a gully which could never be filled. No matter how many demon fighters jumped in, it could always hold them.

Watching such a stream-lined sacrificial offering, even Zhang Tie's face turned a bit pale as his heart twitched a couple of times.

Demon fighters died one after another. Zhang Tie could only grit his teeth to teleport demon fighters out of Castle of Black Iron constantly.

100...200...500...1,000...1,500...2,000...2417...

After 4 hours, Zhang Tie's forehead oozed sweat...

'F*ck, what if the demon baron's earth chakra could not be recovered at the cost of all the demon fighters of the super demon corps? What the hell?'

Zhang Tie swore inside...

Finally, when the 2417th demon fighters jumped into the bloody sacrifice furnace, the glow over the altar declined to be a slim green light beam. After staying on the chest of the demon baron for a few seconds, the slim green light beam disappeared. Zhang Tie then raised his hand to stop the rest of demon fighters from jumping into the bloody sacrifice furnace.

In the entire hall, besides that widely opened bloody sacrifice furnace and the silent demon fighters, it seemed that nothing had happened here. However, 2417 demon fighters above LV 9 who could overthrow a country had disappeared like a broken air bubble, leaving no trace at all.

The bloody sacrifice rite was icy and cruel.

At this moment, a spiritual wave appeared in Zhang Tie's mind sea—"The earth chakra of the demon baron on the altar has been healed. Due to the particularity of the chakra, it would fully recover in 1 month!"

After sending such a message to Zhang Tie, the glow in the eye in the middle of the forehead of the joss completely faded away...

Zhang Tie walked towards the altar. Under the quivering and terrifying eye light of the demon baron, he stretched out his hand and touched the demon baron's head to seriously sense the current situation of its earth chakra.

The 90% of earth chakra which had been absorbed by Zhang Tie had been healed; however, its earth chakra had not fully come into being although a mysterious and complete halos of earth chakra had appeared while tremendous earth elements were pouring out of the halos out of the void and gradually mending the earth

chakra of the demon baron...

This process would last for a month...

It meant that Zhang Tie could only take the "gall" of the demon baron 1 time a month. Plus the interval for digestion, Zhang Tie could promote to an earth knight after offering bloody sacrifice to the joss 15 times in 2 years.

It was the first time for Zhang Tie to sense the earth knight level which looked unreachable being so close to him...

Chapter 966: Zhang Tie's Playground

Time flew by when Zhang Tie was in the pyramid alone.

As for commoners, it might be too much to take "bear's gall" once a month, except for Zhang Tie.

As for a person who could stay 15 years alone in an extremely dull environment, this pyramid was completely a colorful luxurious playground.

It became a private luxurious playground of Zhang Tie.

Regardless of others' opinions, at least Zhang Tie treated this place as a luxurious playground.

In each interval after he finished his bloody sacrifice and absorbed the recovered earth chakra of the demon baron, Zhang Tie had a lot of things to do.

As he controlled the hub of the hieron, the lobby which was covered with knight-level battle puppets became Zhang Tie's favorite place. This lobby also compensated for the biggest regret of Zhang Tie since he promoted to a black iron knight——lacking training partners.

As for Zhang Tie who had been used to trouble-reappearance situations, this was barely difficult or painful.

Before promoting to a knight, Zhang Tie always killed demons and mutated beasts in trouble-reappearance situations so as to constantly improve his battle skills. Each time, he could gain the harshest practice in the bloodiest and most realistic environment with the best training partners. It could be said that Zhang Tie couldn't have become so powerful without the simulated combats with demons and mutated beasts in trouble-reappearance situations.

However, after promoting to a knight, Zhang Tie's heyday in trouble-reappearance situations finally came to an end.

Due to an incomprehensible reason, the Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree could not produce any fruits being related to demon knights. Under this circumstance, by killing demon knights, he would not gain any trouble-reappearance fruits. Additionally, since he promoted to a knight, Zhang Tie had not killed any knight-level mutated beast on the earth surface. As a result, his training partners in the trouble-reappearance situation deteriorated into weaker soldiers.

As a knight, it was meaningless for him to fight those weak soldiers below knight-level except for consuming his battle qi.

Therefore, after promoting to a knight, Zhang Tie barely entered trouble-reappearance situations given its poor effect in improving his battle strength.

With the manipulation of the crystal ball, Zhang Tie could freely activate those battle puppets in the lobby. Therefore, the lobby became another trouble-reappearance situation in the reality.

Through the crystal ball, Zhang Tie could freely activate battle puppets as many as possible, one or two. However, Zhang Tie made an extremely mad choice——each time he entered the lobby, he would activate all the battle puppets at the same time. As a result, he would be beset by a lot of knight-level battle puppets.

Such a choice was extremely mad even for a real earth knight, not to mention a black iron knight. However, Zhang Tie did it.

As Zhang Tie could stop their strikes at any time and had a strong anti-striking ability, plus his preliminary recovery body, even though he was faintly injured, he would recover in a couple of days. It was no big deal. What was more important was that his protective battle qi could pass the shocks from the endless strikes onto Zhang Tie's body. It was the best catalyzer of iron-body fruits.

Under such an extreme circumstance, Zhang Tie could practice his battle skills, improving his battle strength and taking iron-body fruits after each practice. Why not do it? Compared to the benefits,

being daily exhausted and suffering minor injuries were no big deal.

With so many battle puppets as his training partners, Zhang Tie's battle skills and anti-striking ability almost improved everyday; especially the battle skills of the "Fire Dragon Sutra" whose essence was gradually mastered by Zhang Tie.

After finishing the first bloody sacrifice, Zhang Tie absorbed the earth chakra of the demon baron for the second time and advanced to 2 changes black iron realm at once.

When Zhang Tie lit the 72nd scale of his earth chakra, as he had imagined, the king roc sutra brought him another all-around improvement. As a result, Zhang Tie's abilities surged by 10% in all aspects, which indicated that Zhang Tie's battle strength had reached a new stage.

What a terrifying cultivation speed!

As for the demon baron, after its earth chakra was destroyed and absorbed by Zhang Tie in a few days, it recovered its earth chakra through bloody sacrifice rite under the control of Zhang Tie.

From then on, the demon baron officially entered the hopeless yet painful circulation of "taking gall from a living bear".

When Zhang Tie was a 1 change black iron knight, he could stand about 4 hours in the lobby while being constantly besieged by so many knight-level battle puppets; he could make increasingly breakthroughs and stand a few more minutes day after day. However, after promoting to 2 changes black iron realm, Zhang Tie could stand over 5 hours in the lobby at once.

During the period when Zhang Tie stayed in the pyramid, he spent most of his time in fighting those battle puppets in the lobby. Besides exhaustive battle everyday, Zhang Tie would search over those rooms in the palace complex one after another leisurely like seeking for treasures in a maze.

When he came here for the first time, Zhang Tie didn't pay much attention to those rooms due to limited time; however, now, he had enough time; therefore, Zhang Tie would search one or two rooms a day when he was free. At such a frequency, he could search over 60 rooms in a month, which was a small part of the palace complex.

Actually, although many rooms in the palace complex had been searched over without leaving any valuables, Zhang Tie still found some bizarre items in some rooms where there were puppet guardians and had not been searched. He then teleported all of these items into Castle of Black Iron...

In the eyes of a master artisan, even though those items didn't have practical functions, they were at least priceless art treasures in far-ancient times; especially the workmanship and raw materials of those items, which were utterly different than that in this age and were out of Zhang Tie's knowledge. Any of these items might indicate enormous wealth for commoners. They were top antiques. As for Zhang Tie who used to be frugal, if not take such enormous wealth by hand, he was committing a crime.

It was worth mentioning that Zhang Tie spared some time to sort and count those items in the Xuanwu Secret Warehouse of Bloody Soul Temple. Besides gold, silver and jewelry, there were also many earth elements and water elements inside it. Most of them were Old Monster Qi's vials of medicaments; especially those in the 40-50 terrines, which was a terrifying bloody soul poison being formulated according to the secret method in Bloody Soul Temple. Any terrine of the bloody soul poison could deteriorate a Class A city in Taixia Country into a barren land. Old Monster Qi prepared so many terrines of bloody soul poison over the past years definitely out of malicious intentions.

At the sight of those items, Zhang Tie sighed that he really killed Old Monster Qi timely. If Old Monster Qi used the bloody soul poison, it would definitely cause a disaster across Taixia Country at

the cost of numerous lives.

Additionally, Zhang Tie saw the real complete version of "soul forbidden skill" of bloody soul temple in the jade box of the Xuanxu Secret Warehouse. By contrast, the version that Zhang Tie gained in Waii subcontinent only contained 1/2 of the total contents of the real complete version. The complete version of "soul forbidden skill" included more secret methods of bloody soul temple such as a precious secret method called "blood and spiritual energy cultivation sutra" and the manufacturing methods of insidious weapons such as bloody soul driller on guts, bloody soul poison and various poisons. The complete version of "soul forbidden skill" was almost like a classic of poisons. Most of the manufacturing methods and usages in this book were concerned with the blood and spiritual energy of animals and humans. It was a bizarre yet extremely powerful book.

Zhang Tie guessed that perhaps the source of the "soul forbidden skill" that he gained in Waii Subcontinent was in the hand of Old Monster Qi. Besides this real complete version, all the other versions of "soul forbidden skill" were a part of duplicates of this book. The real version was always in the hand of Old Monster Qi. Because Old Monster Qi was a member of Three-eye Association, the duplicates of the complete version of "soul forbidden skill" could appear in other Three-eye Association clans.

The complete version of "soul forbidden skill" was very precious. Because many secret methods in this book could be used to screw knights. Although those secret methods in the "soul forbidden skill" that Zhang Tie cultivated didn't have mistakes, through comparison, Zhang Tie found that many key contents had been deleted in his version. It seemed that those who duplicated the secret methods held back a trick or two.

Even Old Monster Qi might not have imagined that his orthodox "soul forbidden skill" could finally be defeated by Zhang Tie who cultivated the pirated version. As a result, Old Monster Qi's

spiritual energy was devoured by the secret method, causing him to be easily killed by a black iron knight.

Besides, Zhang Tie aimed at those pearls of secret items on the Weapons Mountain...

Zhang Tie spent over 2 months to search over those rooms in the palace complex. After that, besides improving his battle strength in the lobby, Zhang Tie spent most of his time in seeking for treasures over the Weapons Mountain, which was a real treasure vault...

Now that he had entered the treasure mountain, how could he just return empty-handed?

Chapter 967: Battle Wolf

In Hua legends, there were always such plots——A marvelous sharp weapon was thrown into a well. Many years later, it suddenly turned into light or a dragon and flew away; After defeating some fierce beasts or animals, unrivaled figures gained marvelous sharp weapons.

There were so many similar legends. Zhang Tie had heard about them from his parents or Donder when he was young in Blackhot City. Many similar legends were even recorded in ancient Hua classics.

Take this story in the "History of the Jin Dynasty" as an instance: Zhang Hua saw a sword qi in Fengcheng City; he then promoted Lei Huan as the mayor of Fengcheng City. Lei Huan excavated two swords, one for Zhang Hua, the other for himself. After Zhang Hua passed away, Lei Huan carried the two swords with him. When he was passing the Yanpingjin Lake, the two swords sprung out of his waist sides and fell into the lake. Closely after that, they turned into 2 dragons and disappeared into the lake.

People even made a poem for this event as a memory——Two dragon swords were like snowflake and lotus flower; they could only stay with each other for the time being when they were swords; however, when they became dragons, they would reunite forever.

Zhang Tie remembered this story clearly because of Zhang Hua, one of the main character in this story, who was also an ancestor of Zhang Clan thousands of years ago.

Besides, Zhang Tie remembered another story: in ancient times, an unrivaled general deepened into the mountain to learn battle skills when he was young. He yielded a huge boa in a mountain cave, which then became a long spear. Finally, the famous general conquered the world with that long spear and made illustrious

military exploits for Hua people.

When Zhang Tie heard these stories for the first time, he thought they were just legends; however, after coming to the pyramid and witnessing the miraculous silver secret items and the virtual images of secret items, he started to consider that those Hua legends might be the process of how ancient Hua people gained silver secret items.

Those dragons, boas, animals or fierce beasts were all virtual images of silver secret items. The processes that those ancient Hua people gained miraculous sharp weapons were similar to that of pursuing silver secret items—sword qi, excavation, mountain cave—all these were classic and realistic elements.

Such a discovery drove Zhang Tie a bit thrilled. Zhang Tie faintly felt that some secrets about Hua history might be contained in those allusions and legends such as giants Ju Wuba and Weng Zhong becoming Hua generals and weapons becoming animals. The war between Hua people and demons and demons' agents among people might have been undergoing since far-ancient time.

Facing the weapons mountain, being stimulated by these legends, Zhang Tie's heart pounded.

Besides daily combat with those battle puppets in the lobby, Zhang Tie would spare some time to take a look in the Weapons Mountain after recovering his body.

It was not that easy for him to gain a silver secret item.

It took nearly 30 human knights 3 days to merely gain 3 silver secret items. On average, it might take a knight 30 days' endless work to gain a silver secret item...

Additionally, as many silver secret items had been taken away by people, very few silver secret items were left on the Weapons Mountain. It might take him a long time to gain a silver secret item. If all the silver secret items had been taken away, Zhang Tie

would not gain one silver secret item anymore no matter how long he would spend in finding them.

Of course, Zhang Tie would not just seek for silver secret items over the Weapons Mountain during the intervals that the demon baron recovered its earth chakra. Even though Zhang Tie was longing for a silver secret item, he knew that he should depend on himself more than an auxiliary weapon. Actually, silver secret item was just an auxiliary weapon which could improve a knight's battle strength; even alter the battle situation in many cases. However, what counted most was the knight's own battle strength.

Therefore, Zhang Tie would fight those undying battle puppets in the lobby everyday until he was exhausted, his protective battle qi collapsed, even with some wounds. If not having fought those battle puppets, Zhang Tie would never go to the Weapons Mountain on that day.

In this pyramid, there were three valuable places: first, the bloody sacrifice hall, where Zhang Tie could form his earth chakra by taking gall from a living bear; second, the lobby, where Zhang Tie could improve his battle skills and battle strength rapidly; third, the Weapons Mountain where Zhang Tie could gain silver secret items.

In the first 3 months since Zhang Tie entered the pyramid, Zhang Tie had seen some virtual images of silver secret items in the far; pitifully, the virtual images of silver secret items flew too fast; plus the long distance, even though Zhang Tie had activated his Kuafu bloodline, he was still much slower than them. The virtual images would always disappear in front of Zhang Tie, causing him helpless.

Finally, in the 4th month since he entered the pyramid, after Zhang Tie promoted to 3 changes black iron realm, he finally gained his first silver secret item in Weapons Mountain.

This time, that virtual image of the silver secret item was not far

from him. Zhang Tie became spirited as he hurriedly chased after it at his full efforts. Finally, he saw a fierce beast which was similar to a wild wolf yet bigger than a wild wolf. With glow, after flying over some hillsides, it finally lurked in a pearl of the secret item in a cluster of crystals.

Zhang Tie became thrilled.

Now that he had seen where it lurked in, of course, he would not give it up.

In the next 2 days, Zhang Tie exerted his full efforts to break that pearl of the secret item and gained his first silver secret item on the Weapons Mountain. He didn't even fight those battle puppets in the lobby during this period.

When the inner layer of the pearl of a secret item was exposed, a glow rushed into the sky from the core of the pearl of the secret item, which looked like a bizarre placenta.

After breaking the inner layer, Zhang Tie saw the virtual image of the pearl of a secret item. Zhang Tie then bit his finger and dropped his blood onto the forehead of the virtual image. Closely after that, the wild wolf-like fierce beast turned into a grim, long saber in Zhang Tie's hand among four brilliant elements.

Holding the long saber, Zhang Tie felt integrating with the long saber. The moment he waved the long saber, a red fierce wild beast being composed of his battle qi had flown out of his long saber. Like a spiritual spirit of wind, it loomed in the mountain as fast as lightning bolts. Finally, it widely opened its mouth and charged at a cluster of crystals over 100 m away. With a loud bang, the greater part of the cluster of crystals was destroyed while the saber qi radiated in all directions.

There were evident corrosive destructions in the cluster of crystals.

It was just a casual strike of this silver secret item. Zhang Tie had

just injected some of his battle qi into it. However, its power was amazing. Additionally, this saber's strike was attached to a strong corrosive damage, making it more destructive.

"Hahaha, I will call you battle wolf from now on!" Zhang Tie burst into laughter.

After being named, the battle wolf disappeared with its strong brilliance in Zhang Tie's hand.

At the same time, a miniature virtual image of battle wolf started to swim like a fish in Zhang Tie's qi sea around that hot sun. It seemed to enjoy the battle qi luster from the hot sun very much.

Feeling the battle wolf swimming and jumping rapidly in his qi sea, Zhang Tie felt that this silver secret item was not only enjoying but cheering jubilantly.

'Is that the feeling of carrying a silver secret item with me?'

Zhang Tie touched his lower abdomen. If not introspect it using his spiritual energy, Zhang Tie could almost not sense that battle wolf in his qi sea. However, the moment he ran his spiritual energy, the battle wolf would appear in his hand as fast as a lightning bolt along his battle qi circular route like a fish swimming into a river from the sea.

Zhang Tie tried one time.

In the brilliant light, the four elements surged into the virtual image out of the air. Only in 5-6 seconds, Zhang Tie had felt that the object in his hand was growing bigger like an inflated balloon and finally became a real, grim and sharp "battle wolf".

The material entity of silver secret item could remain unchanged thousands of years as long its owner was still alive. If its owner died, it might turn into the virtual image of the secret item and escape away. This might explain how a sword changes into a dragon.

The biggest benefit for a silver secret item to integrate with its

owner was portable. It would never be lost anymore. Whenever its owner wanted to use it, he could summon it right away. However, it had a weakness, namely, the process of summoning it was too eye-catching, It would take the virtual image of the secret item a few seconds to turn into a material entity, during which period, some emergencies might happen.

Given that weakness, Zhang Tie didn't integrate that shield which he gained from the demon general into his qi sea; instead, he put it in his portable space-teleportation equipment—the shield was used to defend and respond to emergencies, which required high responsive speed. If he integrated it into his qi sea, it would take him a few seconds to summon it in emergencies. If he was facing an extremely powerful enemy, he might have been killed before it turned into the material entity.

After acquiring the first silver secret item in Weapons Mountain, Zhang Tie was in a pretty good mood.

In the next 2 months, Zhang Tie didn't acquire any more silver secret item in Weapons Mountain. However, Zhang Tie still promoted to 4 changes black iron realm smoothly. Closely after that, the small tree underwent an unexpected change...

Chapter 968: Price and Achievements

After cultivating in the pyramid for almost half a year, Zhang Tie's cultivation base advanced by leaps and bounds. He had made great improvements in the battle skills of "Fire Dragon Sutra" and forming his earth chakra.

Half a year ago, Zhang Tie had just reached 1 change black iron realm; however, he had already entered the 4 changes black iron realm now.

Half a year ago, Zhang Tie could only simulate the battle skills of "Fire Dragon Sutra" according to the powerful emperor-level classic "King Roc Sutra"; however, now, Zhang Tie had been able to combine his gnosis with the deduction of those powerful secret battle skills such as "Fire Dragon Heavens Burning Spear Battle Skill", "Big Sun Fire Dragon Palm Skill" and "Fire Dragon Light Concealment Skill", which were very powerful.

Zhang Tie gradually mastered the essence of those secret battle skills of "Fire Dragon Sutra".

"Fire Dragon Golden Body" was a secret skill of "Fire Dragon Sutra" which was used to improve one's protective battle qi and body defensive capability. Over the past half a year, Zhang Tie practiced cultivation every day and made the fastest progress in "Fire Dragon Golden Body" while being besieged by so many battle puppets.

Although "Fire Dragon Golden Body" was a protective secret skill of "Fire Dragon Sutra", it was relatively independent compared to "Fire Dragon Heavens Burning Spear Battle Skill" and "Big Sun Fire Dragon Palm Skill", etc.. The cultivation of "Fire Dragon Golden Body" posed no special requirement on the battle qi of "Fire Dragon Sutra". Any knight who had lit all of his or her surging points could cultivate this secret skill.

When Zhang Tie started to cultivate "Fire Dragon Golden Body",

he directly used his king roc battle qi to nourish and warm up his surging points. The effect was unimaginably good.

Additionally, the process of cultivating "Fire Dragon Golden Body" was similar to that of gaining iron-body fruits, which both emphasized on strengthening his defensive capability through bearing strikes. Therefore, after combining the effect of iron-body fruits; especially the firm foundation that Zhang Tie laid in the early stage, Zhang Tie made progress by leaps and bounds in cultivating "Fire Dragon Golden Body".

Over the past half a year, Zhang Tie had been used to eating one iron-body fruit every day to strengthen his body defensive capability. Sometimes, if the battle puppets' strikes on that day could not stimulate the production of an iron-body fruit, Zhang Tie would enter Castle of Black Iron and continue to practice his battle skills under the waterfall of the immortal mountain while stimulating the production of the iron-body fruit on that day.

After taking iron-body fruits one after another and making rapid progress in the battle skill "Fire Dragon Golden Body", Zhang Tie felt the strikes of battle puppets in the lobby becoming lighter and less destructive. Meanwhile, he suffered fewer injuries from the same strikes.

One day, when Zhang Tie returned to Castle of Black Iron in an extremely fatigued state, the small tree was still there; however, no iron-body fruit could be seen on it.

Zhang Tie even rubbed his eyes as he thought that his eyes had deceived him. However, after circling around the small tree, he indeed didn't find any iron-body fruit on it.

'What's wrong?'

The battle today was very fierce.

Today was a symbolic milestone for Zhang Tie because he stayed in the lobby for over 10 hours for the first time. Compared to when

he came to the pyramid at the beginning, this was already a great progress.

In the 10 hours, he bore ceaseless strikes of so many battle puppets. All the 31-layer protective battle qi that he formed through cultivating "Fire Dragon Golden Body" collapsed. He had suffered bone fractures in at least 16 places over his body. Besides, his guts were greatly shocked. Until he spurted out blood did he stop all the battle puppets with bloody eyes through his crystal ball. He panted over half an hour and drank a lot of all-purpose medicament before trudging out of the lobby.

When he moved out of the lobby, he had been wet all over by sweat like being scooped out of the water. Even his footprints contained his sweat...

Then, Zhang Tie slowly went up the main peak from a strange path with a fluke mind while gradually recovering his body. After entering the hall on the top of the main peak of Weapons Mountain, Zhang Tie returned to Castle of Black Iron.

If he was lucky enough, he might meet a virtual image of the silver secret item when he went up the mountain. Therefore, he would go up and down the mountain everyday to seek for treasures.

Over the past half a year, Zhang Tie had been used to treat the hall on the top of the main peak of Weapons Mountain as his portal from Castle of Black Iron to this world.

Pitifully, since he gained the "Battle Wolf", Zhang Tie had hard luck in recent two months, except for seeing two virtual images of secret items from afar.

That day, besides having not seen any virtual image of the secret item, Zhang Tie didn't even see any iron-body fruit on the small tree.

Although each iron-body fruit required more striking strength

than the earlier one, Zhang Tie was pretty sure that the strikes and harms today could stimulate the production of an iron-body fruit.

Therefore, Zhang Tie felt strange and depressed.

The moment he wanted to ask Heller about the reason, Heller had already appeared below the high platform of the small tree as if he had known that Zhang Tie would like to ask him about that.

"Heller, what's wrong? There should be an iron-body fruit today, but I don't see it!"

"Castle Lord, do you remember what I told you when you asked me why the small tree could not produce any fruit of demon knights?"

"What?" Zhang Tie became confused.

"Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree is the reflection of rules. It's not almighty. Its abilities were limited according to rules. It could not create things out of its limits!" Heller watched Zhang Tie as he continued steadily, "Castle Lord, actually, you've already taken the last iron-body fruit that this small tree could produce yesterday!"

"What, last one?" Zhang Tie was shocked...

"Yes, last one!" Heller nodded, "Over the past half a year, Castle Lord has made progress by leaps and bounds. You have taken so many iron-body fruits; especially after cultivating the "Fire Dragon Golden Body", Castle Lord's anti-striking capability and defensive capability have surpassed the upper limits that could be brought by iron-body fruits. Therefore, you will not make any progress with iron-body fruits anymore. That's why the small tree would not provide iron-body fruits to Castle Lord from today on!"

After hearing Heller's explanation, Zhang Tie felt more complex. He didn't know whether he should be happy or sad about this news.

It should be a pleasure for him to grow more powerful; however, Zhang Tie felt empty and melancholy as he could not eat the

familiar fruit anymore.

Likewise, your parents would finally pass away and your friends would finally leave you. Starting with Blackhot City, this small tree had been accompanying Zhang Tie like his best friend and relative. It didn't abandon him at any critical moment; instead, it helped him grow up and tide over all sorts of difficulties with marvelous fruits. Zhang Tie had not imagined that the small tree could not catch up with his progress when his ability broke through an upper limit. He had not imagined that those familiar fruits would leave him one day.

Iron-body fruits and leakless fruits laid a solid foundation for Zhang Tie. He had not imagined that the iron-body fruit that he ate yesterday was the last one in his life. If he had long known it, he would never take that iron-body fruit. He would leave it on the tree as a souvenir of the experience between him and the small tree.

Zhang Tie felt complex as he stroked the small tree's trunk, twigs and leaves and said, "Thank you..."

The leaves of the small tree rustled as if they were responding to Zhang Tie.

After stroking the small tree silently for a short while, Zhang Tie turned around and asked Heller, "Whether other fruits such as leakless fruit would run out too?"

Now that iron-body fruits had run out, leakless fruits which almost appeared at the same time with iron-body fruit and were closely related to his physical functions might also reach the upper limit with his gradually increasing overall strength.

Since he promoted to a black iron knight, he had sensed that leakless fruit was gradually ineffective to him. This was the premonition of the disappearance of this fruit.

"Castle Lord, after you form emperor-level earth chakra and

promote to an earth knight, the energy inside your body would stop leaking. By then, the small tree would stop producing leakless fruits!"

Heller's answer was within Zhang Tie's expectation.

Zhang Tie let out a long sigh...

...

After half an hour, Zhang Tie immersed himself into an aura warm spring in the immortal mountain and slowly nourished his body and recovered his fatigueness.

There was some herbal medicine in the warm spring, which was necessary materials for building "Fire Dragon Golden Body". When Zhang Tie traversed across the world, he sowed many plant seeds in Castle of Black Iron. Those herbal medicines grew well in Castle of Black Iron; plus the special aura warm spring in the immortal mountain, Zhang Tie felt very convenient for recovering his injuries and building his "Fire Dragon Golden Body".

In the mist of the warm spring, Zhang Tie was swallowing liquor of fiery-flame lotus seeds and eating the soft fiery-flame lotus seeds.

Although being in the warm spring, Zhang Tie felt pretty cold inside after taking those fiery-flame lotus seeds; especially his eyes. Warm outside and cold inside, how comfortable it was.

'From then on, I have to depend on myself!'

When he thought about the missing iron-body fruits, Zhang Tie's chest undulated unconsciously.

After coming to the hieron, Zhang Tie had taken fiery-flame lotus seeds for over half a year. Zhang Tie didn't remember how many fiery-flame lotus seeds had he taken. He just regarded it as snacks. As long as he was free, he would chew them.

According to Heller, Zhang Tie had almost taken all the 1149

fiery-flame lotus seeds which had been stockpiled in Castle of Black Iron over these years.

After eating so many fiery-flame lotus seeds, Zhang Tie felt his eyes turning increasingly brighter with an increasingly better vision. He could see farther and farther...

When he ate fiery-flame lotus seeds today, Zhang Tie's eyes felt a bit different than before. As the surging points over his eye sockets felt pretty cold. It seemed that something was jumping and was going to erupt from the surging points.

Zhang Tie didn't pay attention to it. Whatever, those fiery-flame lotus seeds were harmless. He just drunk a bit more liquor of fiery-flame lotus seeds today. After taking all the liquor and lotus seeds, he gradually felt drunk. He then fell asleep comfortably in the warm spring with a bit fatigueness...

In a daze, Zhang Tie felt his eyes shocking. Closely after that, he saw colorful blazes as if there were two colorful windows in the sky.

Zhang Tie opened his eyes and felt that the world was much more colorful than before...

All the flowing nutrients and moisture that trunks absorbed from underground in the distance were all presented in his eyes.

Everything became transparent...

There was no block in front of his eyes anymore. Everything was redefined.

After being immersed in such a realm for quite a long while, Zhang Tie became startled abruptly while all the abnormal phenomena disappeared in a split second.

'Is it an illusion?' When Zhang Tie gazed at that tree in the far, the tree became transparent once again while the nutrients and moisture circulation routes reappeared in Zhang Tie's eyes like a huge net.

Zhang Tie looked at the ground while the groundwater routes appeared in his eyes clearly too.

'It's not an illusion!'

'But a higher realm of color temperatures which was mentioned by Heller...'

Substances had different and clearly hierarchical color temperatures.

After staying in the warm spring for a short while, Zhang Tie suddenly recalled something. With a sudden shriek, he sprung out of the warm spring and left Castle of Black Iron naked and reappeared in the bloody sacrifice hall on the top of the main peak of the Weapons Mountain.

Zhang Tie instantly rushed out of the bloody sacrifice hall and came to a cluster of crystals on the top of the main peak, which contained some pearls of secret items.

...

Only after a few minutes, Zhang Tie suddenly roared like a wild wolf who had taken too many viagra due to extreme excitement.

"F*ck, they're all mine; f*ck, they're all mine; I'm rich; f*ck, I'm rich..."

That day, a naked guy jumped and screamed in a cluster of crystals in Weapons Mountain like being driven mad...

Chapter 969: Promoting to an Earth Knight (I)

On the evening of December 17th, the 902th year of Black Iron Calendar...

Although Zhang Tie had not contacted the outside world for a long time and could not sense time elapse through daily repetitive cultivation, he could still see the precise time of the outside world through the delicate table clock in the lobby of the palace tree of Castle of Black Iron which was made by Edward.

This table clock was made according to Zhang Tie's requests purely by hand. Higher than 1 m, the purple-red metal table clock was a perfect artwork. Its elegance and qi field matched the palace tree pretty well.

The time in Castle of Black Iron was synchronous with that of the outside world, daytime or evening. Zhang Tie especially told Edward to make such a table clock and put it in the lobby of the palace tree one year ago in case that he forgot the time in the outside world. It could remind him that many people and many things in the outside world were waiting for him even though he was in the pyramid and the Castle of Black Iron.

When in cultivation, time flew, Zhang Tie was even worried that he would forget the disputes in the outside world.

4 months ago, Zhang Tie had broken through the encirclement of the battle puppets in the lobby alone. It was the first time for him to break through the lobby and pass by it steadily by foot alone.

It was his first time to stop the strikes of those battle puppets without using the crystal ball since he entered the pyramid.

Zhang Tie had entered the 9 changes black iron realm by then.

The higher his realm was, the more reassured was Zhang Tie.

Actually, since he reached the 6 changes black iron realm, Zhang Tie had purposefully slowed down his speed in absorbing the earth chakra of the demon baron by extending the frequency of one time per month to one time per 1.5-2 months...

This spared more time and opportunities for Zhang Tie to lay his foundation. He did everything in an unflurried way. In each realm, Zhang Tie would have a different and deeper gnosis about the over strengths of knights.

The lobby, which was covered with battle puppets, was his best training field. The training field matched Zhang Tie's schedule of absorbing the earth chakra of the demon baron pretty well.

When he advanced to the 5 changes black iron realm, in order to coordinate with the cultivation of "Fire Dragon Heavens Burning Spear Battle Skill", the most powerful battle skill of "Fire Dragon Sutra", Zhang Tie consumed 67 points of bloodline energy to activate his ancestral bloodline "spear affinity".

It was a fundamental ancestral bloodline being similar to sword affinity. After activating this ancestral bloodline, Zhang Tie's "Fire Dragon Heavens Burning Spear Battle Skill" entered a higher realm like fish in water.

After deducting 67 points of bloodline energy, Zhang Tie still had 1717 points of bloodline energy left.

The energy points brought by the bloodline fruit which could activate ancestral bloodlines were very precious; therefore, Zhang Tie didn't casually squander them.

'Although I'm going to promote to an earth knight soon, I lack experience in fighting earth knights, not to mention the experience in fighting shadow knights. As the old saying goes, genuine knowledge comes from practice.' Zhang Tie kept these energy points because he didn't know which bloodlines to activate before having experience in fighting earth knights even shadow knights after promoting to an earth knight.

By then, he could further fix his shortages or play his strong points when fighting earth knights or shadow knights; namely, he could maximize the value of the bloodline fruit.

Out of such a rigorous consideration, Zhang Tie only used 67 energy points of this bloodline fruit.

In September, Zhang Tie finished the last round of absorption of the demon baron's earth chakra.

After that, Zhang Tie didn't recover the demon baron's earth chakra anymore; instead, he directly ignored it.

Over the past 3 months, Zhang Tie broke through the lobby of battle puppets time and time again in an increasingly shorter time.

Since October, Zhang Tie started to wander in the Weapons Mountain once again and broke the last pearls which contained silver secret items over there. Till then, the entire Weapons Mountain was ransacked by Zhang Tie.

By late November, Zhang Tie completely relaxed himself. He spent much time in sleeping, bathing and traveling in the immortal mountain or incarnating into the little black beetle to experience the lives of those residents in Castle of Black Iron; occasionally, he would spend 2 days in digging a beautiful pearl of secret item out of the soil in Weapons Mountain before teleporting it into the portable Xuanwu Secret Warehouse of Bloody Soul Temple as a collection.

Through such an adjustment, Zhang Tie's overall condition reached its peak in December.

On the evening of December 13, according to Heller's suggestion, Zhang Tie didn't complete this round of promotion in the pyramid for the time being; instead, he left the palace tree for the top of the main peak of the immortal mountain and started the last step for him to promote to an earth knight...

4 days passed in the blink of an eye, on the evening of December

17, Heller walked out of the palace tree and came to the hillside. Raising his head, he watched the top of the main peak being covered with white snow with an eager look.

Edward, Aziz and Agan had also arrived behind Heller. They were also looking at the top of the main peak of the immortal mountain in the distance.

"Castle Lord should promote to an earth knight today..." Aziz asked Heller with a concerned look.

"Yes, it should be tonight..."

"Earth knight. I'm really happy for him..." Edward said sincerely.

Edward, Aziz and Heller who were most unlike servants became thrilled; only Agan twiddled with his fingers with a shameful look, "I spent the least efforts this time, I only made a cell..."

"Don't worry, you will have chances!" Heller comforted Agan as he turned around to watch the top of the main peak of the immortal mountain while a light flashed across his eyes, "It will be soon..."

...

On the top of the main peak, Zhang Tie filled the last complex triangular pattern of the earth chakra of King Roc Sutra with earth elements...

...

At the same time, a powerful energy wave rose up from the top of the main peak and swept over the entire space of Castle of Black Iron in a split second.

At the same moment, all the residents in Castle of Black Iron felt flurried, no matter what they were doing...

Therefore, all of them stopped what they were doing and walked out of their rooms, watching the immortal mountain in the far...

Chapter 970: The Raging Tide

The moment the last pattern on the earth chakra of King Roc Sutra was filled with earth elements, the entire earth chakra of Zhang Tie had uttered a thunder-like sound, "Ka..."

The blare spread over all the surging points of Zhang Tie and resonated all the surging points. At the same time, Zhang Tie's body quivered a second.

Closely after this blare, a strong wave swept over the entire space of Castle of Black Iron centered by Zhang Tie. As a result, all the living beings in this space sensed the terrifying strength from the top of the main peak of the immortal mountain, humans or animals.

This blare was similar to that when the last component of a set of a powerful machine was assembled.

After the last component was assembled, the entire earth chakra rocked a bit before radiating a dazzling golden light and starting to rotate slowly...

The earth chakra and the black iron chakra then started to rotate in a coordinated way like two gears of a machine, one outside, one inside.

As the earth chakra started to rotate, a wholly new and strong strength was spread over Zhang Tie from the chakra in terms of waves. It started to reorganize Zhang Tie's strength system. Zhang Tie felt being pushed by an overwhelming strength while his awareness started to rise like a rocket physically and spiritually...

...

Under the gaze of everyone else, an overbearing virtual image of golden king roc started to appear on the top of the main peak of the immortal mountain in Castle of Black Iron.

It was a 4-wing king roc. Over its golden body, each feather was

radiating brilliant golden light like gold. Its eyes were as hot as two suns. When they opened and closed, they were like sunrise and sunset. The moment the two pairs of wings stretched out, the entire immortal mountain was covered under it.

With another blare "Ka...", the entire Castle of Black Iron rocked again while everybody found it was uttered by the king roc.

When the virtual image of king roc flapped its wings for the first time, it rushed into the heavens right away. When it flapped its wings for the second time, its entire virtual image started to fly across Castle of Black Iron like the ruler of the sky while its huge shadow covered the land below...

As for this virtual image, Castle of Black Iron was so small that the king roc could fly across this space several rounds as fast as lightning bolts only by flapping its wings one time...

Many residents in Castle of Black Iron were shocked by this scene. When the virtual image of king roc covered the land, an old man in a robe screamed, "It's the incarnation of the God...". Closely after him, all the others started to kneel down towards this enormous virtual image piously.

These people in Castle of Black Iron were all commoners from Waii Subcontinent. There was no earth knight across the Waii Subcontinent. Of course, they didn't know about the virtual images of earth knights. Even if some of them knew that, they must have not witnessed the abnormal phenomenon when the emperor-level virtual image appeared in the sky. Facing such a scene, all of them could only attribute everything in front of them to their God.

"Ka...", with another blare, the virtual image of king roc ascended while the colorful clouds in the entire space of Castle of Black Iron started to roll.

When the rolling colorful clouds brought the king roc a higher and broader air territory, they also started to suppress the virtual

image so that the king roc could only fly in the limited air territory of Castle of Black Iron...

The virtual image of king roc was furious as it felt its dignity was being challenged. "Ka...", with the third blare, the king roc's two pairs of wings stabbed into the colorful clouds like a sharp sword. It seemed that it was going to tear apart the heavens and invisible barrier in front of its eyes...

'Nothing could stop me from being free; if the land stops me, I will break the land and lowest location; if the sky stops me, I will tear apart the sky and break the void!

'Free! Free! Free!'

It was what the rocs were pursuing for in their whole lives.

...

At the same time...

When the virtual image of king roc flapped its wings for the first time, the surging elements in the elements realm outside Castle of Black Iron became restless in a split second, causing powerful elements to tide which rolled over the entire elements realm like a tsunami which could not even be met in 10,000 years. Those black iron knights' spiritual tentacles which were catching up with elements in the elements realm were instantly torn apart by the powerful elements tide like dinghies in the tsunami. As a result, all the black iron knights were forced to exit the elements realm...

Although earth knights and those above earth knights stayed in the elements realm, they were also greatly impacted by the elements tide. As the chaotic and surging element crystals were hard to catch, they had to stop what they were doing.

"Ahh, what's happening..."

All the gates of the knights' towers in the Lion Fortress were opened while all the knights exited their towers and exchanged glances with each other with confused looks...

As it was the first time for almost all the black iron knights to experience such a change in the elements realm. They didn't even know what was happening at all.

In the highest knight's tower in the center of the Lion Fortress, an old man with a white beard and eyebrows opened his eyes which were as brilliant as stars in the sky. He then looked at the ground with a dubious look...

...

Wu Guanhai the team leader of Black Armor Army in Lion Fortress who had also been forced to exit the elements realm spiritually also walked out of his room. With heavy dense eyebrows, he exchanged a confused look with the other knights of Black Armor Army who had also walked out of their room almost at the same time.

Given the others' dumbfounded looks, Wu Guanhai knew that the other team members also didn't know what was happening.

"Is it aroused by demons?" A black armored knight asked out of curiosity.

"F**t, if demons could drive us out of the elements realm, what are we here for?" Wu Guanhai swore at once.

"What's happening then?"

"Who knows?"

Right then, a logistical personnel who was responsible for taking care of those underground dragons hurriedly ran over here, sweating all over his forehead.

"Ahh, emergency, something is wrong with those underground dragons."

As these knights treasured those underground dragons so much, the moment they heard this, they immediately ran towards the stable of the underground dragons.

In the stable, the most bad-tempered underground dragons which had just been captured a few days ago were kneeling down on the ground and quivering like chicks. Meanwhile, they were burying their heads under their bellies...

The underground dragon was a sub-dragon, which had the bloodlines of dragons in far-ancient times. That explained why underground dragons were so powerful.

...

In the endless dark of the first abyss, numerous demon knights were becoming flurried too...

Because the elements tide would drive any alien species out of the elements realm, humans or demons.

...

The third abyss of the earth-element realm which was abundant in underground dragons became as silent as a dead region. The irritable roars of underground dragons completely disappeared in the third abyss...

...

Youzhou Province, Taixia Country, on the earth' surface...

Elder Muyuan, who was cultivating, walked out of the shrine palace in Embracing Tiger City. Frowning, he looked up at the stars over the sky.

In the dark, a weird, brilliant, twisting polar light appeared in the sky.

Such a polar light should only be seen in the north polar or the south polar instead of appearing in the air territory of Taixia Country. However, at this moment, the brilliant polar light was like a fantastic veil in the night sky. With a bizarre sense of beauty, it appeared in front of the eyes of Elder Muyuan and shared the brilliance with the sky and the ground.

The influence of the elements tide in the elements realm also presented in the material world.

The entire Embracing Bear City was filled with exclamations; many commoners who had fallen asleep woke up and walked out of their doors or stood in their balconies or on the roof, watching such a weird and brilliant scenery.

...

In Xuanyuan Hill, being hundreds of thousands of miles away from Youzhou Province...

In an average courtyard, beside the same pond, the old man who was feeding golden fish looked up at the polar light above Xuanyuan Hill with changing eye lights.

Being different from others' dumbfounded looks, when this old man watched the polar light, he kept twiddling his right fingers rapidly in his long sleeve and practicing an extremely profound divination.

Wise men would know the precise season through a leaf, not to mention such a wide-range abnormal astronomical phenomenon.

Perhaps commoners didn't know that, but in the eyes of this old man, the extremely surging elements tide in the elements realm indicated that someone was cultivating an emperor-level method and had just promoted to an earth knight.

The same thing happened over 7 decades ago. However, that elements tide in the elements realm was not as fierce as this one and there was not such an abnormal phenomenon in the sky at that time.

After twiddling his fingers for a while in his long sleeve, when his thumb touched one finger, he felt a great resistance like an invisible mountain between the two fingers. He could not press down his thumb anymore.

Even though it was a mountain, the old man could lay it flat by

one palm; therefore, the old man pressed his thumb down forcefully...

When a breeze blew, his right sleeve suddenly exploded into pieces and fell onto the ground. The old man felt like vomiting, but he controlled it and finally recovered his look in half a minute.

The old man shook his head and let out a sigh while his face turned a bit pale.

"If the crown prince dispatches someone to ask what happened. Just tell him there's a powerful item which could cover the heavenly fortunes on the stranger's body. It's out of my ability!"

After saying that, the old man turned around and returned to his room.

Before entering his room, he threw a glance at the east palace of Xuanyuan Hill.

...

After a while, someone indeed came to the outside of this courtyard with a question, "Who's that?"

A servant in the courtyard retold the old man's words to the arriver.

The arriver came back with the answer.

...

On a gold platform of hundreds of meters in height, a broad-foreheaded people in a robe with dragon patterns were holding the jade handrail of the gold platform and watching the changing polar light in the sky with a complex eye light.

"Third brother, is that you? or ninth brother? You're still thinking about taking my place. You formed the earth chakra of Xuanyuan Celestial Being Sutra so fast! It seems that you have a wonderful experience!" That man murmured.

After a short while, a servant in the primitive high crown and

dark black clothes came to the back of the man and lowered his body before uttering.

"Your majesty, your teacher said this man has a powerful item which could cover heavenly fortunes. It's out of his ability!"

"Pah..." the jade rail was broken into ash in a split second while the face of the man in the robe with dragon patterns turned ghastly pale...

Chapter 971: Promoting to an Earth Knight (II)

The colorful mist in the Castle of Black Iron was blurred, changeable and irresistible. No matter how the virtual image of king roc tore it furiously and attempted to break the heavens; it was always limited in the space of Castle of Black Iron.

After an hour, with furious and unwilling blares, the virtual image of king roc flew back to the top of the immortal mountain. Closely after that, it turned into a light rain over the sky and finally entered into Zhang Tie's body.

Zhang Tie then opened his eyes and stood up.

'Is that the feeling when one promotes to an earth knight?'

Zhang Tie felt each cell in his body was releasing a surging strength while being tranquil inside.

At this moment, if the black iron chakra was regarded as a steam engine for an automobile, the earth chakra could be taken as a large set of the steam turbine, which could drive a train or a steamer.

After promoting to an earth knight, one could experience a subversive change. That implied the power of earth knights.

Although Zhang Tie was closing his eyes just now, he had sensed the abnormal phenomenon of the virtual image of king roc in the space of Castle of Black Iron.

If not in Castle of Black Iron, the moment the virtual image of king roc flew out of the pyramid and traversed in the earth-element realm at a super high speed, or on the earth surface, it would be the target of both humans and demons.

At the sight of such a unique virtual image of golden king roc, perhaps many people could guess that someone was cultivating the

"King Roc Sutra". This would arouse a tempestuous storm and bring him a lot of unpredictable troubles and dangers. If some powerhouses saw the virtual image returning to the pyramid in the magma sea, Zhang Tie's identity might be exposed.

This was why Heller suggested Zhang Tie to promote to an earth knight in Castle of Black Iron. He had to limit the abnormal phenomenon which might expose his cultivation method to the minimal space.

Zhang Tie retrospected and found the two chakras were slowly rotating, a silver one inside, a golden one outside. The new earth chakra was like a brilliant astrolabe while all the vertical and complex geometrical patterns on it had been activated and integrated with each other. When it was rotating, it was constantly providing a great strength. In the periphery of the earth chakra, a larger, empty shadow of water chakra had presented.

The water chakra required more water elements, which were at least 60% more than that of the total amount of earth elements required by the earth chakra.

Zhang Tie revealed a bitter smile.

The number of earth elements required by the earth chakra of king roc sutra was already astronomical. The water chakra's requirement was more terrifying. This meant that Zhang Tie's road towards a shadow knight would be tougher and more time-consuming.

Whatever, he had already become an earth knight; no matter how difficult it was in the future, he had to face it step by step. It was already out of his imagination that he could promote to an earth knight from a black iron knight in less than 10 years due to good luck. Zhang Tie was very satisfied with that.

The top of the immortal mountain was covered with thick snow. Standing there, Zhang Tie had complex moods. He watched the land and the palace tree in the distance while the Heavenly

Waterfall of snow water fell off Zhang Tie's foot, creating a beautiful scenery which was a mixture of misty clouds and water.

Standing at the top of the main peak of the immortal mountain after promoting to an earth knight, Zhang Tie looked at the surroundings and felt pretty vacant. Enjoying this world created by himself, Zhang Tie had a special feeling and gnosis.

Why the top of main peaks of all the tall mountains in the world were always accompanied by snow all the year round?

The mountain was rigid and firm and was taken as yang; the snow was soft and easily melted and was taken as yin. When the yang was below, it tended to move upwards; when the yin was above, it tended to move downwards. The universal rules of yin and yang existed everywhere.

If one thing was extremely rigid, it would be easily broken; therefore, all the high peaks in the world were covered with snow and gentlemen should have the good moral integrity to embrace everything in their hearts.

As yin could not be preserved, even though the north polar of Ice and Snow Wilderness was abundant in snow all the year round, there was no mountain being covered with snow all the year round. The yin would finally recover to tranquility. Therefore, gentlemen should exert themselves constantly.

The higher the mountain was, the more destructive it would be. However, the higher it was, the thicker and softer the snow would be and the more tolerable it would be. Snow on the top of the high peaks would not collapse easily; instead, it would melt itself, turning into water and flowing downwards, which would lubricate all living beings tenderly. Therefore, the higher position or level one was in, the more powerful one would be and more soft-hearted one would be, this should be the gnosis about yin and yang in the world as an earth knight.

After promoting to an earth knight, Zhang Tie's overall strength

reached a new high. With the gnosis about yin and yang in the world on the snow-capped top of the main peak of Immortal Mountain, Zhang Tie's cultivation base in both soul and intelligence advanced to a new level.

The powerful strength matched such a powerful soul and intelligence in a harmonious way.

When Zhang Tie woke up from his gnosis on the top of the mountain peak, the day had broken in Castle of Black Iron.

Zhang Tie revealed a smile. Instead of activating his Kuafu bloodline, he just fumbled and went down the main peak of the immortal mountain and returned to the palace tree.

"Congratulations, Castle Lord. You're an earth knight now!" Heller hailed Zhang Tie together with Edward, Aziz and Agan.

"Hohoho, it's sheer good luck. I'm afraid that I will not have such a good luck in the future!" Zhang Tie replied in a pleasant voice with a smile; however, he was not flamboyant; instead, he maintained a modest, indifferent and calm look.

Zhang Tie stood overnight on the top of the main peak of the immortal mountain last night. Heller knew everything in Castle of Black Iron except for Zhang Tie's spiritual gnosis. Heller felt that Castle Lord had changed a bit. After promoting to an earth knight, Castle Lord didn't become presumptuous; instead, he became calmer and more steady.

"It seems that we should not only congratulate Castle Lord for promoting to an earth knight but also for gaining a higher gnosis about the strength and existence of an earth knight. Your soul and intelligence have reached a new high! I'm really happy for you..." Heller replied with a solemn look as he bowed towards Zhang Tie once again.

"Hoho..." Zhang Tie revealed a smile, "I'm overpraised. I just have some gnosis about my surroundings and faintly adjusted my

mentality. It's not that exaggerating."

"This is the process that Hua people pursue for the universal law. The universal law is right beside you. However, only when you have intelligent eyes and pure souls could you have an insight into it and have a bright future!"

After hearing Heller's praise, Zhang Tie felt a bit embarrassed. Touching his head, Zhang Tie revealed a smile. He then realized that he was not bald-headed anymore. As he had been used to be Cui Li, he couldn't forget about some habits easily.

"Well, bring me the demon knight!" Zhang Tie told Edward.

'It's time to kill that poor guy or make use of the waste for the last time.'

After receiving Zhang Tie's order, Edward, Aziz and Agan hurriedly went to fetch the crippled demon baron jubilantly.

"Castle Lord, do you prepare to leave the pyramid?"

"Almost like that. After dealing with that demon, I will spend some days in absorbing some fiery-flame lotus roots so that I could bear high temperature. Then, I will leave the pyramid. It's boring to stay inside it!"

"Castle Lord, when you leave, don't forget to take away the most important and the most valuable item in the pyramid."

"Ahh, which item?" Zhang Tie became a bit startled as he didn't understand whether there was something left in the entire pyramid. Although those battle puppets were not bad, they were integrated with this pyramid. This pyramid provided energy to those battle puppets constantly. Zhang Tie had tried it. When a battle puppet was teleported into his space-teleportation item and Castle of Black Iron, it would lose its response to the pyramid. In the space-teleportation item and Castle of Black Iron, the battle puppet couldn't move at all; it was nothing but an iron statue. Unless Zhang Tie could build a far-ancient hieron in Caste of Black

Iron or the space-teleportation item, those battle became useless even if he took them away...

"The joss being connected to the bloody sacrifice furnace in the hall!" Heller replied with a smile.

"That...can be taken away?" Zhang Tie asked while his eyes almost popped out.

"That joss is not connected to the hieron. Castle Lord, you would have known it if you studied it carefully. Additionally, that joss is not exaggerating in height and weight at all. Although others could not take it away, Castle Lord could take it away for sure. Additionally, you could put it in your Xuanwu Secret Warehouse of Bloody Soul Temple and use it whenever you want in case of exposing Castle of Black Iron. If Castle Lord would like to establish a sect in the future, you could put it in the shrine as the No. 1 treasure of your sect!"

After Heller's suggestion, Zhang Tie became thrilled all over. 'If I could really take away that super large machine, anyone who wants bloody sacrifice has to earnestly beg me for that. By then, I could even ask for payment from them. It's completely a big, profitable business in Taixia Country. Who else in Taixia could have a bloody sacrifice furnace...'

Chapter 972: Taking Full Advantage of the Demon Baron

Edward, Aziz and Agan soon brought the demon baron to Zhang Tie's front.

Like usual, the demon baron was still limited in the exoskeleton semi-automatic prisoning cabin.

Although with a depressed and hopeless look, the demon baron looked a bit fat these couple months through the careful nursing of Agan, Aziz and Edward; however, its qi was not as perilous and aggressive as that before.

At this moment, the demon baron was completely like a lion whose teeth had been pulled away and claws had been broken. What was more, through consecutive bloody sacrifice rites and absorption of its earth chakra, the demon baron had long collapsed spiritually and physically.

In the myths and legends on Western Continent, those selfish and narrow-minded irritable deities would punish the angels who brought light to humans by constantly digging out their guts and having them carried off by wild beasts and raptors before healing them, causing them endlessly painful.

Of course, the demon baron had nothing to do with angels; however, after falling in Zhang Tie's hands, the demon baron's outcome was nothing different than those angels.

The metal stopper had been taken away from the demon baron's mouth; however, the demon baron had lost its ability to scream; instead, it drooled and watched Zhang Tie with a glassy-eyed look and stammered, "Ear...earth knight..."

When Zhang Tie promoted to an earth knight, his qi swept across the entire space of Castle of Black Iron. Of course, the demon baron who was prisoned in the dungeon of the palace tree had also

felt that.

Even though its earth chakra was destroyed, it was still an earth knight, who could still acutely sense the qi of another earth knight.

"I have to appreciate you. Without you, I would not have promoted to an earth knight so fast!" Zhang Tie said in a calm tone as he revealed a smile towards the demon baron.

"Will...will I die today?" The demon baron asked Zhang Tie. When it mentioned the word "die", its eyes suddenly turned bright as if this word made it thrilled.

Previously, the demon baron might be afraid of death; however, at present, death became a relief for the demon baron. If it could commit suicide, the demon baron would have long done that. Sadly, it was unable to commit suicide even now.

"Not bad. You're going to die today. Because I've almost squeezed out all of your value till now!"

If Zhang Tie could have an earth demon knight as his bully and a mole in Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie was really unwilling to kill him. However, it was too exaggerated to have a black iron demon knight as humans' mole in the former two holy wars, not to mention an earth demon knight. As nobody could do it before, Zhang Tie didn't think he could do it either. Additionally, neither Heller and the small tree could do it; therefore, this earth demon knight had to die.

"Who...the hell are you? Where am I?"

The demon baron would not close his eyes even if it was dead without figuring out the two questions.

"I'm Zhang Tie. You're in my portable space-teleportation equipment, I call it Castle of Black Iron!"

Facing a demon knight who was going to die after sacrificing itself to help Zhang Tie promote to an earth knight, Zhang Tie replied patiently.

In this aspect, Hua people always had a nice tradition. Before being chopped off their heads, even condemned prisoners could enjoy a good meal in case of being a starved ghost, not to mention demons.

Zhang Tie's name was as meaningless as bynames such as Sam. Although it was wanted by the supreme court of Taixia Country, the demon baron had not heard about it at all. In its eyes, Zhang Tie was just a small figure. The demon baron only paid attention to big figures with deep backgrounds in Taixia Country, even black iron knights instead of common knights from Huaiyuan Palace like Zhang Tie.

Although the demon baron didn't know anything about this name, it kept murmuring "Castle of Black Iron" with flickering eye light.

"I picked up this space-teleportation item from roadside. It was wrapped in a common pyrite. After picking it up, I integrated with it. I could access this space at any time no matter where I am. I don't know where it came from. I think it should be a treasure left by a great person from far-ancient times!" Zhang Tie shrugged as he touched the demon baron's head, "What else do you want to know?"

"Immortal item...an immortal item in a common pyrite..." The demon baron murmured. Suddenly, its eyes were filled with jealousy and madness. After struggling for a short while, it suddenly laughed in a weird manner, "Even though you have the immortal item...you cannot change the destiny that humans are destined to be exterminated. You humans will finally become our slaves and bloody slaves..."

It was Zhang Tie's first time to hear the word "immortal item". Zhang Tie thought that this term should be used to describe a treasure which was above silver secret item in far-ancient times by demons. The piece of common pyrite which was used to wrap that exotic crystal of Castle of Black Iron should have a history of

hundreds of millions of years. At that time, nobody knew what the world looked like. Perhaps, it was really under the rule of deities.

The term "immortal item" was really precise.

"I don't care whether humans are exterminated or not. I will just bring my beloved ones into Castle of Black Iron before the extinction of humans so that they could live in here happily. I will teleport people in Castle of Black Iron as many as possible. As for the rest of the humans, it's out of my ability. However, it depends whether humans would be exterminated by demons or not. After the former two holy wars, humans are still there. Additionally, Taixia is growing more and more powerful. But you are going to die..."

After saying that, Zhang Tie ran his purgatory samsara method and destroyed the part of water chakra of the demon baron...

As an earth knight, the demon baron had started to form its water chakra so as to promote to a shadow knight. In the past two years, Zhang Tie was absorbing the demon baron's earth chakra. At present, after promoting to an earth knight, he could absorb its water chakra.

The demon baron had not fixed its water chakra. Therefore, its virtual water chakra could not be restored after being absorbed according to the rule of bloody sacrifice.

Even though the virtual water chakra could be restored, Zhang Tie doubted that the number of low-level demon fighters which were required to restore the virtual water chakra would grow by geometric progression. Even a part of the virtual water chakra would require a terrifying number of low-level demon fighters. Nobody could afford it...

'If I were able to capture dozens of demon corps and sacrificed all of them, I had long been unrivaled in the world, what do I form my chakras for?'

'Therefore, it was just something of a fluke, I'm afraid that I would not have such a fluke in the future.'

After its virtual water chakra was destroyed by Zhang Tie, the demon baron passed out once again due to an extreme pain while quivering all over...

In a few seconds, the water elements in the virtual water chakra of the demon baron had been absorbed by Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie felt that the water elements in the virtual water chakra of the demon baron could not even light 2 scales of his water chakra.

Previously, the number of earth crystals required by his earth chakra almost made Zhang Tie collapse. However, the number of water elements required by his water chakra was much more than that of earth crystals required by his earth chakra. It was absolutely an astronomical quantity. If he only relied on purgatory samsara method, he should at least absorb 200 earth demon knights like this one.

200 earth demon knights? If such a number of earth demon knights poured out of the earth-element realm like mad dogs, they could bulldoze a provincial court of Taixia Country. 'If earth demon knights were so weak, the holy war had long come to an end and it would never be my turn to show off.' After thinking about it, Zhang Tie realized that he would have great troubles on the way towards a shadow knight.

After absorbing the water chakra of the demon baron, Zhang Tie moved the insensible demon baron out of the exoskeleton semi-automatic prisoning cabin for the first time. After that, he caught its neck and lifted it like lifting a chick and returned to the bloody sacrifice hall on the top of the main peak of the Weapons Mountain in a split second.

Zhang Tie had long been familiar with everything in the hall; therefore, he soon started the bloody sacrifice furnace.

Being different than before, the one stood on the bloody sacrifice altar was not the demon baron anymore, but Zhang Tie himself.

Zhang Tie stood in the glow which radiated from the middle eye of the joss and rapidly chose the purpose of this bloody sacrifice——break through the bottlenecks of the secret battle skills of the "Fire Dragon Sutra" at the cost of the earth demon knight's blood and life.

Even an injured earth knight would bring him enormous benefits as it was a senior life and individual.

'It would be better if I could break through them. Otherwise, it doesn't matter, it will take me some time to cultivate them.' Zhang Tie didn't pose excessive requirements on it.

"Whether do you confirm to use this bloody sacrifice to help you break through the secret battle skills of your "Fire Dragon Sutra" or not?"

The joss's awareness occurred in Zhang Tie's mind.

"Yes!"

"Okay, you've confirmed to use this bloody sacrifice to break through your cultivation bottlenecks. The breakthrough of your cultivation bottlenecks is a matter of probability. The more advanced lives you sacrifice, the lower your cultivation bottlenecks will be and the more possible it will be for you to succeed..."

After being thrown into the bloody sacrifice furnace, the demon baron disappeared in the black flame in a split second.

The heavy glow completely covered Zhang Tie...

Chapter 973: Leaving the Hieron

The abyss hurricane was still raging above the boiling magma sea. It was the January of the 903rd year of Black Iron Calendar...

Since the human teams left the hieron ruins two years ago, this place had become a depopulated zone. Besides some people who would come here in a specific period each year, most of the time, nobody could be seen here at all.

An iron-skinned newt drilled out of a dark cave and sought for its food meticulously. After fumbling in the dark for almost 1 hour, it finally found its tasty food near the bank of the magma sea based on its specific smell.

The so-called tasty food was some totally dried flesh and watermelons. Beside these food, there was an empty wine bottle. Even though, those dried flesh and watermelons could still be eaten by iron-skinned newts.

In the underground world, all the living beings had their own talents. Strong living beings could catch sufficient preys by their sharp claws while weak living beings could develop more complex food chains and corresponding digestive capabilities. Undoubtedly, iron-skinned newts belonged to the latter ones.

Although being as hard as rocks, the newt could still swallow those dried flesh. After entering its stomach which was full of gastric acid, the dried flesh was gradually digested while providing the iron-skinned newt with the necessary nutrients and energy.

When the iron-skinned newt was eating food, it raised up its head and looked around time and then with vigilant eyes. The moment it heard something abnormal, it would immediately escape to the shadows of rocks and cliff at the fastest speed.

According to the impression of the iron-skinned newt, this magma sea and the abyss hurricane above it was a barrier that no

living being could break through; therefore, it only paid attention to the other side.

Therefore, when a caliga moved out of the magma sea and walked towards the seaside step by step, the iron-skinned newt didn't pay attention to it for the time being. However, when it caught sight of that man walking out of the magma sea, the iron-skinned newt was scared so much that it instantly bowed its body and sprung up from the ground like a flurried cat. Closely after that, it escaped to the shadow between two rocks in a very embarrassed way.

Perhaps, when this iron-skinned newt escaped away, its small head was still wondering about what kind of living being could live in the boiling magma sea. Undoubtedly, such a living being was very dangerous...

Zhang Tie saw the iron-skinned newt escaping away flurriedly.

It was like a lizard and a giant salamander. Its skin was highly toxic.

Of course, Zhang Tie ignored such a tiny underground living being.

When he walked out of the magma sea, Zhang Tie had put the shield into his portable space-teleportation space.

Strangely, Zhang Tie found a shield as same as that he gained from the demon general after searching over the Weapons Mountain these couple years. The two shields were both silver secret items in the same pattern and size. It reminded Zhang Tie that perhaps in the far-ancient times, these so-called silver secret items might be popular uniformed equipment that were produced in a large scale just like the weapons being equipped in the armies of Taixia Country.

Because of this discovery, Zhang Tie mocked himself that he had been too meticulous before. If he knew that there were so many

such shields in the world, he would not worry about being doubted from gaining the shield from the demon baron.

Thieves would always have a guilty conscience.

Because of this shield, his protective battle qi as an earth knight and so many fiery-flame lotus roots that he had taken over the past month, Zhang Tie accomplished one thing that he could never imagine about before——swimming to the seaside from the underground space of the boiling magma sea.

This was how Zhao Yuan did when Zhao Yuan presented his power in front of Zhang Tie for the first time. At that moment, Zhang Tie had thought that Zhao Yuan was a celestial being. It was out of his imagination that Zhang Tie could also barely make it after so many years.

This indicated that Zhang Tie had made a great progress. A few years ago, even Zhang Tie himself could not imagine that he would swim in the magma sea one day.

At this moment, Zhang Tie had recovered his look as Cui Li. Being disheveled and bearded, plus his tower-like figure, Zhang Tie looked pretty terrifying and malicious.

When the iron-skinned newt hid in the dark, Zhang Tie came to the place where the iron-skinned newt stayed just now and stopped.

The empty bottle on the ground aroused Zhang Tie's attention.

There was some dried food beside the empty bottle. In the gap of the rocks, there was some ash. Zhang Tie squatted down and took a look at it carefully. After rubbing the ash by fingers, Zhang Tie revealed a weird look.

The ash should be the residue of joss paper. The joss paper had been covered with gold powders. Therefore, the ash was different than that of common joss paper. When in Blackhot City, Zhang Tie burned such things with his parents. It seemed that someone had

just offered a sacrifice here a few days ago.

'Sacrifice? Here?'

'But why? Who will come here to offer a sacrifice?'

Zhang Tie felt a bit strange as he shook his head and walked ahead. However, after a few footsteps, he caught sight of the large bloody characters on a cliff. It was an elegiac couplet, the characters were as handsome and amazing as dragons which were full of grief and indignation.

——That's how heroes should behave! That's how good men should die!

Above the elegiac couplet, there was a line——Wish you live forever, Brother Cui Li.

Below the elegiac couplet, there was also a line——Left by Mountain Lifting Hermit with tears.

Chapter 974: The Lotus-Flower Eyes

How preposterous it was for one to read an elegiac couplet about himself which was left by someone else.

Watching the elegiac couplet and those remains of sacrifice, Zhang Tie knew that he had died in the minds of those knights who entered the hieron ruins together with him. It was nothing strange at all. It was what he expected the others to think. If the others knew that he was still alive, they would try their best to save him. If so, how could he accomplished his promotion to an earth knight and gain so many benefits in the pyramid?

Given the remains of sacrifice, Zhang Tie knew that these sacrifices were offered two months ago. It should be the 2nd anniversary of him since he entered the hieron ruins.

'I wonder who's that one.'

Some faces flashed through Zhang Tie's mind. Finally, he shook his head and revealed a smile. Closely after that, he flew off towards the familiar entrance of the mountain cave.

It was dark in the underground cave. Zhang Tie ran his spiritual energy while the entire world became refreshed as the underground cave immediately turned as bright as daytime. It was benefited from his dark vision effect. Zhang Tie's dark vision capability was too much better than that before. He could not only see everything clearly but also have a farther visual range.

As Zhang Tie had experience in incarnating into a thunder hawk, he clearly knew about the vision of the bird with the best visual sense. Honestly, after taking so many fiery-flame lotus seeds, Zhang Tie's vision had been far better than the thunder hawk that he had incarnated into before.

Under common circumstances, Zhang Tie's vision was almost like that of a thunder hawk, which was not too much greater than

that of an average earth knight. However, in particular cases, if Zhang Tie wanted to see things clearly in farther places, he only needed to slowly inject his spiritual energy into some surging points near his eyes. In that way, his vision could increase sharply and would be many times greater than that of thunder hawks; as a result, all the other earth knights even shadow knights could not match him.

Although his vision could not reach 1,000 miles away, it was much greater than a high-power military telescope.

Zhang Tie ran his spiritual energy once again while this bright vision was refreshed for the second time, presenting colorful images with different temperatures in a multi-layered manner.

The gloomy underground cave then became vigorous and colorful.

Zhang Tie saw the iron-skinned newt crouching behind a rock. Over 50 m away from that iron-skinned newt, there was a small dark mouse inside the huge greyrock mushroom's umbrella. A few meters beneath the ground where the roots of the greyrock mushroom reached, there was a nest of red-eyed termites. The diligent red-eyed termites were opening a road towards the stem of the greyrock mushroom along the roots.

Over 20 m beneath the nest of red-eyed termites, there was a live groundwater. Between the rocks on both sides of the cave, there were black coppers whose color temperature was different than that of common limestone. On the earth's surface, black coppers were valuable; however, in the underground cave, the black coppers were sparsely distributed in some hundreds of meters long ore belts. Of course, it was not valuable to exploit them.

When Zhang Tie gazed at that iron-skinned newt, with his increasing spiritual energy, the iron-skinned newt gradually turned transparent, present its complete skeleton, guts, jumping walnut-sized heart, flowing blood and secretory gastric acid in

front of Zhang Tie's eyes in clearly different color temperatures.

With such a visual effect, Zhang Tie returned along the way where he came from 2 years ago as fast as a lightning bolt.

Zhang Tie didn't radiate his battle qi luster as an earth knight. He just integrated himself into the dark like a drop of water entering the ocean. However, he flew silently at a speed higher than 900 km/h.

If black iron knights wanted to reach this speed, they had to activate their battle qis and turn as eye-catching as meteors. However, Zhang Tie, after promoting to an earth knight, could reach this speed very easily.

The valley where tall far-ancient giants' statues sat on both sides of the cliffs soon flashed by Zhang Tie.

In flight, Zhang Tie constantly adjusted and sensed his visual ability and felt that it was pretty funny.

The surging points surrounding his eyes were symmetric. Over the past 2 years, as he further explored the special visual abilities of his eyes, Zhang Tie found many interesting things.

At this moment, 6 of the 12 surging points surrounding Zhang Tie's eyes were evidently different than the others.

With 3 surging points around the left eye and 3 around the right eye, the 6 flames composed a blossoming fiery-flame lotus flower.

The 2 surging points being close to his nose could provide Zhang Tie with a super strong dark vision when Zhang Tie injected his spiritual energy into them; as for the 2 surging points below his eye sockets, when being injected with spiritual energy, could provide him a pretty far visual range; as for the 2 surging points at his eye corners, when being injected with spiritual energy, enabled Zhang Tie to see different color temperatures of objects.

Zhang Tie could inject his spiritual energy into the 6 surging points at the same time or respectively. In the first situation, his

two eyes could see completely the same scenery; in the second situation, his left eye could maintain the normal vision of commoners while his right eye could be granted with a dark vision or a super long visual range.

By freely combining and allocating with the visual effects and abilities of his two eyes, Zhang Tie could have different marvelous visual senses through two eyes or combine with them freely and perfectly.

Zhang Tie had been fed up with everything in the pyramid. After coming to the outside, he felt pretty amused by viewing the surroundings with different visual effects.

Meanwhile, the discovery that different surging points surrounding his eyes could grant him with different visual abilities had approved Zhang Tie's presumption about surging points a few years ago——If the human body could be treated as the most marvelous machine in the universe, different surging points are equal to the switches and buttons of different functions of the human body. Sometimes, when your physical condition could allow you to use that switch and button, you could activate different functions or adjust the effects of the functions of your body.

As to the three special surging points around each of his eyes, the first surging point could grant his eye with dark vision, the second could grant his eye with a super long visual range like that of a super-power telescope while the third could allow his eye to see different color temperatures and colorful lights.

The fiery-flame lotus seeds had injected a special energy into Zhang Tie's body so that he could fully activate and start the three switches around each of his eyes.

As to the rest 6 surging points around his eyes, Zhang Tie was not sure whether did they have marvelous visual abilities too. 'Perhaps the 6 surging points' visual abilities have been activated which just

correspond to his eyes' senses about normal lights, or they had other marvelous visual abilities, who knew?

Before the Catastrophe, one important reason that demons and those bastards of Three-eye Association treated Hua people as their public enemy might be that only Hua people carried forward the precious knowledge from far-ancient times. The medicine of Hua people was the gathering of these knowledge. For instance, acupuncture and massage for specific body parts could be used to deal with some diseases. As for the principle, perhaps those surging points with specific functions and effects could be stimulated through acupuncture and massage.

Before the Catastrophe, Hua medicine was slandered as pseudoscience. Under stresses from all aspects, it almost went extinct. However, in this age, it became the common sense of humans that Hua medical system carried forward the super civilization of far-ancient times.

The three surging points around each of his eyes had lotus blossom-shaped flames, which special ability originated from fiery-flame lotus; additionally, Zhang Tie saw his pupils being surrounded with lotus flower-shaped marvelous beautiful golden images in the mirror of Castle of Black Iron. Therefore, Zhang Tie named his visual ability "Lotus-flower eyes".

...

After one day's flight, Zhang Tie smoothly flew out of the mountain cave and came to the extremely vast and dark first abyss.

As the first abyss was covered with abyss vines, it was still enshrouded by a dense black mist.

Two years ago, Zhang Tie couldn't see through the black mist even though he had a great dark vision. However, two years later, suspending in the void, as the lotus flower-shaped golden images in his eyes blossomed one layer after another, the entire first abyss became transparent while each grass or wood within hundreds of

miles became as clear as palm grains...

At this moment, Zhang Tie felt especially satisfied as his vision could penetrate through the heavens and the ground.

Over 35 miles away, a woman in black palace languette flew towards him as fast as light, while a demon knight was chasing after her from thousands of meters away...

Zhang Tie lowered his head and saw their shadows.

Even though she was far away from him, Bai Suxian's unique coquettish black palace languette still made Zhang Tie's eyelids jump——f*ck, what a coincidence!

Bai Suxian was chased after by a powerful black iron demon knight. Given its flight speed, the demon knight could match the demon general, who must have reached the later stage of 9 changes black iron realm and was going to promote to an earth knight.

Bai Suxian was darting towards Zhang Tie with her full efforts.

Unless Bai Suxian also had lotus-flower eyes, she must have not noticed Zhang Tie in the dense black mist. Therefore, the only possibility for her to dart towards Zhang Tie's location was that she wanted to escape from the demon knight's pursuit based on her familiarity about the terrain in the mountain cave where she had been to when she explored the hieron's ruins.

'What a pity!' Zhang Tie sighed inside.

Zhang Tie was not pitying Bai Suxian but the demon knight.

The demon baron was not an earth knight; if not, Zhang Tie would make full use of it.

In Zhang Tie's eyes, any black iron knight was useless, no matter how powerful he was...

...

Chapter 975: Meeting Young Sister Once Again

Before Bai Suxian entered the familiar mountain cave, she had been caught up by the demon knight. "Where are you escaping?" The demon knight asked with a sportive and grim sneer.

It seemed that the demon knight had realized Bai Suxian's plan; how could it let her slide into the maze-like mountain cave?

The demon knight then released its bright battle qi. It flashed forward with a wake flame. In a few seconds, it could launch an attack towards Bai Suxian.

An especially powerful shock wave which could be barely resisted by black iron knights attacked Bai Suxian from her back. Bai Suxian twisted her slim waist and dodged it.

Although she dodged this strike, as she had changed her direction, her speed slowed down a bit.

In such a time gap, the demon knight narrowed their distance once again.

The demon knight fleered. Gazing at Bai Suxian's back, he launched dense strikes towards Bai Suxian.

There was a tactic called magnet tactic. The moment the one being chased entered the largest striking radius of the chaser, the chaser could constantly strike the other party in the air so as to change the opponent's flight path and stagnate the opponent's flight speed. It was similar to the principle of operation of the magnet, which would slow down the opponent's movements and finally catch up with the opponent.

After being forced to detour, her speed could never match that of voluntary detour or going straight. As long as the chaser started magnet tactic, the party being chased would be caught up with sooner or later in most cases if not having an overwhelming speed

or battle strength.

Bai Suxian responded fast; her overstrength was above average among black iron knights. However, facing a demon knight who had entered 9 changes black iron realm and was going to promote to an earth knight, she was slightly dwarfed.

The demon knight's flight speed was much faster than that of hers; the moment it started the magnet tactic, it soon caught up with her when Bai Suxian dodged its strikes.

Bai Suxian made a decision immediately. When she found that she couldn't escape anywhere, she released a battle qi smoke at once.

In the first abyss, the disadvantageous party would always release her battle qi smoke in battle so as to seek for help from nearby knights on her side.

If not release her battle qi smoke, the nearby knights might not find them until approaching a few miles away from them; however, after releasing her battle qi smoke, someone might notice the battle here from over 20 miles away.

Battle qi smoke was the most eye-catching signal that knights could release in the first abyss.

Of course, the unluckiest possibility was that her battle qi smoke might attract the opponent's assistants and accelerate her death.

The first abyss was filled with crises. Even earth knights were almost blinded here, nobody could confirm that those within dozens of miles were on their side.

"Hehehe, I've not f*cked a human woman yet. I, Salas will taste such a beautiful human knight today!"

The demon knight who chased Bai Suxian was an ox-headed demon. Ox-headed demons were born to be brutal and lascivious. If the female knight could commit suicide in the elite ox-headed demon's hand, she must be lucky enough.

When the ox-headed demon said this, its eyes flickered greed and excited glow while glancing over Bai Suxian's plump and sexy figure. At the same time, it increased its striking frequency, sparing no surplus time to Bai Suxian at all. Additionally, it kept drooling while a part below its waist under its skirt armor raised high at once.

This ox-headed demon was even one head higher than Cui Li, the current look of Zhang Tie. Therefore, the raising part below its waist was also as amazing as that of a donkey.

Bai Suxian narrowed her eyes at once while a long whip appeared in her hand. Closely after that, she fiercely whipped towards the raised part between the ox-headed demon's legs with a qi as sharp as sword qi.

The demon knight instantly tossed out its battleaxe which was made of abyss iron. With a bang, young sister's sharp strike was broken.

They soon carried out a close combat.

As Bai Suxian's overstrength was much weaker than a demon knight who was going to promote to an earth knight. Therefore, after a short while, Bai Suxian had been in the disadvantageous position completely.

Bai Suxian temporarily dodged the demon knight's strikes many times based on her agile movements. However, before she escaped, she was soon struck by the demon knight in magnet tactic.

Only after a couple of minutes, Bai Suxian had been oozing sweat all over.

On the contrary, the ox-headed demon knight felt gradually easier while drooling more and more saliva; especially the special female qi released from Bai Suxian's body when in combat which drove the ox-headed demon knight more thrilled.

The ox-headed demon knight hit her harder and harder but

carefully. It seemed that the demon knight didn't want to break Bai Suxian's body.

Bai Suxian gritted her white teeth and bore it hardly...

'It seems that I cannot escape without using that item. After using it, even if I couldn't kill this ox-headed demon, I would hurt it for sure and create a chance for myself to escape. However, it is too precious. I only have one. After using it this time, it would be hard for me to find another one...'

'Well, whatever, it's better than falling in the hand of this b*stard. It's really disgusting...'

At such a critical moment, when Bai Suxian felt reluctant to reach her hand towards her waist, a dreamlike voice sounded at her ears.

It sounded rude, straightforward, indolent and a bit rustic. Before coming to the earth realm, if Bai Suxian heard this voice, she might dodge far away; however, after coming to the earth realm, the moment she heard this voice, she would feel soft all over...

"Young sister, what are you performing? Is that the beauty and the beast or you're training a rutting buffalo in the circus?"

Closely with the voice was a man darting towards here at an unimaginable high speed with an abyss battle spear. At the same time, he fiercely whipped the abyss battle spear onto the raised part between the demon knight's legs...

It was such a powerful strike that Bai Suxian thought that she was dazzled.

Because the abyss battle spear bent over as it couldn't bear the great strength of the abyss battle spear. It was a natural physical reaction. Similarly, a slim bamboo strip would transform slightly if a kid forcefully whipped it. The strength passed to the bamboo strip from the kid's hand, then to the other end of the bamboo

stripe, causing a natural bend.

If the strength and speed didn't surpass the endurance limits of the bamboo strip, the bamboo strip would not bend over even though being whipped.

However, the bamboo strip could never match the endurance limits of an abyss battle spear.

Even an abyss battle spear could not bear the strength, how great the strength was!

Bai Suxian was shocked at once. She thought that she was dazzled.

However, the demon knight soon realized what happened.

Zhang Tie raided the demon knight. Now that he was treating a demon, Zhang Tie preferred to raid it rather than a head-on attack. Because he didn't need to launch a head-on attack towards a demon knight. Zhang Tie only stuck to one principle when fighting demon knights——kill them in the most unexpected manner at the fastest speed and the minimal cost and consumption. All the others are nothing but bullsh*t.

Before being raided, the demon knight had not fully released its protective battle qi when fighting Bai Suxian because it didn't think that another human powerhouse could give a favor to Bai Suxian at this moment. In the opinion of the demon knight, it only needed to resist the female human knight's strike with his protective battle qi. It was wasteful if it released too much protective battle qi.

Being extremely stimulated by Bai Suxian's beautiful look and female qi, the demon knight had not imagined that it would encounter such a powerful blow. However, when it realized what happened, it was already too late for it to release all of its protective battle qi.

In a split second, the demon knight's protective battle qi had

been broken like a watermelon being hammered by a pneumatic hammer on the steam forging machine...

The strike was too fast and destructive. Before the explosive strength of its protective battle qi touched its body, Zhang Tie's abyss battle spear had fiercely whipped onto the raised thing below the demon knight's skirt armor.

Of course, the hardest spear was the abyss battle spear in Zhang Tie's hand.

A bloody mist exploded between the demon knight's legs.

With an earth-shaking roar, the demon knight was sent over 700 m away by Zhang Tie as fast as a lightning bolt like a baseball...

Zhang Tie immediately caught up with it. Before the demon knight launched its first counterattack, it had been covered by Zhang Tie's dense thunder-like strikes...

Chapter 976: Partner

Previously, due to a sharp gap, Zhang Tie was almost mistreated by the demon general like a dog...

Now, due to a remarkable gap, Zhang Tie mistreated a knight as powerful as the demon general who was going to promote to an earth knight like a dog.

If in another scene, this demon knight called Salas might not become so embarrassed in such a transient time; however, as it was only obsessed with Bai Suxian's beautiful look and female qi, it was raided by Zhang Tie successfully and was destined to die.

Salas was not a gecko, who would not survive itself by abandoning its tail. Zhang Tie's strike almost broke the 'third leg' and the part above the thighs of the other two legs of the demon knight at the same time.

The abyss battle spear was amazingly powerful. Besides crippling Salas' three legs, it severely shocked its guts, causing the demon knight to spurt out blood while being sent flying over 700 m away.

Being very experienced in combats, how could Zhang Tie miss such a golden opportunity? Of course, he kept up striking the demon knight tempestuously.

Watching how Zhang Tie mistreated the demon knight crazily from afar, Bai Suxian thought that she was dreaming. She forcefully pinched her thigh while the sharp pain reminded her that it was not a dream.

This voice and this figure belonged to the very man whom she thought that she would never meet again in her life.

2 years ago, Bai Suxian thought that she had been familiar with Cui Li pretty well; however, when she saw Cui Li once again, she abruptly felt strange about this man.

Cui Li's power was out of Bai Suxian's imagination.

It was the demon knight's turn to release its battle qi smoke.

While being struck by Cui Li, the demon knight finally chose to release its battle qi smoke which served like the SOS that humans universally used before the Catastrophe. At the critical moment, the demon knight also expected a miracle.

Pitifully, the miracle didn't occur. No shadow demon knight could give Zhang Tie a "surprise" at this moment.

Only after a few minutes, with Salas's earthshaking shriek, its body was vaporized by the hot sun-like light that was released from Zhang Tie's palms, causing a bloody rain over the sky and finally disappeared into the dark mist.

The battle came to an end.

Under the gaze of Bai Suxian, the battle finally came to an end when Cui Li performed the movement "Overturn rivers and seas" of "Big Sun Fire Dragon Palm Skill". How overbearing and manly was Cui Li!

Zhang Tie caught the pair of ox horns that he especially kept and returned to Bai Suxian's front.

"Are you a man or a ghost?" Bai Suxian asked Zhang Tie as she watched the latter with a pair of watery eyes before Zhang Tie uttered.

"Haha, of course, I'm a human!" Zhang Tie burst out into laughter, "If humans could kill demon knights after becoming ghosts, demons have long been exterminated and the holy war has long come to an end!"

After hearing such a rude reply, Bai Suxian reconfirmed that he was Cui Li.

After hesitating for a short while, Bai Suxian asked another question, "When...when in the hieron ruins, didn't you die with the demon earth knight...we...we thought you were dead!"

"I didn't. But the earth demon knight died. Your brother Cui has trump cards; plus some wonderful experiences in the hieron!" Zhang Tie explained loudly and straightforwardly.

"Wonderful experiences?"

"A loss may turn out to be a gain. Your brother Cui killed an earth demon knight at the risk of his life!" Zhang Tie explained faintly.

After knowing that Zhang Tie didn't want to explain what he experienced in the hieron ruins explicitly, Bai Suxian didn't ask him about that anymore. As for a knight, the so-called trump cards and the details of wonderful experiences were as important as the contents of their cultivation methods, which were closely related to his life. No knight would like to expose his secrets. Wise people also knew the rules in the knight's world and didn't ask too much about that. Even commoners had secrets, not to mention knights.

Watching Bai Suxian being silent with a blush, Zhang Tie gave one ox horn to her, "Here's one ox horn as your booty. We chased the demon knight and killed it together, is your brother Cui fair?"

Even though only one ox horn could be exchanged for the corresponding benefits. This regulation was very human-friendly which was also beneficial to the coordination of knights in the fortress.

"You killed this demon knight. Of course, you should take the booty. Additionally, you saved my life, how could I take your booty?" Bai Suxian shook her head as she looked at Zhang Tie with a blush. She refused to take the booty.

Watching Bai Suxian's embarrassed look, Zhang Tie would not waste time on this trivial thing. He then directly teleported the pair of ox horns into his portable space-teleportation item.

Zhang Tie really made a bumper harvest in the hieron ruins. The two space-teleportation items that he gained from Old Monster Qi and the earth demon knight were both legitimate. Of course, he

didn't need to hide them at all; additionally, after promoting to an earth knight, Zhang Tie's overall strength could never be matched by that before. Even in Taixia Country, an earth knight was also qualified to be a provincial governor. Of course, he didn't need to be that meticulous like before.

Seeing the pair of ox horns disappearing in Zhang Tie's hands, Bai Suxian became startled as she woke up from her dreamlike thoughts.

After putting away his booty, Zhang Tie took a look at his abyss battle spear, which had bent over a bit. Holding the head of the battle spear by one hand, Zhang Tie slid over its rod which was as thick as a duck egg by the other hand, straightening it smoothly, together with Bai Suxian's eyes.

'It's a battle spear made of abyss iron. How could it become as soft as a noodle in this man's hand? How powerful is his hand?'

Bai Suxian was really scared by Zhang Tie's strength. When she recalled Zhang Tie's magnificent and casual movements when fighting and killing the demon knight in only a couple of minutes, Bai Suxian suddenly understood something. With her eyes widely opened, she watched Zhang Tie with an amazed look and asked him, "You...you've been an earth knight?"

"He...he...I'm too lucky, I'm too lucky!" Zhang Tie became modest as he put away his abyss battle spear into his portable space-teleportation item. At the same time, he told Bai Suxian straightforwardly, "It's safe here. I have to go. Young sister, take care of yourself..."

After saying that, Zhang Tie turned around and prepared to fly away. However, the moment he turned around, he had heard a painful groan...

Zhang Tie turned around once again when he saw Bai Suxian's face turning pale. Shaking in the air, she was covering her breasts with two hands, presenting a "heart" posture. Faintly frowning,

she turned weak instantly...

Bai Suxian had plump breasts; plus her current posture, the pair of "white rabbits" under her palace robe became more outstanding, which almost popped out of her robe. Therefore, Zhang Tie couldn't stand staring at her breasts a longer while. At the same time, he felt his throat dry.

"Ahem...ahem...young sister, what's the matter with you?" Zhang Tie asked what all the other men would ask under such a circumstance.

"Just now...this humble lady has been injured by the demon knight!" Bai Suxian replied with an emaciated look. Meanwhile, she watched Zhang Tie with a pair of watery eyes in a coquettish way, "Brother Cui, can you pity this humble lady this time and allow me to follow you a few days so that I could recover my injuries in case of encountering any other demon knights..."

Watching Bai Suxian's poor look, Zhang Tie touched his bald head as he felt pretty hard to refuse her, "Erm..alright!"

After staying in the hieron ruins over 2 years, Zhang Tie also wanted to ask a familiar person about the current situation in the earth-elements realm and the Lion Fortress. Now that he had met Bai Suxian, he would then give her a favor.

Bai Suxian flickered her eyes as she asked, "Brother, where are you heading for?"

"I've just come out of there. I've not fixed my destination yet. I'm going to survey the situation outside first!" Zhang Tie pointed at the entrance of the mountain cave in the far where Bai Suxian was going to escape from the demon knight's pursuit just now.

"Right in the mountain cave, I know a place to hide ourselves. How about having a rest there temporarily before making a further negotiation? As we've just fought the demon knight here, some enemies might be attracted here!" Bai Suxian inquired about Zhang

Tie's opinion.

"Fine, young sister, you take the lead!"

Bai Suxian then revealed a charming smile to Zhang Tie before flying towards the entrance of the mountain cave by swinging her sleeves, followed by Zhang Tie.

...

Given Bai Suxian's moving speed, Zhang Tie knew that she indeed was very familiar with the terrain here. Only after entering the mountain cave for 20 minutes, Bai Suxian had made a turn and entered a bypass which was strange to Zhang Tie. After taking turns in that bypass about half an hour, a patch of huge and high mushrooms appeared in front of Zhang Tie's eyes...

Chapter 977: Treatment and News

It was an underground karst space which covered tens of thousands of square miles in front of Zhang Tie. This karst space might be very large on earth's surface; however, in the earth-elements realm, it was as trivial as a bubble in the ocean.

Clouds were floating near the dome of this space, which indicated that a small climate had come into being in this karst space. The ground here was covered with huge mushrooms, which looked as spectacular as a red virgin forest.

Each huge mushroom was at least over 30 m in height while the biggest one was almost 100 m in height. The umbrellas of the huge mushrooms were as large as clouds.

In earth-elements realm, such a patch of huge mushrooms might have existed for tens of thousands of years safe and sound.

If not the holy war, many places in the earth-element realm would be filled with fairytales and romance. If tourism could be developed here, many people would like to pay a visit here by airboat at a high cost.

"We've almost arrived there!" Bai Suxian turned around and revealed a sweet smile at Zhang Tie.

"Hahaha, young sister, you're really romantic. What a romantic place!" Zhang Tie burst out into laughter.

Knights who chose to fight in the first abyss were all smart. They always prepared some places to hide themselves in case of emergencies. No matter what reason it was, a woman who could come to the earth-elements realm to fight demons was exceptional; therefore, Zhang Tie admired Bai Suxian more or less.

After hearing Zhang Tie's praise, Bai Suxian's eyes turned bright at once, "You also feel it's nice here?"

"Young sister, you have a good insight. This place is clean and

unique. Even if other knights broke in, they could not find you easily. Undoubtedly, it's a safe place!"

Bai Suxian felt pretty happy about Zhang Tie's comment.

10 minutes later, they flew into the depth of the huge mushroom woods. Bai Suxian then landed on the ground.

There was a brook on the ground being surrounded by some clusters of crystals. Some fish were swimming in the brook. Fish in water could adapt to the environment of earth-elements realm much better than most of living beings from the earth's surface. Most of the fish on the earth's surface could be found in the earth-elements realm.

Bai Suxian came to the foot of a huge mushroom. After clapping her hands, a palm-sized red spider had declined to the front of Bai Suxian from the top of the huge mushroom with a thread from its tail.

Bai Suxian stretched out her palm while the spider climbed onto her hand. It twisted its forelimbs and body as if it was expressing something. Bai Suxian watched its performance for a short while before putting it back.

"I've not imagined that young sister could control animals!" Zhang Tie became shocked. As an expert in controlling animals, of course, he knew what Bai Suxian was doing just now.

"Just a bit. I tamed a common red spider in the underground space so that it could be my watchdog. That spider told me that nobody had ever been here over the past couple of days!" Bai Suxian explained.

After hearing Bai Suxian's explanation, Zhang Tie admired her consideration. That underground red spider was not even a LV 1 living being. Therefore, it's very easy to tame it. However, if this red spider could be made use of properly, it was much more useful than a LV 15 battle spirit at the critical moment. No matter what it

was, as long as it could be used properly, it would play a great role. Bai Suxian had the red spider play its great role by being a sentry for her.

After putting the red spider back, Bai Suxian moved a few steps forward and jumped over 30 m high. She then pressed a place below the huge and sturdy umbrella. Closely after that, a cave was exposed to Zhang Tie. Bai Suxian floated inside before waving her hand towards Zhang Tie.

Unconsciously, Zhang Tie felt like having a date with a mistress in the wild when he flew towards that cave.

...

The moment Zhang Tie entered the stem of the huge mushroom, he had felt going back to the tree house when he attended the survival training in the Wild Wolf Valley. The stem of the huge mushroom was hollow, leaving a small space which covered over 10 square meters. There was a portal in this space, which could lead to the space below. It seemed that Bai Suxian had opened two rooms here.

The stem of the huge mushroom was a bit softer than those big trees on the earth's surface; therefore, a knight could open a room here easily.

The room inside was pretty clean and refreshing. There were a bed and a table. A whole set of beddings were put on the bed while some teacups and a delicate lotus-flower shaped glazed fluorite lamp was put on the table. The room was filled with realgar powders, which indicated a perilous signal for all the worms and snakes.

The moment Zhang Tie entered it, Bai Suxian had closed the door of the entrance. The entire room was then immersed in the romantic and warm light radiated by the pink crystal fluorite lamp.

The moment she closed the door, Bai Suxian had sat beside the bed and started to take off her black palace robe. Zhang Tie became dumbfounded, "Young sister, what are you doing..."

"What are you thinking about?" Bai Suxian threw a bashful glance at Zhang Tie. Closely after that, she turned around by twisting her butt and lay on the bed. At the same time, she covered her plump breasts by one hand and exposed her snow-white back to Zhang Tie. Right below the left shoulder of her snow-white back, there was a palm-sized blue area, "This humble lady was injured a bit by that demon knight. It's inconvenient for me to daub medicine on it, can you help this humble lady to daub some bloody jade ointment to stop bleeding, brother..."

Bai Suxian explained while a white jade vial appeared in her hand.

When he entered just now, Zhang Tie doubted that Bai Suxian carried a portable space-teleportation item. Because many items in the room were very delicate and luxurious, which might not be purchased from the Lion Fortress. A knight who went to the earth-elements realm for battle could not carry so many items. At the sight of the white jade vial which appeared in Bai Suxian's hand out of the void, Zhang Tie confirmed his presumption.

As a female knight, she could control animals with a precious portable space-teleportation equipment and dare come to the earth-element realm alone, Bai Suxian must have a noble status on the earth's surface!

Watching that Bai Suxian was waiting for him on the bed, Zhang Tie then strode towards the bedside and took her jade vial.

After opening the lid, he saw a red ointment inside, which gave out a bizarre fragrance, making Zhang Tie spirited all over.

It seemed that this bloody jade ointment was not common. At least Zhang Tie had not heard about this commodity as an elder of Huaiyuan Palace.

Zhang Tie dug a bit bloody jade ointment by finger and daubed it onto the blue area on the back of Bai Suxian.

Bai Suxian's skin was as snow-white as bitty cream, plump and carried a special fragrance. When Zhang Tie's fingers touched her skin, his fingers quivered a bit like being struck by the current. Zhang Tie's heart pounded unconsciously.

Zhang Tie forcefully spread the ointment over the blue area, causing Bai Suxian to utter a groan, being comfortable or painful. Zhang Tie was stimulated by her groan too much.

'What a spirit!'

Zhang Tie was not a virgin anymore. The moment he heard Bai Suxian's groan, he had known that this woman was alluring him and expecting him to do something.

At this moment, the beauty was lying on the bed, exposing her alluring skin. It seemed that she was waiting for Zhang Tie to sleep with her. Few men could bear such an allure. Zhang Tie even had to move his eyes away from Bai Suxian's snow-white back in case of being obsessed with her.

"Oh, young sister, how did you meet that demon knight?"

"...Hmm...the Tiewei Mountain in the first abyss is very boisterous at this moment...ahh...I was heading there...unfortunately I met it in the periphery of the Tiewei Mountain...hmm...brother...lighter...." Bai Suxian replied as she kept acting in coquetry.

'Tiewei Mountain? This place sounds a bit familiar.' Zhang Tie remembered that the three knights that he met with Mountain Lifting Hermit two years ago warned them that Tiewei Mountain was in an abnormal situation and persuaded them to be careful over there.

"What's happening in Tiewei Mountain?"

"A super large earth-elements crystal mine is discovered in

Tiewei Mountain...hmm...humans and...demons...hmm...are competing for it...hmm...human knights and demon knights have started a large-scale battle in Tiewei Mountain..."

'A super large earth-element crystal mine? A large-scale battle between human knights and demon knights? This is indeed a major event.' Neither humans nor demons could do anything but watch the opponent to gain a super large earth-element crystal mine. As for knights, earth-element crystals were a strategic resource. Any party which could gain it indicated that they could cultivate more earth knights and have more resources. Undoubtedly, this would be a catastrophe for the other party.

"Oh, do you know about the message of Mountain Lifting Hermit, Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan?"

"Mountain Lifting Hermit...hmm...has left the earth-elements realm two years ago and returned to the earth's surface...hmm...Gong Ziyao and Zhou Shufan...might...hmm...be near the Tiewei Mountain..."

Through Bai Suxian, Zhang Tie acquired some messages that he was concerned about and the major event in the earth-elements realm at this moment...

Tiewei Mountain had been the focus of humans and demons in the earth-element realm. At this moment, there were definitely over 20,000 human and demon knights near Tiewei Mountain while combats broke out all the time...

...

Chapter 978: Irresistible Beauty's Love Potion

After helping her daub the ointment on her back, Bai Suxian had been panting and soft all over on the bed. Zhang Tie's forehead was also covered with sweat. It seemed that he was more tired than that demon knight who had been killed just now.

It seemed that Bai Suxian was expecting something; however, Zhang Tie didn't make any excessive movement.

After daubing the ointment for her, Zhang Tie helped her zip up her clothes and cover her back and the sides of the pair of snowwhite and plump white rabbits. After that, he moved a couple steps back and said in a dry and hoarse voice, "It's okay, young sister..."

Bai Suxian got up and put on her clothes well with a blush and disordered hair. After that, she threw a resentful glance at Zhang Tie, which looked like sobbing and wailing. As a result, Zhang Tie felt soft all over and almost fell down on the ground.

'What a spirit!' Zhang Tie swore her inside once again as he took a kettle out of his portable space-teleportation equipment and quaffed some limpid and sweet mountain spring.

"Young sister, your external injuries have been examined but you still have some inner injuries. You need to take a rest here for a couple of days. It's tranquil here. Nobody would disturb you. This brother Cui will..." Zhang Tie wanted to escape away as he felt that he might have a great probability to lose his consciousness if he stayed one more day here. When a man and a woman stayed together alone, such a situation would be unavoidable.

"Brother, if you want to leave, just leave. This humble lady is too old and ugly to be favored by you!" Bai Suxian suddenly started to complain as she sighed faintly on her bedside, "This humble lady

heard that demons have many weird means to trace someone. When I fought the demon knight just now, I didn't know whether it had left any marks on my body. If brother left, some demon powerhouses might kill this humble lady. By then, this humble lady will not complain anymore that this humble lady is destined to die at such a young age!"

Zhang Tie opened his mouth as he touched his bald head. After hearing Bai Suxian's words, he really felt sorry to leave. If he just left her soon after acquiring the messages that he wanted to know from her, Zhang Tie felt like burning the bridge after crossing it. Additionally, Bai Suxian's concern was reasonable. Demons indeed had some weird means. If someone used a soul-chasing butterfly to chase after her, Bai Suxian was destined to die if she was left here alone.

"Erm...young sister looks like a fairy. If you're old and ugly, there would be no beauty in the world. Alright, this brother Cui will stay a couple of days with you. But it's your bedroom, it's inconvenient for a man and a woman to stay with each other alone. I will find a nearby huge mushroom and stay inside for the time being!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's praise, Bai Suxian's face instantly turned brightly pink. Touching her face, she watched Zhang Tie womanly and asked, "Brother Cui, you mean I look good?"

"Of course, you're pretty beautiful..."

"But why did you..." Bai Suxian looked bashful as she hesitated.

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter as he revealed the straightforward temperament of Cui Li once again, "Honestly, this brother Cui couldn't stand pressing onto the bed to f*ck you. However, this brother Cui was not used to bully weak ones. Given your emaciated figure, you might not be able to bear the torture. Therefore, I didn't do that..."

Having experienced Cui Li's "straightforward" temperament so many times, Bai Suxian had been a bit immune to Zhang Tie. After

hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, Bai Suxian revealed a bashful smile. Although she was not completely used to do that, she didn't feel it was shameful anymore. On the contrary, she felt that Zhang Tie was frank and sincere and was just a weirdo.

After talking with Bai Suxian for a short while, Zhang Tie wanted to find another hiding place nearby; however, the moment he wanted to leave, he heard a thunder from outside. Closely after that, he heard increasingly more dense rustling sounds on the stem and the umbrella of huge mushrooms only in a couple of seconds...

'It's raining! F*ck!'

At this moment, Bai Suxian rolled her eyes and suggested, "This humble lady's place is not a lion's den. Why not stay inside for a while, brother?" It's not late for you to find a huge mushroom to settle down when it stops raining!"

"Erm..."

"Are you cheating me? As you've saved my life twice, why not stay inside for a longer while? Do you feel that this humble lady is a shameless slut..." Bai Suxian said as she walked towards Zhang Tie. At the same time, she almost burst out into tears with her watery eyes...

Honestly, this method was really effective. Watching a woman crying in front of him was the last thing that Zhang Tie would like to do. He directly put up his hands and surrendered, "Well! I will take a seat here for a short while. You just deal with your injuries and leave me alone!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's reply, Bai Suxian's tears turned into smiles at once, "The room downside there is my cultivation room. If you want to have a rest, why not go downside there?"

After hearing Bai Suxian's words, Zhang Tei directly went to the other room in the huge mushroom.

It indeed looked like Bai Suxian's cultivation room. Because the

moment Zhang Tie entered it, he had seen an elements-gathering matrix, which was even larger and more advanced than that of Zhang Tie's.

'Such a precious elements-gathering matrix in a temporary site? That's luxurious!' Zhang Tie confirmed that Bai Suxian must have a deep background.

Now that everything had been prepared well here, Zhang Tie just sat beside the elements-gathering matrix with crossed legs and started to cultivate.

The water chakra of king roc sutra required more water elements than the number of earth elements required by the earth chakra. Therefore, it was more difficult for Zhang Tie to promote to a shadow knight as the process required him more efforts and payment. He could only complete it step by step.

Although the purgatory samsara method was powerful, it was a matter of chance than a choice for him to absorb the water elements from an earth demon knight. If not the karma in the pyramid, Zhang Tie would never promote to an earth knight so easily. He could not have such a rare chance anymore.

Therefore, Zhang Tie had been ready to promote to a shadow knight step by step like dripping water wearing through a stone and cutting a wood with a rope.

In the elements realm, the number of Zhang Tie's spiritual hands had grown to 21. Those hands being composed of his spiritual strength were moving rapidly in the elements realm by capturing the aqua blue multi-faceted water element crystals, pulverizing, refining and pouring them onto the complex patterns on his water chakra.

The elements-gathering matrix arranged by Bai Suxian was indeed much more effective than that of his.

After absorbing Old Monster Qi's spiritual energy, plus his

cultivation during the past 2 more years, Zhang Tie made a breakthrough in multitasking skill once again.

Now, Zhang Tie could visualize and control 21 abacuses in his mind at the same time. Nobody could do that among all the humans except for Zhang Tie.

Although Zhang Tie was cultivating and absorbing the water element in the elements realm, he still had a sharp perception of the surroundings due to his strong knight's consciousness as an earth knight.

Soon after Zhang Tie started his cultivation, he had heard someone playing water in his neighborhood.

Bai Suxian had taken out a big bathtub from her portable space-teleportation equipment and was taking a bath in his neighborhood.

Zhang Tie couldn't stand throwing a glance at the neighboring room through a wall...

Only after running his spiritual energy, the wall being composed of the stem of the huge mushroom had turned as transparent as glass. Bai Suxian was lying in a golden bathtub and highly raising her beautiful, slim and plump legs out of the bathtub. She was enjoying her enchanting figure with a faint smile...

Only after throwing a glance at the next room, Zhang Tie had hurriedly moved his eyes away; meanwhile, his heart pounded for a short while heavily.

'F*ck, this girl came to the first abyss with a bathtub.' Zhang Tie was shocked too much.

...

After 3 hours, it was still raining outside. Zhang Tie felt Bai Suxian entering the cultivation room and coming to his side. She moved her lips close to his ears and slightly rubbed his earlobe. Closely after that, Zhang Tie heard her tender, sweet voice,

"Brother, this humble lady has prepared some food and drinks, how about taking some..."

After saying that, Bai Suxian even blew air into Zhang Tie's ear...

Under this circumstance, Zhang Tie had to stop cultivating.

Opening his eyes, Zhang Tie turned around and caught sight of Bai Suxian who smelt as fragrant as the essence of daffodil after taking a bath.

This girl wore a black sleeveless short gown and a skirt, which were thinner and more transparent. It was completely a set of the diaphanous garment. There was an undergarment covering her breasts and abdomen, looming her plump breasts. Under her skirt was a pair of snowwhite legs...

...

Bai Suxian had prepared well a table of food and drinks in the neighboring room, which might not be bumper on the earth's surface; however, it was a big meal in the earth-elements realm.

Besides drinks, there were some jerkies, fruits and dried fruits on the table. Bai Suxian filled 8 plates with them.

After taking a seat, Zhang Tie became faintly stunned at the sight of the bottle of liquor; because this bottle was completely as same as the deserted one on the seaside which he had just seen.

'Was Bai Suxian the one who paid homage to me over there?'

After comparing the jerkies and dried fruits on the table with the residue at the seaside, Zhang Tie confirmed his presumption.

'I've not imagined that this woman could be so affectionate. I still lived in her mind even though I was already dead...'

Watching Zhang Tie gazing at the bottle of liquor, Bai Suxian revealed a sweet smile, "This is the "flowers drunk" that I preserved. Brother, are you worried about being dugged by me?"

As she said, she made a cup of liquor for herself and bottomed it

up. Closely after that, she made a cup of liquor for Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie watched Bai Suxian with a bit complex moods. When he was going to take the cup, his hand was pressed by Bai Suxian as the latter played the woman, "Now that the brother doubted this humble lady, I have to propose a toast to you!"

Zhang Tie revealed a smile, "Alright!"

Bai Suxian replied with a smile as she bottomed up the cup of liquor too. Closely after that, she stood up and moved closer to Zhang Tie. Lowering her body, she directly kissed Zhang Tie's mouth.

Her agile tongue then slid into Zhang Tie's mouth along with the liquid which smelt especially fragrant...

What a hot cup of liquor!

After all the liquid flew into Zhang Tie's mouth from Bai Suxian's tongue, Bai Suxian even circled her tongue around the inside of Zhang Tie's mouth twice and twisted with Zhang Tie's tongue a bit. Finally, she licked Zhang Tie's lips and returned to her own seat with a blush.

"How about this humble lady's cup of liquor?"

"Not bad, if you gave me some more, this brother Cui would not be able to bear it anymore!" Zhang Tie smirked in a heroic manner.

"I prefer that!" Bai Suxian covered her mouth by hand with a faint smile...

Zhang Tie then made two cups of liquor, one for Bai Suxian, one for himself. After that, he raised his cup with a solemn look and told Bai Suxian, "I have to propose a toast to you too. I did not expect you to be so affectionate cause you look uninhibited. I admit that I've made a wrong judgment about you. Mountain Lifting Hermit wrote an elegiac couplet for me and young sister offered a sacrifice to me at the seaside of the magma sea on the anniversaries of my death; the affectionate ones are the most precious in the

world. I've borne your friendship deep in mind!"

The two people then bottomed up at the same time...

...

Zhang Tie had not imagined that Bai Suxian could drug him.

After drinking only for an hour with Bai Suxian, Zhang Tie should not be drunk as this "flowers drunk" could never match the unrivaled dragon marrow liquor. Actually, "flowers drunk" was more like the champagne which female usually drunk. It was hard to get drunk with it.

Neither Bai Suxian nor Zhang Tie was drunk.

After the meal, Zhang Tie returned to the cultivation room and continued to cultivate. However, in less than 1 hour, he had felt hot all over while the place below his lower abdomen felt like being on fire. Even his mind turned manic. His mind was filled with Bai Suxian's snowwhite legs and the deep groove between her plump breasts when she was taking a bath.

It's a love potion! A colorless and tasteless love potion which could not even be resisted by knights.

This love potion would not harm one's body; instead, it would trigger one's qi, blood and essence in the short period so that one's glands could secrete more unconsciously. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't find that he had been drugged by Bai Suxian when drinking.

In Blackhot City, Zhang Tie had heard that some ruffians and scumbags in the city liked to drug women in bars. He had not imagined that he could be drugged by a beauty after promoting to an earth knight.

'F*ck you!' Zhang Tie really wanted to beat Bai Suxian's butt dozens of times forcefully so as to tell her what she was doing.

When Zhang Tie tried his best to resist the effect of the drug and wanted to ask for Heller's favor, he heard another thunder.

Closely after the thunder, Bai Suxian broke in, drilling into Zhang Tie's cradle and putting her arms around his neck.

"Ahh, it's thunder again. This humble lady's heart always runs unconsciously when I hear thunder. Brother, you touch it..." Bai Suxian felt hot all over as she caught Zhang Tie's hand and pressed it onto her breasts while panting tenderly.

Zhang Tie was on fire at once...

...

Chapter 979: Tiewei Mountain

10 days later, the first abyss...

Two shadows fluttered through the dense black mist in the first abyss and flew towards the overlapping mountains in the far...

"We will arrive at the periphery of Tiewei Mountain over 500 miles ahead..." Two people stopped while a woman uttered tenderly and sweetly.

"Tiewei Mountain is in this direction? Why didn't you tell me that earlier? You led me to fly over 700 miles more. We've wasted a lot of time on the way!" Another person forcefully slapped onto the woman's butt, causing a crispy sound. At the same time, the woman's plump butt quivered like jelly.

"This humble lady found that lord was a bit tired and wanted you to take a rest somewhere!" The woman said while pouting her petite mouth, "Additionally, the lord was happy when this humble lady served you just now. Why do you blame me for wasting time now?"

"You dare argue with me? Look at my palm!" The man waved his hand and gave another palm onto her butt.

The woman covered her mouth with a faint smile as she threw an "enchanted" glance at the man, "This humble lady dare not do that anymore!"

The man threw a glare at the woman. The woman then replied with a facial expression of being wronged.

The two people then continued to fly forward.

Over 10 minutes later, a team of 3 fully-armored human knights flew out of the dense black mist and encountered the two people who were flying forward.

"Stop!" One of the 3 human knights shouted immediately when

he saw the two people flying towards them from afar in the mist. At the same time, the three human knights became vigilant. Until they found the two arrivers were humans instead of demons did they become relaxed.

As for the two arrivers, one was a beauty in a blue-palace robe, the other was a tower-like tough man with a bald head who looked special.

The woman was beautiful enough while the man was strong and fierce enough just like how a gangster's head was followed by a coquettish woman. What a match!

Of course, they were Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian.

After being drugged and raped by a woman, Zhang Tie felt like losing his face; however, he had found his face back during the past days. The appellation "lord" was the certificate that Zhang Tie had found his face back.

After Zhang Tie found his face back and Bai Suxian recovered her injuries; of course, Zhang Tie would like to take a look at the large-scale battle between human knights and demon knights in Tiewei Mountain. Of course, Bai Suxian followed him here. It seemed that she had determined to be Zhang Tie's woman.

Bai Suxian was not a weak woman; as she dared stay in the earth-elements realm alone, she must be able to protect herself. Therefore, Zhang Tie agreed with her.

"What's up, three brothers?" Zhang Tie stopped and asked when he saw the three knights in front of him.

Given the three knight's looks, Zhang Tie knew that they were members of the black-armored army in Taixia Country. A group of 3 could form a 3-in-1 formation when in an emergency, in which way, they could fight any one or two knights below earth knights. When they encounter an earth demon knight or more than 4 black iron demon knights, they could reach an impasse with their enemy

or at least 1 of them could escape to seek for help in case of being exterminated. This was the rule of action among knights in armies in the earth-elements realm in the war.

After looking Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian up and down seriously, the head of the three knights asked, "Where'd you come from?"

The moment he heard this question, Zhang Tie had realized that human knights were urgently demanded in the large-scale war in Tiewei Mountain. Therefore, human knights were arranged to be sentries at the periphery of the Tiewei Mountain in case that demons or moles of Three-eye Association joined in the war and bring more troubles to humans.

"I'm Cui Li, this is my paramour Bai Suxian. I know Wu Guanhai. We've stayed in the earth-elements realm for over 2 years. After being told that a large-scale war broke out here in Tiewei Mountain, we'd like to take a look here!" Zhang Tie put it straightforwardly.

After hearing the word "paramour", the three human knights of black armored army threw two more glances at Bai Suxian. Bai Suxian then pinched Zhang Tie's arm bashfully.

"A few days ago, demon knights have made a lot of troubles in our territory in the incarnation of human demons. Therefore, inspection is becoming stricter near the human strongpoints of Tiewei Mountain these days!" After hearing that Cui Li knew Wu Guanhai, the three black armored knights treated Zhang Tie more politely, "If you want to enter Tiewei Mountain, you'd better learn about the latest situation from some human strongpoints. The nearest strongpoint near the periphery is over 250 miles in front of you..."

"Sure, thanks!"

After that, Zhang Tie flew away, closely followed by Bai Suxian who hit Zhang Tie's waist by hand and asked in a low voice, "Paramour? Lord, couldn't you find another word..."

"If you don't like the word "paramour", do you prefer "male and female intrigants"?" Zhang Tie glared at Bai Suxian with a strong qi field, "You're not married. This brother Cui's not married either. Even if we want to be male and female intrigants, it sounds improper. Although this brother Cui is rude, I never sleep with other's wife. As you've slept me, who else is my paramour if not you?"

Bai Suxian loved Zhang Tie's explanation very much. After hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, she became more docile, "As long as lord likes it, no matter what you call this humble lady!"

"Hmm..." Zhang Tie replied with a muffled harrumph as he continued to fly forward.

...

Until Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian disappeared in their vision did one of the three black armored knights remembered something, "Yi? Don't you feel the name Cui Li is familiar?"

"Yup, I also feel that I've heard that name somewhere!" Another knight frowned.

"Is he that extremely rightly Cui Li?"

"Ahh? Wasn't he dead?"

"It might be a coincidence!"

As Zhang Tie's qi felt calm, the three black armored knights didn't find that he had promoted to an earth knight.

...

40 minutes later, a strongpoint of the periphery which was mentioned by the three black armored knights appeared in front of Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian.

It was a pretty huge battle fortress in the air.

Compared to the common human battle fortresses on the earth's surface, this one was like a super large airboat.

9 dragon heads namely 9 entrances of the battle fortress reached out of the bottom of the airboat and pointed at 9 directions. Above the 9 dragon heads was a high and huge upper metal structure, whose length and width both surpassed 1,000 m. It was many times larger than the commander-level airboat that Zhang Tie had ever seen. Suspending in the air, it looked pretty magnificent.

In the distance of the battle fortress, although being covered with dense mist, Zhang Tie could still see overlapping high mountain ranges, which were called Tiewei Mountain.

Such an airboat might only be found in the earth-elements realm. Only Taixia Country could produce it. As for humans knights who deepened into the Tiewei Mountain to join the battle, such an airboat was the logistics supply base and information control center.

At the sight of such a huge airboat for the first time, Zhang Tie was shocked inside. Numerous human knights were accessing to the 9 dragon heads in terms of light points. The atmosphere seemed to be intense.

Although the 9 dragon head-shaped entrances looked small from afar, when Zhang Tie moved closer to them, he found that each dragon head's mouth was over 10 m in width, which could be available for a few people to access to it at the same time.

Someone was hurriedly entering there while someone else was hurriedly coming out of there. Most of those entering there were injured or carrying traces of battle.

Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian then flew to an entrance in a casual way.

There were also guards outside the entrance. Those who wanted to enter the airboat had to break their finger on a spiny ball-shaped device and drop their blood onto the device. They were not allowed to enter it until the spiny ball turned red.

They used this method to identify demons. The knights at the entrance would pay attention to the examination result about the entrant. As Zhang Tie's sturdy figure and Bai Suxian's blue-palace robe were like brands, the moment they arrived, they had aroused the attention of the guards at the entrance.

Zhang Tie broke his finger on the spiny ball. When the spiny ball turned red, he walked in the airboat. Bai Suxian also imitated him and did the same before following him in.

No matter how powerful one was on the earth's surface, he was not supposed to be privileged in the earth-elements realm.

After entering the airboat and passing through the gate of the battle fortress, Zhang Tie felt open at once while his eardrums were beaten by the loud noises. A square appeared in front of him, which was surrounded by high buildings. Those knights were flying among these buildings. In the middle of the square, there was a huge, round information control center. Right above it, there was a huge high-power crystal optical imaging device. A three-dimensional map was set on the device, which presented the current battle situation between demons and humans near the Tiewei Mountain.

Zhang Tie threw a glance at the map and found that the three huge red arrows on behalf of humans were wrestling with some black arrows on behalf of demons in the depth of the center of Tiewei Mountain. Besides, red and black forces were crisscrossing within each other in a wider periphery of the center.

The huge red and black arrows in the center of Tiewei Mountain almost remained unchanged. By contrast, those red and black arrows in the surroundings which were slowly changing their locations; they would disappear or appear somewhere at any time. Those fighters in logistics uniforms of Lion Fortress were constantly rushing in or out of the information control center with remote-sensing information. Many knights were waiting in readiness outside the information desks. After receiving their

tasks, they would leave there right away.

The three-dimensional map jumped once again while a black arrow appeared near a mountain range on the map.

"A team of 3 demon knights discovered near No. 6403 mountain range; they are moving towards the east. Brothers, let's go..." A tough Hua man in black armor raised his sword as he shouted. Almost at the same time, some knights who were waiting for tasks rushed outside voluntarily after him...

This might be a lethal trap, which could be set by both humans and demons; however, the human knights still rushed out without any hesitation.

This was how the war went. Give tit for tat! In such a fierce battle situation, they could not give up their actions just because that they doubted the possible dangers.

"Where's the doc...where's the ambulance men...my brother is going to die...hurry..." A knight being covered with injuries broke in with a man being covered with blood in his cradle.

The knight directly flew over Zhang Tie's head as fast as the wind, dropping some blood onto Zhang Tie's face and shoulders...

A lot of people in white clothes ran towards here while the one in the front shouted, "Hurry, prepare No. 1, No. 2 medicaments, operating table, wounds healing glue, blood..."

Zhang Tie reached out his hand to touch his face. His fingers turned red instantly...

At the sight of Zhang Tie's poor look, Bai Suxian was driven mad. The moment she wanted to argue with them, Zhang Tie stopped her by gripping her arm as he shook his head, "It's okay!"

Watching this scene and sensing this atmosphere, Zhang Tie became a bit absent-minded as he felt like returning to the Selnes Theater of Operations...

Chapter 980: Reward

Zhang Tie had fought and bled in Selnes Theater of Operations. He had a lot of memories over there. At that time, Zhang Tie served as the only human air cavalry in the Selnes Theater of Operations. Although it looked very honorable, he was actually a cannon fodder. Finally, he was betrayed by b*stards of Three-eye Association among humans and almost lost his life like what the other small figures were destined to face on the battlefield.

Whereas, Zhang Tie didn't regret what happened in Selnes Theater of Operations. He would still return to the Selnes Theater of Operations and contribute his strength to the holy war as a human fighter as long as he was demanded.

However, Zhang Tie was not the same one in Selnes Theater of Operations anymore.

When in Selnes Theater of Operations, Zhang Tie was just a LV 10 fighter; however, now, Zhang Tie had already become an earth knight who was unrivaled on many subcontinents.

When in Selnes Theater of Operations, Zhang Tie was a hero as the Selnes Eagle; however, now, Zhang Tie was a convict being wanted across Taixia Country.

Although Zhang Tie would still bleed for humans; many things had altered. He became more mature. As a result, he knew which way of bleeding was most valuable for an earth knight instead of sparing his blood for humans.

In the distance, the knight being covered with injuries was standing still. Some doctors intended to deal with his injuries; however, that knight became berserk at once as he pushed away the doctors at once and roared, "Leave me alone...save my brother..."

The similar thing had happened many times in the air battle

fortress. Therefore, they were not strange about that. Knights were also humans and had emotions such as grief. Few people could stay calm when they found that their brothers and familiar comrade-in-arms might die in front of them.

The earth-elements realm was the battlefield between human knights and demon knights. It was as normal as how common fighters sacrificed in the battlefields on the earth's surface.

"Lord, what will we do?" Bai Suxian became docile and asked Zhang Tie tenderly after being stopped by the latter and sensing the latter's emotion.

Zhang Tie watched the bustling lobby and took in a deep breath before replying, "The war in Tiewei Mountain would not come to an end in a short period. As this strongpoint is on the periphery of the battlefield with so many human knights; it's pretty safe. Additionally, we could acquire intelligence here. We will settle down here to learn about the battle situation for the time being!"

Bai Suxian nodded. Although Zhang Tie looked rude, given his decision, he was not rude at all; instead, he was very considerate. Honestly, Bai Suxian was really worried about her "lord" rushing to the frontline due to the excitement. It was very normal for black iron knights to lose their lives in the first abyss. It was not strange that earth knights were killed here. Even Shadow knights might also lose their lives here even though there was less news about that.

As Zhang Tie replied, he led Bai Suxian to the information desks beside the information control center.

This air battle fortress was very huge, which contained many rooms. It could hold tens of thousands of people at least. Any human knights entering it would have a room. This also explained the meaning of the existence of this strongpoint.

When Zhang Tie passed by that wounded knight, he threw a glance at him and said, "You look like a girl standing here. You will

not do any favor to your brother's wounds; If I were you, I would cure my injuries as fast as possible. If my brother was killed, I would revenge for him by chopping off demons' heads!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's suggestion, the knight quivered all over. He moved his eyes onto Zhang Tie; however, Zhang Tie didn't speak any more; instead, he just walked away. Bai Suxian threw a glare at that guy.

Zhang Tie came to the front of one information desk.

"Hello, what can I do for you?" A female first lieutenant with a beautiful oval face in short hair asked him behind the desk.

"We want to settle down here. Please prepare two rooms for us!" Zhang Tie replied.

Standing behind the information desk, this plump female first lieutenant wore a short skirt, the lower hem of which reached the knees of her fair legs. Her plump breasts almost popped out of her uniform. She looked so womanly that Zhang Tie couldn't stand throwing glances at her.

Those who could enter the air battle fortresses were all legitimate human knights. Those human knights who could come to the Tiewei Mountain were a great force of human defense line. Therefore, after hearing Zhang Tie's words, the female first lieutenant immediately revealed a passionate smile, "Well, two rooms, we will prepare them for you right away!"

Before Zhang Tie uttered, Bai Suxian had pulled Zhang Tie's arm and pushed herself to Zhang Tie's side by pasting her plump breasts onto Zhang Tie's body. Closely after that, she raised her head and told the female first lieutenant, "One is enough."

The female first lieutenant threw a weird glance at Bai Suxian and Zhang Tie before lowering her eyes, "Well, one room. Your room number is 2064. We will keep the room for you all the way until this strongpoint leaves Tiewei Mountain. Here are the keys to

the room. As for those human knights in this strongpoint, we would provide you with free three meals and medical services; additionally, entertainment facilities such as knights' bar would be open to you for free..."

The female first lieutenant took out two keys from the counter and pushed them in front of them.

"Thanks!" Zhang Tie took the keys and threw one of them to Bai Suxian before leaving there.

...

"Lord, do you like this female first lieutenant?" After leaving the information desk a few footsteps, Bai Suxian's jealous sound had rung into Zhang Tie's ears in a secret way, which could only be heard by Zhang Tie.

"Shut up!" Zhang Tie glared at Bai Suxian.

"I've seen that. Lord, you've gazed at her breasts and legs for a few times with bright eye light!" Bai Suxian pouted her petite mouth.

Zhang Tie directly slapped her butt as he sighed inside that this woman really had a terrifying observation ability and intuition. Because of Miss Daina, Zhang Tie had a special taste about females since young. At school, Miss Daina always wore short skirts whose lower hem reached her knees or tightskin short skirt; plus a pair of black leather shoes and flesh-colored silk stockings, revealing her beautiful plump legs. Additionally, she wore a shirt or a female suit, outstanding her plump breasts pretty much. At the sight of her, Zhang Tie would desire for ascending and liberating her.

The female first lieutenant's dress was similar to that of Miss Daina; therefore, Zhang Tie couldn't stand throwing glances at her; however, he had imagined that his casual movements could be observed by Bai Suxian.

...

The rooms in the air battle fortress were not large. The double room No. 2064 only covered over 40 square meters. Besides two beds, two wardrobes and one toilet, there was no surplus furnishings in the room. Additionally, these furniture were basically metal supports being fixed onto the metal walls and metal floor of the room. There were exposed metal alloy pipelines over the walls and in the surroundings of the room, which could maintain the operation of this huge air battle fortress like blood vessels of the human body.

The room was small; however, it was clean and tidy. Everything inside was new. What made Bai Suxian excited was that she could take a bath inside.

Soon after she closed the door, Bai Suxian had started to take off her clothes while twisting her slim waist in front of Zhang Tie, "Lord, come on, let this humble lady serve you for a bath!"

After slapping her butt once more, Zhang Tie closed the door from outside, leaving Bai Suxian in the room alone. He then left the room for the knights' bar in the battle fortress.

If he wanted to learn about the latest battle situation near Tiewei Mountain, besides the map being covered with colorful arrows, the knights' bar was the best place. Additionally, Zhang Tie wanted to inquire about the location of his old friends Gong Ziyao, Zhou Shufan and Filton. Only after figuring out these things could Zhang Tie make his further plan.

He would definitely kill demons here. It would be better if he could kill two earth demon knights. What counted most was that he had to prepare for coming back to the earth's surface.

As humans were fighting demons on a large scale in Tiewei Mountain, it was a good opportunity for him to become well-known and return to the big stage in Taixia Country. From then on, the name Cui Li would win the awe of all the humans as human knights here would spread his name all over the human world.

As Elder Muyuan once said——Over the past 5000 years, few people could make a great undertaking without becoming well-known!

When one wanted benefits, he had to be well-known first. His status as an earth knight was the pass to access to the top circle in Taixia Country. The one who framed him should be at least a shadow knight who had formed his water chakra. If not enter this top circle in Tiaxia Country, how did he fight those people who framed him?

...

"Cui Li?" A strange voice sounded behind Zhang Tie the moment Zhang Tie wanted to enter the knights' bar after making turns here and there.

'Someone knows me here?'

Zhang Tie turned around and saw a black armored tough guy with whiskers striding towards him with two black armored knights on his sides.

Zhang Tie turned around when the sturdy knight widely opened his eyes and raised his voice instantly, "Is that you, Cui LI?'

Cui Li's tower-like figure and bald head were unique signs. Anyone who saw him would have a deep impression about him.

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter, "Hahahaha, who else do you think I am? I've not imagined that black-armored army is really well-informed. Young brother Guanhai, you came here for me very fast."

After hearing Zhang Tie admitting his status, the two knights on both sides of Wu Guanhai were shocked. Closely after that, when they heard Zhang Tie lifting his own seniority by calling Wu Guanhai young brother loudly, the two knights revealed a furious look at the same time; one of them turned cold and directly put his hand onto the sword handle at his waist...

Everybody in Taixia Country knew that Black-armored knights were bad-tempered...

Wu Guanhai also revealed a strange look. He stretched out his hand and stopped the knight who was going to move one step forward. After looking at Zhang Tie for a while, he changed his face faintly, "Earth knight!"

"Young brother Guanhai has a good eyesight!"

After hearing that Zhang Tie was an earth knight, the knight who was going to pull out his sword instantly became kind as he moved his hand away from the sword handle and moved one step back.

In the knights' world, those who had a greater battle strength and greater learning would be more venerable. If an earth knight called a black iron knight young brother regardless of age, he was respecting him and showing his kindness instead of lifting his own seniority.

"Two years ago, Cui Li's righteousness had been spread over the Lion Fortress. He voluntarily died together with the earth demon knight in the hieron ruins for the sake of the lives of the other human knights. When I heard that, I admired and pitied you too much. But how could you..." Wu Guanhai watched Cui Li with a dubious and amazed look.

It was already amazing for Cui Li to promote to an earth knight in only 2 years, let alone the dead extremely righteous man reappeared in the battle fortress.

"Haha, it's a long story. The God didn't want me to die. Therefore, I got good out of misfortune. As I've just come to the Tiewei Mountain, young brother Guanhai, how about having a chat inside the bar?"

Wu Guanhai burst out into laughter, "Nice!"

The group of 4 then entered the bar...

In the bar, Zhang Tie briefed his experience in the hieron ruins as what he had told Bai Suxian, namely "trump card" and "wonderful experience". After hearing that, Wu Guanhai and the other two human knights both clicked the tongue in wonder and didn't ask him too much about that. After all, it was concerned about an earth knight's top secrets. Now that Zhang Tie didn't want to say that, they would not ask him about the details anymore. They only needed to confirm that this Cui Li was the very one they wanted to see.

Wu Guanhai heard an intelligence from the Black Armor Army—a pair of strange man and woman entered this strongpoint. Before entering the strongpoint, the man encountered a patrol team of black armor army at the entrance of the air battle fortress and told them that he knew Wu Guanhai. Therefore, after accomplishing his task, Wu Guanhai came to confirm whether this Cui Li was disguised as a demon knight or not.

"The battle situation seems to be very urgent. Even human knights' status should be confirmed." Zhang Tie asked Wu Guanhai.

Wu Guanhai revealed a bitter smile as he looked around the bar, "That shadow demon is already an earth knight. It could change into anyone's look casually. Because of the existence of this shadow demon, we've already lost two batches of logistics materials and four black iron knights who were raided by it. In order to not arouse the panic of knights and cause greater troubles, we only told them that it was a shadow demon; instead of revealing its level as an earth demon knight. The shadow demon is very tricky. In order to not spare any chance to it, the word of command of our tasks would change everyday..."

Zhang Tie touched his jaw and asked, "Does the shadow demon have any laws in movements?"

"The shadow demon is very cunning. It almost has no fixed laws of movements. We only know that it likes to act in the periphery of

the battlefield alone. Sometimes, it would slide into the human knights' squad. The moment it caught an opportunity, it would stab people on their backs and kill them instantly. It's very troublesome. Common black iron knights could not effectively deal with its means at all. However, in the earth-elements realm and near the Tiewei Mountain, many black iron knights would like to act independently; therefore, it's very hard to catch this shadow demon as long as it disguises as a black iron human knight!"

"This shadow demon sounds really tricky. Although our strongpoint could be safeguarded, knights who act alone on the outside have to take care of themselves!" Zhang Tie also let out a sigh.

"Yup, an earth knight-level shadow demon is much more troublesome than a common earth demon knight!" Wu Guanhai nodded as he continued, "The superiors have delivered a command that anyone who could kill this earth knight-level shadow demon would be rewarded with ten cities and 700 miles' land..."

"Being rewarded with ten cities and 700 miles' land!" Zhang Tie was shocked by such a great reward, which could only be afforded by Taixia Country.

Although a common shadow demon was not that worthwhile, an earth knight-level shadow demon was definitely worthwhile.

There were very few shadow demons, not to mention earth knight-level shadow demon. Because earth knight-level shadow demon would cause a great trouble to humans; therefore, humans should eliminate it as soon as possible.

As such a high reward was offered, brave fellows were bound to come forward. Ten cities and 700 miles' land was definitely an irresistible allure for any human knight.

Zhang Tie's heart raced. 700 miles' land meant over 1 million square kilometers; plus 10 cities. It was amazing even if they were just 10 small cities. Cities in Taixia Country would never be bad. It

was equal to the territory of a prefecture in a lower province of Taixia Country.

In the battlefield, such a reward was the trump card for inspiring the morale of humans. Even though nobody could finally kill that earth knight-level shadow demon, such a reward could at least eliminate their fear and pluck up their courage.

Of course, such a shadow demon was harmful to humans; however, an able superior could turn the bad thing into a good thing. Such a reward also required a great charisma. Not everyone could make such an amazing decision. Some countries in Waii Subcontinent might not even be as large as this reward.

A lot of thoughts occurred in Zhang Tie's mind when he heard about this reward.

"How's the battle situation between humans and demons in Tiewei Mountain?" Zhang Tie tossed out another question.

"The frontline is in the center of Tiewei Mountain. A super large earth-element crystals mine was discovered over there. It was said that there were over 1 million earth-elements crystals over there. Both parties are confronting each other over there. As each party has a heavenly knight, when they fight each other, they are organizing their own force to exploit the resource. It depends on who's faster and more powerful; however, neither party has an overwhelming advantage..."

...

After chatting with Wu Guanhai 2 hours in the bar, Zhang Tie almost made his plan. Therefore, he returned to his room.

The moment he opened the door, he had seen Bai Suxian.

Bai Suxian had changed another set of clothes. Instead of wearing the palace dress, she wore a whole set of female military uniform with a super short skirt, the lower hem of which had just reached her thighs. The snow-white thighs and black high-heeled shoes

almost dazzled Zhang Tie.

The military rank on the uniform was a major general.

Zhang Tie became dumbfounded.

Twisting her waist, Bai Suxian walked towards him with a faint fragrance, "Lord, do you like me..."

Chapter 981: All is Well

The terrain of Tiewei Mountain was very special.

If one observed Tiewei Mountain, one would see a huge special terrain being composed of annular mountain ranges.

The annular mountain ranges contained a large number of hematites which contained high iron content. Therefore, many mountain ranges of Tiewei Mountain looked maroon.

The annular mountain ranges were regularly distributed. Over millions of square miles, there were 6 loops of annular mountain ranges from the center to the periphery of Tiewei Mountain like rings on the target.

Such a special terrain could be simply and regularly named in military geography.

When treating Tiewei Mountain as a huge dial, its north direction was 0 o'clock; its south direction was 6 o'clock; its west direction was 9 o'clock; its east direction was 3 o'clock.

The core loop of Tiewei Mountain was named 1, the plain and basin where humans and demons were confronting each other in the middle of this annular mountain range were named 0; the 2nd loop from the center of Tiewei Mountain was named 2, the 3rd loop was named 3, likewise.

Plus the very height of each mountain peak, a digital code could be used to position any location of Tiewei Mountain.

Take 6403 as an instance, 6 referred to the most peripheral annular mountain range of Tiewei Mountain; 4 referred to 4 o'clock direction on the map; 03 referred that the height of a mountain range was about 300 m. When these numbers were connected, it represented that the enemy was near the main peak about 300 m in height in the southeast direction of the 6th loop annular mountain.

Anyone who was familiar with the naming principle could precisely locate the target in their mind.

...

2 months after Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian came to Tiewei Mountain...

In the region 5843 of Tiewei Mountain...

The battle broke out abruptly. When Zhang Tie darted out of the black mist as fast as a lightning bolt and covered a squad of 3 demon knights with the fiery battle qi from his abyss battle spear, the three ox-headed demon knights were shocked. They could only resist Zhang Tie's attack flurriedly.

The moment they fought Zhang Tie, the three ox-headed demon knights had known that they were facing a powerful earth human knight through the terrifying destructive power and overwhelming stress from Zhang Tie's abyss battle spear.

When three black iron knights encountered an earth knight, the most standard and correct tactic movement was that the moment the two parties touched each other, the black iron knights should evacuate as fast as possible without any fluke mind. Unless the opponent was below an earth knight!

If the three black iron knights stayed, they were destined to be exterminated. However, If they evacuated in the first abyss where the visibility was low, at least two of them could survive; fortunately, the third one could also escape.

The three ox-headed demons started to evacuate at high speeds in three directions.

Based on his perception, Zhang Tie selected an ox-headed demon knight who looked sturdier with a greater battle strength.

When the ox-headed demon found that the earth human knight was chasing after it, it had no other choice but to release its battle qi smoke out of grief and indignation...

The battle came to an end very fast, at least for that ox-headed demon knight. Since the beginning of the combat, it had been in defense. This earth human knight didn't even spare any chance for him to launch a counterattack before involving it into the boiling fiery battle qi of the abyss battle spear. As a result, it became more and more embarrassed and was increasingly closer to breakdown and death.

The demon knight wanted to escape; however, it found that it had no chance to escape at all as this earth human knight was much faster than it. Since the earth human knight selected it, it had been destined to be killed.

As was imagined, only after a few minutes...

"Go die!" With a roar, Zhang Tie's abyss battle spear finally penetrated through the demon knight's chest. With the ox-headed demon knight's painful shriek, its body was shattered by Zhang Tie's abyss battle spear into pieces, except for its ox horns and the spiny hammer which was tossed high in the air.

Zhang Tie caught the ox horns and the spiny hammer and put them away into his space-teleportation equipment. Closely after that, he headed towards another direction.

A couple of minutes later, another ox-headed demon knight appeared in front of Zhang Tie's eyes.

Bai Suxian had wrestled it with her long whip and was in an advantageous position while panting faintly.

Although Bai Suxian looked tender and beautiful, her movements were definitely more vicious than common black iron knights. The long whip was both agile and vicious, which could be used for short-distance defense and long-distance strike like a fierce boa. As a result, the demon knight kept uttering weird shrieks.

With a flier, Zhang Tie rushed over there. At the sight of Zhang Tie, the ox-headed demon became hopeless at once.

Being besieged by an earth human knight and a black iron human knight, the demon knight had no chance to survive itself; additionally, now that Zhang Tie could come here so fast; it indicated that another partner which Zhang Tie had just selected probably had been killed.

With a roar, the ox-headed demon knight released its boiling battle qi and started to launch a counterattack towards Bai Suxian instead of dodging her. It chopped towards Bai Suxian's head by its huge saber.

It seemed that Bai Suxian had long known that this cornered beast would do something desperate. At the sight of Zhang Tie, she had intended to expand the distance between her and the demon knight.

How come Zhang Tie would allow this salty fish on the chopping board to bite Bai Suxian at this moment?

Before the demon knight drew close to the front of Bai Suxian, it had been whipped and sent flying over 100 m away by Zhang Tie. Spurting out blood in a severe way, it might have broken a lot of bones.

...

After a few minutes, when Zhang Tie broke the demon knight's legs by his abyss battle spear, Bai Suxian's long whip wrestled over the demon knight's neck like an agile snake, sending the demon knight's head flying away while its protective battle qi had long been damaged.

Bai Suxian instantly caught its head by her long whip and put it away in her space-teleportation item while Zhang Tie picked up the demon knight's battle saber which was made of abyss iron and put it away in his own space-teleportation item.

Most black iron demon knights knew that they might lose their lives on battlefields in the first abyss; therefore, they carried very

few items. Basically, besides a weapon and the pair of ox horns on their heads, they would not leave anything valuable. Except for that earth demon knight whom he had captured, Zhang Tie almost had not found anything else valuable from any black iron demon knight. Occasionally, he would meet guys with medicament; however, before death, those demon knights would always use up the medicament or destroy it. They would not leave any medicament to Zhang Tie even though they were killed.

Although this saber being made of abyss iron was a bit level lower than the copper secret item, it could also break through the black iron effect. Because abyss iron could strengthen firmness and sharpness, all the weapons being made of abyss iron were at least granted with the rune effect of LV 3 firmness or sharpness; however, weapons being made of abyss iron could almost perform the rune effect of LV 4 firmness and sharpness. The other rune effects didn't work well on abyss iron.

All the abyss iron weapons of demon knights were granted with the rune effect of LV 3 firmness or sharpness instead of other rune effects.

Although such weapons didn't have extra rune reinforcing effects, they were very practical and barely damaged. As for people who had silver secret items, these weapons might be average; however, as for powerhouses below knights, abyss iron weapons were what they dreamed for. Any knight's equipment like this one would be qualified to be a hereditary treasure for commoners. Some people who had just promoted to a black iron knight might not have such an abyss iron weapon.

Of course, Zhang Tie would not waste such a good item.

Actually, besides being made of weapon, the top function of abyss iron was that it could be used to make the knight's armor. A set of full-body battle armor being granted with LV 4 firmness effect which was made of abyss iron could enhance the full-body protective capability of a knight to one level higher, which was

dreamed by most of the knights.

...

After putting away the demon knight's head and weapon in a tacit manner, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian smiled at each other.

"Your long whip is more agile and powerful!" Zhang Tie praised Bai Suxian.

Bai Suxian threw a coquettish glance at Zhang Tie, "With Lord's instructions, of course, this humble lady could use it better!"

After hearing Bai Suxian's pun, Zhang Tie burst into laughter.

"Lord, are we going to chase after the last demon knight?"

"No need, that demon knight has been too far away. We will not find it. As we've made fruitful achievements these days, we should return to the strongpoint for an adjustment!" Zhang Tie turned around his head and said calmly while he looked at the dense black mist in the far with his lotus-flower eyes.

Actually, even though the demon knight had been over 70 miles away in the dense mist and changed its route twice, Zhang Tie could still see it.

If he wanted, he could catch up with it for sure; however, it was not necessary for him to do that...

Additionally, Zhang Tie could see another squad of demon knights lurking in the 4th loop of the annular mountain range; but it had nothing to do with him!

On the big stage in the earth-elements realm between humans and demons, it was not a wanted convict's turn to show off his battle strength, although he was framed by demons!

All is well! As long as he could deal with things properly under such circumstances, he was smart enough!

After that, Zhang Tie led Bai Suxian towards the air battle fortress in the periphery of Tiewei Mountain...

Chapter 982: Being Well-Known in the Black Armor Battlefortress

After a short while, the familiar air battle fortress had appeared in front of Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian.

This air battle fortress belonged to the Black Armor Army and was named as Black Armor Battlefortress. It was a trump card for Black Armor Army of Taixia Country in Earth-elements Realm. Besides the Black Armor Battlefortress, there were two more battle fortresses near the center of Tiewei Mountain, namely the God's Will Battlefortress and the Feathers Battlefortress. In the air of Tiewei Mountain, the three battle fortresses could coordinate with each other as the core strongpoints of humans near Tiewei Mountain.

Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian entered Black Armor Battlefortress through one entrance after testing their blood once again while many knights and auxiliary battle personnel in the square saluted them.

"Ahh, the unrivaled male and female..." Someone uttered in a low voice.

Over the past two months, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian had long been well-known in the Black Armor Battlefortress based on their eye-catching figures and military exploits, especially Zhang Tie.

Cui Li the extremely righteous human knight survived himself in the hieron ruins and promoted to an earth knight. Such a legendary story almost spread over the entire Black Armor Battlefortress over the past month. Not only knights, even many logistics and auxiliary personnel in the battle fortress had heard about that. By contrast, Bai Suxian who always stayed with Cui Li and lived in the same room with him set Cui Li off in the legendary story.

Beauty loved hero, it was an universal law since the ancient times.

If Cui Li was still a black iron knight and was followed by Bai Suxian in the earth-elements realm which lacked beauties pretty much, it would indeed arouse people's jealousy. However, now that Cui Li had promoted to an earth knight, it was nothing strange for an earth knight to be followed by a beautiful female black iron knight. Of course, earth knights could have more resources, including more beautiful women. It was reasonable, not to mention that Zhang Tie was not an average earth knight.

Over the past 2 months since Zhang Tie came to Black Armor Battlefortress, he had proved his capability as an earth knight through practical actions. As he was always followed by Bai Suxian, they won a reputation of "the Unrivaled Male and Female".

Zhang Tie didn't care about this honor; however, Bai Suxian was pretty happy about it.

The moment Zhang Tie entered the Black Armor Battlefortress, he had seen so many people greeting him, including black iron knights, logistics and auxiliary personnel. However, Zhang Tie didn't know most of them.

Therefore, he just nodded with a calm and casual smile.

Many people praised Zhang Tie's demeanor inside.

Being extremely righteous, having a powerful battle strength and being forthright. Over the past 2 months, Cui Li from Yongzhou Province had been well known across the Black Armor Battlefortress. Anyone who heard the name Cui Li would have such an expression in their mind. However, although Cui Li had promoted to an earth knight, he never bullied others. He treated the common logistics and auxiliary personnel in the battle fortress kindly. Due to the above reasons, Cui Li became one of the best earth knights in Black Armor Battlefortress.

Before Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian drew close to an information desk in the middle of the square, an old man behind the information desk had revealed a smile towards him, "Cui Li, how many achievements did you make this time?"

"Not too much, just one!" Zhang Tie replied as he put that pair of fresh ox horns onto the counter, followed by Bai Suxian.

"Ahh, it's not bad, it's not bad!" The old man rubbed his hands out of excitement as he picked up the two pairs of ox horns and praised, "Fresh, very fresh. If they are timely dealt with, the internal heart reduction pills will be 10% more effective. Good, very good!"

As the old man said this, he fumbled below the counter and took out two rewards before pushing them to Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian respectively. Closely after that, he took their identity plates and inserted them into the machine beside them.

Bai Suxian's reward was 36 high-quality earth-element crystals while Zhang Tie's reward was 6 water-element crystals. Besides the element crystals, they both had 10 more merit points and 2,000 more consumption points in the Lion Fortress in their identity plates.

The exchange ratio between earth-element crystals and water-element crystals was 6:1. As he had promoted to an earth knight, Zhang Tie didn't need earth-element crystals anymore; therefore, the old man gave him 6 water-element crystals.

Due to the large-scale war in Tiewai Mountain, all the human knights could have two times more reward than before by killing demon knights in Tiewai Mountain.

Being stimulated by such an incentive policy, a lot of Class 2 garrison knights in Earth-element Realm converged in Tiewei Mountain and joined this war.

Class 2 garrison knights were the freest human knights in the

Lion Fortress. They could move freely in the Earth-elements Realm and didn't follow anyone's command. Compared to Class 1 garrison knights and those knights of the 3 top armies from Taixia Country, Class 2 garrison knights were pretty free in actions.

At this moment, Class 1 garrison knights and the human knights from the top armies of Taixia Country were confronting demons in the core of Tiewei Mountain. The periphery of Tiewei Mountain was the battlefield between Class 2 garrison knights and demons. Certainly, if a Class 2 garrison knight would like to break into the core of Tiewei Mountain and join the battle there, the human commander in the core must encourage him with applause. The mere requirement was that he had to follow the order of the human commander over there.

It was a positional warfare in the core and the frontline of Tiewei Mountain; by contrast, it was guerrilla in the rear end and the periphery of Tiewei Mountain. The knights in the frontline were regular armies of humans while those in the periphery were human paladins.

On the premise of ensuring the safety of the rear end and flanks of human camp, Class 2 human garrison knights also restricted the effective strength and knights of demons. The frontline was protected by a heavenly human knight while the battlefield in the rear end should depend on themselves. Both parties were well-matched in strength. In the core area, they were mostly positional warfares and rout warfares; in the rear end and flanks, they were mostly encountered actions and wars of annihilation. Actually, Class 2 garrison knights in the periphery of Tiewei Mountain would even bear greater stress from their enemy than those human knights in the core region. This was the cost of freedom.

When Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian came to the Lion Fortress, they both chose to be Class 2 garrison knights. Black Armor Battlefortress was also the strongpoint that gathered most Class 2 garrison knights.

"Plus this one, you've killed 5 demon knights. Here's the identity plate of trump black iron knight!" The old man told Bai Suxian as he changed a golden metal identity plate for her. This one looked much more advanced than that of before.

Until the old man pushed the new identity plate to her did Bai Suxian blink her eyes and ask him surprisingly, "I'm already a trump black iron knight?"

"Right!" The old man nodded.

Bai Suxian sprung up at once as she put her arms around Zhang Tie's neck and kissed his face forcefully twice, "Even this humble lady has become a trump knight in the Earth-elements Realm by staying with the lord!"

"Haha, you're an able woman!" Zhang Tie slapped her butt once again.

Zhang Tie's identity card remained unchanged.

Compared to Bai Suxian, although Zhang Tie had killed more demon knights than Bai Suxian, he was not a trump earth knight yet because he had not killed 5 earth demon knights. Over the past 2 months, Zhang Tie had killed one more black iron demon knights than Bai Suxian and ranked number one among the earth knights in Black Armor Battlefortress; however, due to the remarkable difference between earth knight and black iron knight, an earth knight could not gain the honor of trump earth knight no matter how many black iron knights he had killed.

Strictly, although Old Monster Qi and the demon baron were both killed by Zhang Tie, Old Monster Qi was not a demon but a member of Three-eye Association while the latter fully disappeared, leaving no evidence at all. Therefore, although it was said that Zhang Tie had killed 2 earth knights across the Black Armor Battlefortress last month, it had not been recorded officially in the Lion Fortress.

Although it was not recorded, Zhang Tie's record of killing black iron demon knights was very eye-catching. After entering the Earth-elements Realm for over 2 years, especially over the past 2 months, Zhang Tie had killed 9 black iron demon knights, one of them would have soon promoted to an earth demon knight.

With such a military exploit, Zhang Tie was definitely qualified to be an elite among those earth knights in Lion Fortress.

...

When Bai Suxian sprung up and put her arms around Zhang Tie's neck, an old man with full silver hair in a brilliant white robe had just entered with two people.

After entering the Black Armor Battlefortress, the old man started to glance around the bustling square. While faintly narrowing his eyes, he targeted at Bai Suxian's back at once.

When Bai Suxian sprung up, putting her arms around Zhang Tie's neck and kissing him, the old man frowned. When he saw Zhang Tie's huge palm slapping her butt, the old man revealed a furious look as he uttered a muffled harrumph. Closely after that, he walked towards Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian with two people on his side...

When the old man gazed at Bai Suxian's back for over 3 seconds, Zhang Tie had sensed it as he turned around at once, followed by Bai Suxian.

At the sight of that old man, Bai Suxian changed her face at once...

Chapter 983: Lord Guangnan's Mansion

"Harrumph, let's go..."

At the sight of the three people, Bai Suxian had changed her face. Closely after that, she tightly held Zhang Tie's arm and intended to leave with him. It seemed that she didn't expect to see the three people.

"Who're they?" Zhang Tie asked Bai Suxian when he walked away with her.

"Annoying people!" Bai Suxian bit her lips before answering Zhang Tie simply.

Now that Bai Suxian didn't want to explain, Zhang Tie didn't ask her anymore. Although they were already close to each other, they still would not force the other to say what they didn't like out of respect.

Everybody had a secret. Zhang Tie was clear about that very much. Bai Suxian was not his servant, but more like his partner and lover.

Watching them leave, the old man in white robe hurriedly came to the front of them with a cold face.

Bai Suxian immediately grasped Zhang Tie's arm tightly. With a shrewd eye light, Zhang Tie put Bai Suxian behind him and walked towards the old man directly.

"Excuse me..." As Zhang Tie asked others to give way to him, he walked towards the old man decisively with a surging, aggressive qi.

The two people on the sides of the old man wanted to move one step forward; however, the old man stopped them by putting one arm in front of them; meanwhile, the old man moved one step forward and stood firmly in front of Zhang Tie.

'Earth knight!'

The old man and Zhang Tie could both identify the other's level. Closely after their eye lights met in the air, they had collided numerous times with invisible sharpness and qis like two fierce beasts although they didn't move at all.

Zhang Tie continued to stride forward. The old man just blocked his way.

Unavoidably, the two people collided with each other. The moment their shoulders touched, the old man had faintly changed his face. Although Zhang Tie just strode forward at the same speed; the moment he collided with the old man, his inertia had become irresistible just like a running train, which could collapse a mountain.

In a split second, the old man moved back his shoulder before thrusting it forward on his own initiative. In this way, he turned the table on his opponent. Additionally, due to the difference in height, the old man was actually thrusting towards Zhang Tie's chest using his shoulder.

Zhang Tie's eyes turned bright as he continued to bump towards the old man aggressively; meanwhile, he cut into the old man's middle line by one foot and raised his leg to attack the old man's lower abdomen by his knee.

The old man narrowed his eyes and raised his leg. Although he looked like moving one step forward, actually he was attempting to step onto the instep of Zhang Tie's foot which had just been raised.

...

"Bang..." A thunder was heard in the entire square of Black Armor Battlefortress. Many people were startled as threw their eyes towards Zhang Tie and the old man.

At the sight of this scene, everybody was shocked—two shadows were fighting in one corner of the square.

The moment earth knights started a fight, their aggressive qis could match the power of an alchemist bomb being detonated above a tranquil lake. When the invisible qis swept over the entire Black Armor Battlefortress, all the others inside were startled.

A squad of black armored knights who were patrolling near the square of Black Armor Battlefortress immediately flew off towards Zhang Tie and the old man.

"Stop!" Although the head of the black armored knights was just a black iron knight, he was exceptionally fierce. He waved his huge saber while a berserk saber qi directly cut into the middle of the two earth knights.

At the sight of the squad of black armor knights, Zhang Tie and the old man punched at each other before flying 10 steps backward respectively and landing steadily.

In a wink, the two earth knights had been surrounded by over 10 fierce black armored knights, all of whom had pulled their sabers and swords off their sheaths and threw their hostile and vigilant eye lights towards the old man and the two people besides the old man.

As Zhang Tie had been in Black Armor Battlefortress for 2 months and had a good relationship with Black Armor Army; he even befriended Wu Guanhai, a team leader of Black Armor Army. In the past 2 months, Zhang Tie had made a lot of military exploits in Tiewei Mountain and enjoyed a good reputation in Black Armor Battlefortress. Wu Guanhai always thought about having Zhang Tie join the Black Armor Army. Of course, when they watched Zhang Tie to fight a stranger in the Black Armor Battlefortress, they would stand on Zhang Tie' side. This was the effect of a good moral standing and a good reputation.

A lot of knights around the square also stopped what they were doing and threw their eyes towards there.

"Did demons and b*stards of Three-eye Association slide in?"

Someone asked out of amazement.

"Someone fought Cui Li!" Someone shouted.

"Ahh, someone fought Cui Li? Whether they are demons or moles of Three-eye Association?"

"If they dared find trouble in Black Armor Battlefortress, we should never let them escape. F*ck them off..."

Closely after the last person's words, a great number of knights swarmed up. Some directly floated in the air with weapons in hands while their boiling battle qis blocked the way in all directions.

The battlefortress became chaotic at once.

The old man who fought Zhang Tie had not imagined that the surrounding black armored knights could stand on the side of that tough guy and be hostile to him. Therefore, he faintly changed his face.

After a few seconds' wrestle, although the old man and Zhang Tie didn't release the virtual images of their battle qis, they had collided dozens of times in the blink of an eye, causing such a loud bang. Due to the fast speed, dozens of consecutive collisions let to a loud bang. The old man was more shocked by Zhang Tie's influence in the Black Armor Battlefortress than his battle strength. The moment he was in trouble, all the surrounding knights came here to help him. This could never be done by common earth knights.

After throwing another glance at Zhang Tie, the old man's eyes contained something special.

...

Another earth knight of Black Armor Army in bronze colored face flashed over here from a high metal tower in the far and directly landed in the middle of the ring. After glancing around those in the surroundings with a domineering and cold look, he

asked in a muffled voice, "What's wrong?"

The black armored knight who had just stopped their fight moved his lips and told what happened here to the earth knight in a secret way.

The earth knight in copper-colored face watched the old man and the two people on his sides while narrowing his eyes before asking in a low voice, "Who're you? Why do you make trouble in Black Armor Battlefortress?"

The old man who had fought Zhang Tie looked around before moving his lips and saying something to the earth knight in a secret way. At the same time, he took out a special metal plate and presented it to the earth knight of the Black Armor Army.

Zhang Tie had a good vision. The moment the old man took out his metal plate from his waist, he had caught sight of two words on the metal plate——Guang Nan.

After being silent for a second, the earth knight of Black Armor Army glanced at the old man's metal plate and Bai Suxian on Zhang Tie's side. Closely after that, he scratched his head and swore something inside before turning around and speaking loudly, "It's a misunderstanding, there's no demon or mole, you can leave now!"

Watching the squad of black armor army leaving off and hearing that it was just a misunderstanding, those onlookers left too.

...

"Brother Cui Li, this is the private affair between you and Lord Guangnan's Mansion. It's out of the access of our Black Armor Army. If you want to beat this general steward of Lord Guangnan's Mansion, please spare a face for this brother. Don't make trouble in Black Armor Battlefortress, you can fight wherever you want except for killing him..."

Before leaving, the earth knight of Black Armor Army told Zhang

Tie in a secret way.

'Lord Guangnan's Mansion? F*ck!' Zhang Tie's heart raced as he threw his eye light towards Bai Suxian on his side.

Bai Suxian threw a glare at the old man as she instantly pulled Zhang Tie away. After watching Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian for a short while, the old man didn't block them anymore; instead, he just followed after them silently.

It seemed that the old man didn't want to make more troubles.

...

After coming to room No. 2064, Bai Suxian opened the door and pulled Zhang Tie in. The moment she entered it, Bai Suxian wanted to close the door from inside; however, she was stopped by Zhang Tie, "Wait, it doesn't work. Just let him in to clarify it. If you leave them outside, do you want them to eavesdrop on us?"

After hearing this, the old man's eye corners jumped. He let the other two to stand outside while he followed Zhang Tie in.

Previously, there were two beds in room No. 2064; however, Bai Suxian had them changed into one double bed. When the old man caught sight of the only double bed in the room, his eye corners jumped once again.

"You tell that man. If he still wants to marry that foxtrel, I will never go back. I have nothing to do with him!" Bai Suxian watched the old man with a cold look.

The moment Zhang Tie heard the word foxtrel, Zhang Tie could only rub his face on her side. Zhang Tie wondered what that woman being called foxtrel by Bai Suxian looked like.

"This time...it's not His Royal Highness who calls Miss back, it's grand madam; Grand madam's disease suddenly deteriorated half a year ago. She wanted to see Miss..." The old man lowered his eyes.

"Ahh, my grandma, how's my grandma?" An anxious look

appeared on Bai Suxian's face...

"Miss, If you didn't go back with me now, you might not be able to see grand madam after a few days..."

Chapter 984: Beauties Come and Go

Hearing the conversation, Zhang Tie widely opened his mouth. Anyone who was normal in intelligence could guess Bai Suxian's status from the old man's words.

The old man was an earth knight, the general steward of Lord Guangnan's Mansion.

'If she's called Miss by the general steward of a lord's mansion, Bai Suxian must be...must be...the princess of Lord Guannan's Mansion!'

At this moment, Zhang Tie suddenly figured out why this woman liked wearing palace robes in normal times. Previously, Zhang Tie thought it was just her special lobby; he thought that she just liked the brilliance of palace robe; however, he had not imagined that palace robe fit her status best!

Therefore, he understood why this woman had a space-teleportation item and so many luxurious items inside.

It was pretty hard for a common black iron knight to gain a space-teleportation item; however, it was not that difficult for a princess who came from a lord's mansion in Taixia Country.

What a world! Zhang Tie had not imagined that this woman who poisoned him with love potion, called him lord and warmed up bed for him every day was a princess.

'What the hell? What a rebellious white, rich and beautiful woman!'

'F*ck!'

After hearing that the grand madam of Lord Guannan's Mansion was seriously ill, Bai Suxian had a breakdown, she almost burst out into tears.

Zhang Tie touched his bald head before putting his hand on Bai

Suxian's shoulder, "Just follow them back. Honestly, the battlefield in Earth-elements Realm doesn't fit woman at all!"

"But..." Bai Suxian watched Zhang Tie tearfully.

"If you didn't go back, you might feel guilty and regretful for the rest of your life. Don't do anything that might make you regretful!"

Bai Suxian stomped onto the ground before gritting her lips and replying to the old man, "Go out first; I will go back with you after dealing with the affairs here!"

The old man threw a glance at Zhang Tie before saying, "I will wait for you miss at the exit of the square..."

After saying that, the old man exited the room and closed the door.

After leaving the room, the old man told the two people on his sides in a secret manner, "Go check the background of Cui Li."

"Yes, sir!"

...

The old man then left, leaving Bai Suxian and Zhang Tie alone.

"I'm sorry. This humble lady didn't mean to cover my background, but..." Bai Suxian wanted to explain.

"Pah..." Zhang Tie slapped her butt once again, "Explain what? This brother Cui doesn't care who you are, a princess or what. Now that I've slept with a princess, of course, I have nothing to complain about. You can go back to take a look; if you want to find me later on, just come to the Earth-elements Realm for me!"

"Really?" Bai Suxian's eyes flickered.

"Of course, oh, open your mouth!"

"Ahh, lord, you still think about kissing this humble lady at this moment..."

Before Bai Suxian finished her words, Zhang Tie had kissed her

petite mouth. When Bai Suxian thought that Zhang Tie wanted to do something before she left, her eyes widely opened...

She felt that Zhang Tie broke the tip of her tongue lightly. Closely after that, Zhang Tie dropped something onto her blood. In a split second, that item integrated with her body and drilled into her lower abdomen. It then started to swim in her qi sea.

That was a mini sword, a priceless silver secret item.

At the sight of Bai Suxina's shocked look, Zhang Tie left her lips, "I know you use whip; previously, this brother Cui wanted to gift you a whip as a weapon; however, as whip is a rare weapon, whose silver secret item could not be easily found. Now that you want to leave, I will gift you another silver secret item to protect yourself. This longsword fits woman too. Take it as a souvenir for the love between you and me!"

Bai Suxian watched Zhang Tie while being especially moved. She found that Cui Li was actually very considerate and always bore her in his mind.

"Lord, you treat me so good!" Bai Suxian tightly hugged Zhang Tie's sturdy waist and pasted her face onto Zhang Tie's chest.

"Whether that space-teleportation item that you carry was stolen from your mansion?"

"Ahh, how did you know that, Lord?"

Zhang Tie let out a sigh as he had figured out everything, "How come a person who has a space-teleportation item doesn't have a silver secret item? Additionally, who else would put his private bathtub and bath water into his space-teleportation item besides you? Even though the lord of Taixia Country is not that luxurious. I'm afraid that you've moved all the items from your room into the space-teleportation item."

"My grandma loves me the most since I was young. This humble lady has to go back to see my grandma; when my grandma's disease

is cured, I will come back for Lord..." Bai Suxian twisted her body in Zhang Tie's arms once again.

"I will not stay too long in the Earth-elements Realm. I will have to go back onto the earth's surface after the end of the battle in Tiewei Mountain at most!" Zhang Tie narrowed his eyes.

"Ahh, Lord, you want to go back to the earth's surface?"

"Yes, this brother Cui also wants to enjoy becoming a founder of a sect. Even though my sect could not match that of the top 7 sects in Taixia Country, I would have a try. At least, my sect should be unrivaled in one region so as to live up to my talents!" Zhang Tie said heroically.

Bai Suxian watched Zhang Tie with full sparkling stars in her eyes just like a tomboy who heard that her beloved brother was going to rob a territory for protection fee. Being excited at once, she uttered, "If Lord is really that ambitious, this humble lady would like to be your subordinate and help Lord instruct a batch of disciples!"

"Oh, what's the contradiction between you and your dad Lord Guannan? Why did you leave your home?"

"It's because of Fang Xinyi that foxtrel..." Bai Suxian gritted her teeth at once as she swore, "That b*tch. I treated her as my ladybro and bosom friend. However, it's out of my imagination that the b*tch wanted to be my stepmother. How could I bear that..."

Zhang Tie was dumbfounded once again. 'Bai Suxian's ladybro slept with her dad and became her stepmother. Such a resentment in the major clan could be written into a novel. Bai Suxian's dad was really a weirdo. Lord Guannan must have seen numerous women; how could he sleep with his daughter's bosom friend and make her daughter leave home? As a result, he and his daughter are like strangers. What the f*ck! Weirdo...'

...

2 hours later, Zhang Tie saw Bai Suxian off the Black Armor Battlefortress. After that, he insisted on accompanying Bai Suxian and the other 3 people from Lord Guangnan's Mansion over 700 miles away. When they left Tiewei Mountain, Zhang Tie flew back to the Black Armor Battlefortress alone after bidding a farewell to Bai Suxian.

On the way, the three people from Lord Guangnan might have heard something about Cui Li; especially that old man, whose eye lights turned strange when he saw Bai Suxian being so docile and reluctant to part with Zhang Tie.

"I saw Miss growing up since she was young. You're the first man who made Miss so docile. She didn't act in that way even in front of our Lord!"

Before leaving, the old man told Zhang Tie in a secret way meaningfully.

Zhang Tie touched his bald head as he was confused about the old guy's meaning.

Bai Suxian was escorted by an earth knight and two black iron knights; additionally, the battle in Tiewei Mountain became white-hot; therefore, they might not meet any demon knight on the way back to the Lion Fortress. Therefore, Zhang Tie was not worried about Bai Suxian at all.

The airboat of Lord Guangnan was parking in the Lion Fortress. After returning to Lion Fortress, Bai Suxian could directly go back home by airboat.

...

After returning to the Black Armor Battlefortress, Zhang Tie started an individual life once again.

The bed in the room No. 2064 still carried the fragrance of Bai Suxian.

Watching the empty huge bed, Zhang Tie smacked his lips as he

touched the silver remote-sensing ring on his little finger. The other remote-sensing ring was on Bai Suxian's finger. This pair of remote-sensing rings were exchanged with the earth-element crystals that Bai Suxian had gained in the Black Armor Battlefortress for the convenience of their communication.

After taking a deep breath, Zhang Tie sat beside the bed and took out 6 water-element crystals that he was rewarded this time before absorbing them.

It might take other earth knights a few days to absorb the 6 water-element crystals; however, it only took Zhang Tie 3 hours to absorb all of them.

The water chakra of king roc sutra was more difficult to form than earth chakra. The quantity of water-element crystals demanded was astronomical. Under such a circumstance, Zhang Tie could only cultivate step by step towards shadow knight.

After absorbing the 6 water-element crystals, Zhang Tie continued to absorb water elements in the elements realm.

2 days later, Zhang Tie felt that the 2nd dragon scale on the new earth knight's crystal plate that he had just received in Black Armor Battlefortress was lit. He then opened his eyes and stood up...

After absorbing most of the remaining virtual water chakra of the demon baron, plus over 2 months' cultivation and the 40-50 water-element crystals that he gained by killing so many demon knights, Zhang Tie had just lit 2 dragon scales on his crystal plate.

...

1 hour later, Zhang Tie came to the lobby of Black Armor Battlefortress and wanted to leave there.

At this moment, an uproar occurred while someone shouted, "Ahh, the knights of Taiyi Fantasy Sect will also join the battle in Tiewei Mountain?"

After hearing this sound, Zhang Tie turned around and became stiff at once...

A team of knights with exceptional demeanors entered the entrance while all the knights at the entrance gave a way to them. Zhang Tie caught sight of Lan Yunxi in the middle of the team at once...

...

Chapter 985: The First Rays of the Morning in the Cloud

Temperament could hardly be described. For instance, a rich man who had been used to the life of pampered aristocracy definitely had a different temperament than the real beggars even if he was requested to beg together with real beggars on the roadside.

The rich man knew that he was rich; therefore, even if he disguised as a beggar, he wouldn't look like poor at all.

This was the temperament of rich people.

As the knights of Taiyi Fantasy Sect entered the lobby of Black Armor Battlefortress, the uproar in the lobby slowly trailed off.

Being compared to the knights of Taiyi Fantasy Sect, although the other knights in the lobby were not beggars, they were almost scared by the knights of Taiyi Fantasy Sect at once.

The knights of Taiyi Fantasy Sect didn't take too many luxurious and advanced items. Their clothes and weapons were as common as those of common knights. The old man with a white beard and white hair in front of the team wore an extremely average plain linen robe. However, these people looked domineering.

The entire team of Taiyi Fantasy Sect just entered quietly, being neither tidy nor disordered. All the team members looked indifferent and calm. When they entered the lobby of the Black Armor Battlefortress, they felt like thawy sweet and limpid snow water flowing down from the top of the mountain range into the dirty secular river.

The team of Taiyi Fantasy Sect contained over 30 members. Lan Yunxi was walking in the middle of the team.

In a purple longuette, Lan Yunxi was carrying a delicate, mini battle crossbow on her back with a longsword on one side of her

waist while her black hair was bundled by a jade clip. In Zhang Tie's eyes, she was a goddess walking down the cloud.

Since he left Lan Yunxi in Selnes Theater of Operations, Zhang Tie had not seen her for many years. When he caught sight of her at this moment, Zhang Tie felt that Lan Yunxi didn't turn old at all; instead, she became brighter and beautiful. She felt calmer and more confident than that a few years ago.

The fragrance of the noble and unsullied orchid, as capricious as clouds and the brilliant first rays of the morning. With the three features, this woman carried a dreamlike comeliness.

At this moment, Zhang Tie felt that her name Lan Yunxi fit her temperament so well that Zhang Tie even doubted whether what he did to her was real or not. When in Hidden Dragon Island, Zhang Tie almost raped her. In Selnes Theater of Operations, he traveled in the sky by glider with this woman and listened to her inner thoughts.

In the team of Taiyi Fantasy Sect, this woman could still be the focus.

There were almost 10 female knights in the team of Taiyi Fantasy Sect. All the other female knights looked outstanding; however, Lan Yunxi was the most excellent one.

Based on his sharp intuition as a man, Zhang Tie felt that some male knights in the team of Taiyi Fantasy Sect were paying attention to Lan Yunxi because they always looked at Lan Yunxi with adoration and desires. Because of Lan Yunxi, it seemed that the male knights in the team of Taiyi Fantasy Sect also became personable with strong qi fields.

Honestly, Zhang Tie felt that his own excellence completely benefited from Castle of Black Iron. Without Castle of Black Iron, he might be struggling to survive himself in a dirty and remote place. Whereas, Lan Yunxi was born to be excellent. Her excellence was engraved in her soul and each of her cells. Nobody else could

match here in Huaiyuan palace and the entire Zhang clan. This woman could always become the most excellent one whether she was in Huaiyuan Palace or Taiyi Fantasy Sect.

When in Huaiyuan Palace, because of her, everybody in Huaiyuan Palace including Zhang Tie almost forgot that Zhang Taixuan the Count Long Wind even had some sons. Although Lan Yunxi's elder brothers were not average and could undertake tasks alone at young ages, they were almost forgotten by others due to the existence of Lan Yunxi.

It was the same in a bigger stage like Taiyi Fantasy Sect, one of the top 7 sects in Taixia Country...

...

Until the team of Taiyi Fantasy Sect disappeared in Zhang Tie's eyes and the surrounding uproars recovered did Zhang Tie wake up from the surprise of meeting Lan Yunxi once again...

"Powerful, too powerful!"

...

"They deserve to be the head of the top seven sects in Taixia Country!"

...

"I feel that the old man in front of the team might have promoted to a shadow knight!"

...

"Did you see that female knight who carried a short crossbow on her back? She's too brilliant..."

...

"I wonder whether the team of Taiyi Fantasy Sect is going to settle down in Black Armor Battlefortress or join the battle in the core of Tiewei Mountain..."

...

Discussions soon started in the surroundings.

Zhang Tie who was going to leave Black Armor Battlefortress recovered his composure. After thinking for a second, he instantly changed his direction and walked towards an information desk in the center of the square.

Zhang Tie came to the front of the old man who was responsible for retrieving ox horns of ox-headed demons.

The old man was wiping an ox horn with a piece of cloth. At the sight of Zhang Tie, he raised his head.

"Are they members of Taiyi Fantasy Sect?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Yup!"

"Are they going to fight a long-drawn war here with Black Armor Battlefortress as a strongpoint?"

"Why do you ask this?"

"Heh heh heh, Taiyi Fantasy Sect is well-known; additionally, they dispatched so many knights here this time. As these knights are all outstanding, they might make troubles; therefore, I just want to know their plan!" Zhang Tie replied casually.

After throwing a glance at Zhang Tie, the old man revealed an obscene smile at once. Closely after that, the old man lowered his body over the counter while Zhang Tie moved his ears closer to him.

"There are many beautiful female knights in the team of Taiyi Fantasy Sect. Soon after the woman who warmed up your bed left, you couldn't wait to seduce the other girls in the Taiyi Fantasy Sect? I tell you, the female knights of Taiyi Fantasy Sect are not that easy to be seduced. Have you seen that old guy in plain linen robe in the front of the team? He's Feng Yexiao, one of the four elders of Taiyi Fantasy Sect. He had promoted to 4 changes shadow

knight 10 years ago. He looks merciless and is extremely cruel. If he knew that you plan to seduce his female disciple, he would definitely break your "three legs", hehhehheh..."

"Is this Cui that sort of man?" Zhang Tie glared at this old guy. Although this old guy looked serious in normal times, he was actually also a shameless guy.

"Stop it, man. This old man has also been as young as you. That's how men and women always think about. Do not deny it!" The old guy smirked weirdly, "I like you. This old man will give you a free news. Anyone who wants to fight in the core battlefield of Tiewei Mountain should follow orders without any exception. However, the people of Taiyi Fantasy Sect are domineering; especially Feng Yexiao the old guy who's famous for his narrow-mindedness. How could he lead his men to the core battlefield to follow other's orders?"

The old guy's message indirectly answered Zhang Tie's question, namely, the people of Taiyi Fantasy Sect would not involve themselves in the core battlefield on their own initiative. They might carry out a guerrilla in the periphery of Tiewei Mountain. Of course, under the leadership of a shadow Knight-level elder, their battle strength could never be matched by common Class 2 garrison knights. Perhaps, they might come to the rear end or the critical places of demons and do something big.

However, given the safety of Lan Yunxi, the Taiyi Fantasy Sect might just want to show their newbies how the large-scale battle between human knights and demon knights went.

"I see, thanks!" Zhang Tie appreciated the old man and wanted to leave there.

"Wait!" The old guy threw a vial towards Zhang Tie, "Here's a vial of internal heat reduction pills as my gift. The ox horns that you gave me last time are not bad, this is the extra compensation! If you don't need it, you could gift it to others!"

'Is this moral standing premium?'

Zhang Tie waved his hand and left with the vial of pills.

At this moment, Zhang Tie's mind had been filled with Lan Yunxi's images; therefore, he was a bit distracted.

Gritting his teeth, Zhang Tie left the square. He flew out of the Black Armor Battlefortress and entered the dense black mist in the periphery of Tiewei Mountain.

Only after over 1 hour's flight, Zhang Tie had come into a hidden mountain cave in the outermost mountain range of Tiewei Mountain.

In the mountain cave, Zhang Tie triggered his immortal body changing bloodline and gradually recovered his original look through changing his skeletons and muscles all over.

After recovering his original look, Zhang Tie's clothes and caliga became too much larger than his body. Therefore, Zhang Tie took out a whole set of clothes and caliga from Castle of Black Iron and finally wore an average face mask.

After doing all this, the moment he walked out of the mountain cave did Zhang Tie remember something. He touched his head and felt that it was still bald and eye-catching; therefore, he revealed a self-mocking smile and touched his head once again. Closely after that, his hair grew up rapidly. After making a crew cut and confirming that no loophole was left, Zhang Tie left the mountain cave.

...

After circling around 2 hours in the dense mist, Zhang Tie returned to the Black Armor Battlefortress with a new look

...

Chapter 986: Contact

Zhang Tie was not nervous. Although he was in the face mask, this face mask could be easily identified by powerhouses who excelled at disguising skills; however, Zhang Tie was not afraid of being identified.

Right in front of him, the two black iron knights who had just entered the Black Armor Battlefortress were also wearing face masks.

Given their steel-blue hair and brown skin, Zhang Tie knew that the two knights in front of him came from a foreign subcontinent. Their face masks must be the deity that they worshiped.

There were many similar human knights in the Lion Fortress and the Earth-elements Realm who were in different human races from different countries on different continents with various beliefs.

It was very normal for them to wear face masks. Some female knights even liked wearing a veil. It was said that those female knights only exposed their faces to their fathers and husbands in their whole lives. Some knights from countries in Western Continent even liked wearing a complete skull of an ox-headed demon on their heads. As for those knights, the complete skull of an ox-headed demon with ox horns indicated that they were brave. It was also their tradition. What was more, someone made tattoos on their faces so that their ears, eyes, noses, mouth and eyebrows could be barely identified by people.

If one wanted to enter the Black Armor Battlefortress, he only needed to prove that he was not a demon.

The spiny identification equipment at the entrance of the fortress could not identify individuals concretely; it could only respond to the demon's blood.

Therefore, it was nothing difficult for Zhang Tie to enter Black

Armor Battlefortress in a face mask.

After recovering his original body, Zhang Tie's qi also recovered to that of a black iron knight. Even though his cultivation method was recovered to "Five-elements Ground-look Sutra" benefited from his "King Roc Sutra".

After finding that Zhang Tie was strange, a black armored knight at the entrance just threw a glance at him and examined his blood before letting him in smoothly.

At this moment, Zhang Tie realized that the decision that he made to give up the bloodline of the shadow demon was pretty right. If he still had the bloodline of shadow demon at this moment, he might be the one being chased after by human knights in the Earth-elements Realm instead of the real earth Knight-level shadow demon. In this world, no pay, no gain.

'By contrast, my immortal body changing bloodline is really perfect.'

Zhang Tie felt lucky after entering Black Armor Battlefortress once again.

After leaving there for a few hours, the Black Armor Battlefortress remained unchanged. Zhang Tie easily knew that the team of 34 knights of Taiyi Fantasy Sect was living on the 4th floor of No. 7 tower in the southwest of the square.

As Zhang Tie looked strange, nobody would like to glance at him across the Black Armor Battlefortress.

After gaining the whereabouts of Lan Yunxi, Zhang Tie directly walked towards No. 7 tower.

After passing the square in a casual way, Zhang Tie came to the knights' bar on the 2nd floor of No. 7 tower and ordered a chartered room over there. Closely after that, he left the bar and went upstairs all the way to the side of the 4th floor which was far away from the noises of the square. He then walked past each room

on both sides of the corridor in common footsteps.

There were many logistics and battle auxiliary personnel in Black Armor Battlefortress. In the apartments of knights, some logistics personnel would be arranged for serving knights in each floor of the tower. Zhang Tie was imitating the footsteps of battle auxiliary personnel in Black Armor Battlefortress. Given his footsteps, few people might know that he was a knight.

This was the reaction blind area in people's first impression.

The inside layout of No. 7 tower looked like that of a hotel. One side directly faced the open courtyard of the tower from where knights could directly fly away in emergencies; knights' rooms were on the other side of the aisle.

Zhang Tie just walked and passed by each door in a calm way. However, the beautiful and marvelous golden virtual lotus flowers were silently blossoming around his pupils.

Due to the beautiful virtual lotus flowers in his eyes, the metal rooms and multi-layered metal walls became transparent at once while everything inside the rooms was exposed to Zhang Tie.

The pictures of the living habits of knights on the 4th floor of No. 7 tower was presented to Zhang Tie's eyes.

Some rooms were empty; some knights were snoring loudly in their sleep after finishing their tasks; some knights were cultivating with crossed legs by absorbing crystals in their hands or immersing themselves in the elements realm. Of course, there were some strange ones. Some knights were reading books; some were picking their noses in the mirror; in one room, a male and a female were doing what Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian used to do a few days ago. What was more ridiculous was that two men were in a room...

Like being struck by a lightning bolt, Zhang Tie preferred to see nothing.

...

Although Zhang Tie knew that it was immoral for him to peep at them; he didn't care too much at such a critical moment.

Finally, Zhang Tie caught a female knight of Taiyi Fantasy Sect who was taking off her clothes for a bath.

The female knight walked behind Lan Yunxi just now. She looked conservative; however, after taking off her clothes, she exposed a set of sexy black underclothes.

After looking at her figure in the mirror, the female knight let out a faint sigh. It seemed that she was worried about something.

'Sorry, I didn't mean it.'

Zhang Tie stuck his tongue out as he murmured inside. After throwing another two glances at her stealthily, Zhang Tie walked by her room in a calm look.

Starting with this female knight, all the knights in the rooms were from Taiyi Fantasy Sect.

Zhang Tie had to admit that Taiyi Fantasy Sect had a strict discipline.

After passing by their rooms one after another, Zhang Tie found 90% of the knights of Taiyi Fantasy Sect were cultivating with crossed legs. One or two of them were walking slowly in their rooms and making hand gestures. It seemed that they were deducing battle skills. Some female knights were taking a bath. However, Zhang Tie only threw a glance at them. He felt too guilty peeping at their naked bodies at this moment.

Zhang Tie also saw that elder called Feng Yexiao through his door and wall.

The old man was deducing something with a compass-like item in hand. Zhang Tie was not sure whether his lotus-flower eyes could arouse the attention of a shadow knight; therefore, he just

glanced over his room and moved to the next target rapidly.

Finally, he caught sight of Lan Yunxi in one room...

She was cultivating with crossed legs.

When Zhang Tie passed by her room, he penetrated his metallic battle qi through the metal door of Lan Yunxi's room with his voice into Lan Yunxi's ears.

—Senior sister apprentice. Long time no see. If you're free, come for me in No. 16 chartered room of the knights' bar in No. 7 tower!

Zhang Tie just walked away in a casual way...

Lan Yunxi widely opened her eyes immediately with an amazed and unbelievable look...

'Zhang Tie!'

How could Lan Yunxi forget such a familiar voice?

Lan Yunxi almost mistook it as an illusion; however, given the clear sound in her ears, she knew that it was not an illusion.

She was shocked by Zhang Tie's voice. What shocked her more was that Zhang Tie knew that she lived here and could pass his voice to her precisely through the door.

'Is Zhang Tie always in Black Armor Battlefortress?'

'If black iron knights could control their battle qis in a very high standard, they could indeed talk with another knight secretly through an object or a door. However, the premise is that they should fix the position of the knight precisely. The voice should reach the listener's ears precisely; otherwise, it would be ineffective. How did Zhang Tie do it?'

'Did he fix my position through my breathing sound? No way, the wall of the room is inlaid with a special device which could isolate sound and spiritual energy absolutely.'

Soon after listening to Zhang Tie's sound, Lan Yunxi sprung up and come to the door...

She had already grasped the handle by hand; however, she stopped.

Lan Yunxi closed her eyes and stood for a few seconds at the door before moving back. She sat down with crossed legs once again...

...

Zhang Tie was not worried that Lan Yunxi would rush out to meet him after hearing his voice. Common women might do that, except for Lan Yunxi. She knew which way was best to her and Zhang Tie.

After returning to the No. 16 chartered room of the knight's bar on the 2nd floor of No. 7 tower, Zhang Tie ordered a watermelon liquor and started a drink in the room alone.

The chartered rooms and drinks in the knights' bar were free for those knights in the Black Armor Battlefortress. On the earth's surface, such chartered rooms and drinks would only cost them a few gold coins, which could be ignored by knights. Now that they could come to the Black Armor Battlefortress, they were supporting humans in the battle between humans and demons in the Earth-elements Realm. Therefore, it was reasonable for Black Armor Battlefortress to provide the best services to these human knights. Nobody would care about the consumption at all.

Zhang Tie was waiting for Lan Yunxi because he knew that she would come...

Chapter 987: Martyr

When he drank the strange watermelon liquor quietly in the chartered room of the knights' bar, Zhang Tie gradually recovered his composure. After thinking about it for a short while, Zhang Tie found that he could not find a reason to meet Lan Yunxi under this circumstances.

However, at the sight of Lan Yunxi, his heart started to race unconsciously.

At the sight of her, he would not recover his composure unless he watched and talked with her face to face.

Many times, one's decisions were not determined by reason, but emotions and feelings, even being an earth knight...

If one was always dominated by his reason, there would not be the story that a king teased his lords by lighting smokes on the city-defense facilities only for a beauty's smile or numerous heroes were driven mad for the sake of their beloved women.

The astringent and scorching sense of the watermelon liquor reminded Zhang Tie of the look of Lan Yunxi whom he saw in the Herbs Valley of Hidden Dragon Island for the first time.

In the moonlight, a female in a skirt as silvery as the moonlight was playing water in a brook being reflected with the moonlight while sitting on a rock. Meanwhile, she was holding a jade flute while the vacant sound flew out of the jade flute like water, filling the valley...

That was the most beautiful scenery in Zhang Tie's mind forever.

At that moment, Zhang Tie thought that he was watching a fairy.

'Was my feeling about Lan Yunxi as scorching and astringent as this watermelon liquor at that time?'

'I almost raped Lan Yunxi at that moment.' Zhang Tie revealed a

smile when he was drinking the watermelon liquor. Although being absurd, what happened between him and Lan Yunxi at that time felt warm unconsciously.

If teenagers were not absurd, what would they recall when they grew up?

'After so many years, Huaiyuan Palace has moved from Waii Subcontinent to Taixia Country. I'm not that muddleheaded teenager anymore, neither is senior fellow apprentice the same one either!'

'Something has changed!'

'Did something really change?'

The effect of watermelon liquor made Zhang Tie's face hot. Wearing a senior disguising face mask, he felt being covered with a heat dissipating facial mask. Zhang Tie revealed a self-mockery smile. He touched his face and directly took off his face mask.

...

1 hour later, Lan Yunxi pushed open the door of the chartered room when she saw Zhang Tie drinking liquor on the sofa without even covering his original look.

Lan Yunxi watched Zhang Tie and found that he had changed. Although he remained as young as before with the same pure and hot eyes, he had one more temperament—a reckless arrogance!

A wanted criminal of Taixia Country could sit in the chartered room of the knights' bar of Black Armor Fortress for a drink like that he had done nothing wrong. That was arrogance.

"It has been 24 years since I saw you last time, it's really nice to see you!" Zhang Tie stood up and gave an embrace to Lan Yunxi by opening his arms.

Lan Yunxi didn't dodge away. Zhang Tie pasted his head on her hair and took a deep breath. Closely after that, he moved one step

back and watched Lan Yunxi with a smile.

"I left Selnes Theater of Operations on the 894th year of Black Iron Calendar. You must have stayed 15 years in the tower of time!" Lan Yunxi let out a sigh faintly.

That was how smart ones behaved. The moment Zhang Tie said that he had not seen her for 24 years, Lan Yunxi immediately understood where he had been in the rest 15 years.

It was really unimaginable that it had been 24 years since Zhang Tie was framed to attend the reconnaissance mission in Titanic Duchy. Time flew.

"I knew that you and the Lan elder went to look for me later on!" Zhang Tie told Lan Yunxi.

Lan Yunxi replied with a smile as distant as the clouds, "I also know that your three sons are born to be exceptionally smart. They are more intelligent than me in my childhood!"

"Do you mind that?"

"We've both grown mature. We have our own responsibilities and obligations!" Lan Yunxi shook her head as she watched Zhang Tie tenderly; meanwhile, she faintly touched Zhang Tie's face by one hand, "As for you, they're your beloved ones. It's your responsibility and obligation to protect them as one part of your life. I cannot separate them from your life. I hope you can also understand that there's something inseparable in my life. I also have my responsibilities and obligations. As a knight of Huaiyuan Palace and an offspring of Lord Huaiyuan, you've already exerted your utmost efforts to protect Huaiyuan Palace. Taixia Country is too large with too many dangers. It's my turn to safeguard Huaiyuan Palace!"

After hearing Lan Yunxi's words, Zhang Tie felt something bad, "What do you mean?"

"After finishing the survival training in the Earth-elements

Realm with Elder Feng, I will return to Taiyi Fantasy Sect and apply for becoming the Martyr of Yaogong Palace!"

"Martyr of Yaogong Palace?" Zhang Tie felt strange about this term.

Lan Yunxi smiled, "After becoming a martyr of Yaogong Palace of Taiyi Fantasy Sect, I will not marry for the rest of my life. However, my position in Taiyi Fantasy Sect would be very special because I will take charge of the sacred item of Taiyi Fantasy Sect. After becoming a martyr of Yaogong Palace of Taiyi Fantasy Sect, even if the crown prince ascends to the throne in the future and his master becomes one of the top 3 chancellors in Taixia, nobody will harm Huaiyuan Palace with the protection of Taiyi Fantasy Sect!"

Lan Yunxi's smile made Zhang Tie feel heart-wrenching. Zhang Tie tightly grabbed her shoulders with bloody eyes as he roared like an injured wild beast, "No!"

Thankfully, chartered rooms in knights' bars were specifically designed. The gate and wall of the room could prevent sound from leaking and the spiritual energy of knights from peeping in. If not, Zhang Tie's roar would have shocked the entire bar.

"This holy war is different than before. There's something that you might not know. Taiyi Fantasy Sect has made the worst preparation for this holy war. As the head of the top 7 sects in Taixia Country, Taiyi Fantasy Sect has secretly started the 'Doomsday Sperma' which might be started only when the entire Hua people in Taixia Country might be exterminated. In the earlier two holy wars, Taiyi Fantasy Sect had not started this plan. This was the top secret of Taiyi Fantasy Sect. Even the core disciples of our sect have not known about that. I ascertain it through some clues inside Taiyi Fantasy Sect by accident!"

Lan Yunxi put another hand onto Zhang Tie's face too as she watched Zhang Tie soulfully, "Under this circumstance, if someone in the top three chancellors in the future wanted to uproot

Huaiyuan Palace, Huaiyuan Palace would be exterminated at any time facing the dangers both inside and outside. As a member of Huaiyuan Palace, I was always treated like a princess since I was young. If not sacrifice myself at this moment as a shelter of Huaiyuan Palace, what else can I do for Huaiyuan Palace..."

Chapter 988: A Chance Encounter

Zhang Tie had too many words to say...

At this moment, he had an impulsion to tell Lan Yunxi loudly that he had Castle of Black Iron and the small tree and had killed thousands of demons as a divine dominator...

Those words were as heavy as huge rocks in his heart.

When he promoted to a black iron knight, Zhang Tie thought that he had grasped his own destiny for quite a long while.

Nevertheless, the heart-wrenching feeling at this moment reminded him that he might grasp his own fate; however, he could never grasp the others' fates. In many cases, if one could only watch his most beloved ones moving towards dead ends, it would be meaningless for him to grasp his own destiny!

Both the top three chancellors in Taixia Country in the future and the culprit who framed him were irresistible for him and Huaiyuan Palace. Therefore, the knights of Huaiyuan Palace could only take the positions of the fallen and rise to fight one after another for the sake of Huaiyuan Palace and Zhang Clan. This was the inevitable fate of clan knights.

"We can leave Taixia Country. The entire Huaiyuan Palace could also return to Waii Subcontinent once again or the Ice and Snow Wilderness. Over there, nobody could harm us!" Zhang Tie roared.

At this moment, Zhang Tie was really impulsive to take Lan Yunxi, his family members and the rest members of Huaiyuan Palace away from all the disputes.

"Don't be daft!" Lan Yunxi replied with a smile as she wiped off Zhang Tie's tears by hands, "You know, if we leave, we could only spare an excuse for the enemies of Huaiyuan Palace to deal with Huaiyuan Palace. As a result, Huaiyuan Palace would be exterminated at a faster speed. I know that you've already laid a

foundation in Ice and Snow Wilderness. However, for the supreme ones in Taixia Country, your foundation is just a patch of duckweeds in waters. As long as they find an excuse, they could dispatch a team of knights like what Taiyi Fantasy Sect did this time to Ice and Snow Wilderness and sweep it over like executing a small task. We should not escape!"

Watching Lan Yunxi's smile, Zhang Tie became silent. He suddenly remembered the lonely shadow of his master Zhao Yuan and understood his state of mood.

'The extreme strength is close to the truth!'

'Only when one's strength could reach its extreme would one open a path for himself!'

This was the powerful ones' comprehension about this world.

'If I were already a heavenly knight or even higher, there would never be so many troubles!'

Zhang Tie clenched his punches.

Lan Yunxi blinked her eyes towards Zhang Tie in a mischievous way, "You need to take care of yourself and survive on. In this world, many people depend on you. If you could rob me who was going to be the martyr of Yaogong Palace away from Taiyi Fantasy Sect one day in the public, I would be glad to be your wife!"

In order to not make Zhang Tie too sad, Lan Yunxi made a joke or fabricated a hopeful lie to Zhang Tie.

However, Lan Yunxi didn't know that it was not the first time for Zhang Tie to hear such a joke and lie.

It was Miss Daina who told such a joke and lie to him——If anyone of you could reach LV 9, Miss Daina would marry him.

Such a promise in classroom made numerous horny students in the No. 7 National Male Middle School highly spirited. They found the meaning and direction of their lives.

Zhang Tie loosened his fist and took in a deep breath before bursting out into laughter, "Senior fellow apprentice, just wait for me in Taiyi Fantasy Sect. There will be such a day. When I override the Gobbling Party and Taiyi Fantasy Sect one day, I will pick you up!"

Lan Yunxi replied with a smile as she kissed Zhang Tie's face, "I have to go. If I stayed too long with you, you might not be able to leave!"

"Hold on!" Zhang Tie stopped Lan Yunxi as he undid the guardian angel necklace from his neck and said, "I've prepared a gift for you when in Waii Subcontinent. I've not imagined that it has been so many years! I kept wearing it these years and wanted to gift it to you."

The core of this necklace was the space-teleportation equipment of the late demon general; however, it had been renovated into a holy and artistic masterpiece——A mithril guardian angel with open wings was cupping a top-quality son-like bluish golden stone which had been activated by an alchemist master. It was vivid. What counted most was that the face of the guardian angel looked similar to Lan Yunxi. It was extremely skillful.

Any woman would be attracted by this necklace. Lan Yunxi's eyes also shined.

"May you help me put it on?" Lan Yunxi turned around, exposing her beautiful back and neck to Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie then helped Lan Yunxi put it on tenderly from her back.

As a knight, the moment Lan Yunxi touched the necklace, she had realized that it was not a common necklace. The top-quality bluish golden stone could purify her blood; besides, there was something special inside the necklace...

Zhang Tie prevented Lan Yunxi from further exploring this

necklace, "You can take a look at it when you come back. Senior fellow apprentice, don't ask me where did I get it. Because I don't want to lie to you. I could only tell you that it's legit!"

Lan Yunxi turned around and watched Zhang Tie seriously. She saw the pure sincerity in Zhang Tie's eyes.

She then turned around and left...

...

In the space-teleportation equipment, Zhang Tie prepared over 10,000 vials of the best all-purpose medicament that he had fermented in Castle of Black Iron, over 2,000 earth-element crystals that he had plundered from Old Monster Qi and the demon baron and two silver secret items—one shield and one short crossbow that Zhang Tie gained from the Weapons Mountain. The two silver secret items fit Lan Yunxi well. Besides, Zhang Tie prepared some vats of water and preserved fruits and meat. Although they were common, they could help Lan Yunxi survive herself longer in the worst scenario.

Even so many items that Zhang Tie prepared in the space-teleportation equipment would arouse a big shock in the Earth-elements Realm, not to mention that space-teleportation equipment itself.

Zhang Tie stayed in the room alone with a vacant look. After standing still for 2 minutes, he directly walked out of the chartered room and left the bar. Closely after that, he passed the square and left the Black Armor Battlefortress...

Strangely, many wanted murders might be caught wherever they hid and no matter how they disguised; however, Zhang Tie just left the Black Armor Battlefortress safe and sound.

On the way, someone threw some glances at him out of his young look; however, they could not imagine that Zhang Tie was the very wanted criminal in Taixia Country two years ago.

When a female knight from Taixia Country passed by Zhang Tie, she uttered out of curiosity, "Yi?"; however, the female knight just hesitated and threw a glance at Zhang Tie's back before being called away by her partner.

"What's up?" Her partner asked the female knight.

"Nothing." The female knight shook her head as she replied, "I might have noticed a familiar person just now..."

"Who? A friend?"

"No..." The female knight didn't explain it anymore. She just mumbled inside, 'How could a knight who writes such a romantic poem do that evil thing? I saw the arrest order two years ago on the earth's surface; hmm, I might have mistaken it...'

...

After leaving Black Armor Battlefortress, Zhang Tie's mind was full of Lan Yunxi's image and what Lan Yunxi told him just now. He just flew aimlessly. Almost 2 hours later, he landed on a mountain peak. After standing there for a while, Zhang Tie suddenly patted his head...

Since he met Lan Yunxi today, his heart had been racing. Until he left there did he realize that he had forgotten about a very important thing.

He should have left a remote-sensing finger ring to Lan Yunxi for the convenience of further communication.

As he had not imagined that he could meet Lan Yunxi in the Black Armor Battlefortress, he hadn't prepared the new pair of remote-sensing finger rings yet.

Remote-sensing finger rings could be purchased in Black Armor Battlefortress.

Zhang Tie wanted to return to the Black Armor Battlefortress. The moment he turned around, he stopped as he questioned

himself, 'Could a tiny remote-sensing finger ring change anything? If I could not override the Gobbling Party and Taiyi Fantasy Sect, it would be useless for me to communicate with Lan Yunxi!'

Zhang Tie's face gradually turned firm and persistent. He looked around and found that he had been close to the 5th loop of Tiewei Mountain.

The moment he wanted to find a place to incarnate into Cui Li, a knight flew towards him groggily...

It was a female knight being covered with wounds. It seemed that she had been severely injured in a battle.

"Help me!" At the sight of Zhang Tie, the female knight had flown towards him while wailing.

At the sight of that female knight, Zhang Tie widely opened his eyes abruptly.

He hurriedly accelerated towards her as he asked from a few meters away, "Ahh, what happened to you?"

"I've just encountered 3 demon knights..." The female knight panted as if she would almost fall down, "Can you give me a favor and take me back...to the Black Armor Battlefortress...I cannot bear it anymore!"

"Sure, I will take you back to Black Armor Battlefortress right away..."

Zhang Tie moved closer to her and grasped the female knight's hand at once. The weak female knight almost threw herself into Zhang Tie's arms. The moment she wanted to appreciate Zhang Tie, she lowered her head and found that Zhang Tie had stabbed an extremely grim dagger into her body...

Chapter 989: A Barbarous Combat

Zhang Tie pulled the female knight's one hand by his hand while the golden eaten tri-edged dagger appeared in Zhang Tie's other hand out of the void as fast as a lightning bolt when he pretended to support her. Closely after that, Zhang Tie stabbed into her heart forcefully in the swiftest and fiercest way.

Zhang Tie saw clearly that his gold-eaten tri-edged dagger had penetrated through that female knight's heart which looked obviously different than that of commoners.

It seemed that the female knight didn't believe that she could suffer such a "treatment". However, before she uttered a miserable shriek, Zhang Tie had fiercely thrust his knee onto her lower abdomen which was almost a fatal battle skill.

With such a terrifying great strength, Zhang Tie could even penetrate through a steel plate, not to mention bloody flesh.

As was predicted, the female knight's guts were cracked at once.

Almost at the same time, the female knight spurted out blood with fragmented guts like a high-pressure water jet...

"Ahhhh..." The female knight roared miserably like a wild beast. At the same time, her face turned pale and her clothes were broken into pieces. Her body expanded in a split moment, exposing her unique horn, wings and tail at the rear end immediately...

This was a shadow demon, a powerful shadow demon who was much more powerful than Abyan and Master Jiang.

Zhang Tie kept grasping the shadow demon's arm while fiercely colliding against a mountain peak of Tiewei Mountain like a meteor with this shadow demon in front of him.

Zhang Tie's strength was so terrifying that it instantly collapsed half of the sharp-sword-like top of the mountain peak.

At the same time, the female knight released an earth knight's battle qi.

The shadow demon's tail then pricked at Zhang Tie's eye like a sharp arrow while a dagger also appeared in the other claw of the shadow demon which was stabbed at Zhang Tie's heart fiercely.

At this critical moment, even the shadow demon was an earth demon knight, it had to exert its utmost efforts.

Zhang Tie's face was as firm as steel with a cold sense. He didn't dodge or even blink his eyes facing the shadow demon's strikes.

The shadow demon's strikes by its tail and dagger were blocked by Zhang Tie's protective battle qi which was released in a split second. It seemed that the shadow demon's dagger was not common either. However, when it penetrated through Zhang Tie's protective battle qi partially and was about 1 cm away from Zhang Tie's body, the shadow demon felt hitting a steel wall and couldn't inch forward anymore.

As it couldn't break through Zhang Tie's protective battle qi, the shadow demon curled up its tail and twined round Zhang Tie's neck like a boa. It wanted to strangle Zhang Tie.

The shadow demon's tail was greater than that of its claw.

Meanwhile, the shadow demon released its protective battle qi too.

Zhang Tie's hand forcefully held the gold-eaten tri-edged dagger. The moment the shadow demon released its protective battle qi, Zhang Tie had sensed the gold-eaten three-edged dagger inside the shadow demon's body being pushed out from its body.

Of course, Zhang Tie would never allow it to happen. How could the gold-eaten tri-edged dagger which had been stabbed into the body of the shadow demon be pushed out before killing the shadow demon? Therefore, Zhang Tie increased his strength and directly expanded the harms two times, three times even ten times by

breaking the shadow demon's ribs and guts.

The shadow demon's grim face looked anguished when it uttered terrifying, miserable roars. It flapped its wings and wanted to escape; however, Zhang Tie tightly grasped its one arm, making it impossible for it to escape.

Zhang Tie then wrestled with the shadow demon in the air and hit mountain peaks one after another, spraying blood everywhere...

Of course, the blood was from the shadow demon.

The two earth knights just fought in the most brutal and primitive way regardless of any battle skill.

At this moment, Zhang Tie just concentrated on one thing, namely, grasping the shadow demon's arm by one hand in case it escaped away while tightly holding the gold-eaten tri-edged dagger by the other hand in case it was pushed out of the shadow demon's body. Additionally, he pressed down the dagger so that it could cause further injuries to the shadow demon's ribs and guts...

Zhang Tie just gritted his teeth while ignoring the shadow demon's ceaseless strikes.

Zhang Tie didn't believe that this shadow demon could live longer than him under this circumstance.

It was Zhang Tie's second time to use such tactics like how rogues dueled. Last time, he used this tactic to kill a black iron demon knight when Mountain Lifting Hermit was on the spot. This time, he used it to deal with a shadow demon.

In such a close combat, Zhang Tie was firmly convinced that he would finally win it based on his super strong anti-strike capability and recovery ability and his gold-eaten tri-edged dagger's strong penetrating power to protective battle qi as long as the opponent didn't have an overwhelming advantage over him.

The shadow demon could only blame for its bad luck!

What an unexpected achievement!

'In the earlier two months, I circled around the periphery of Tiewei Mountain with Bai Suxian so many times only to hunt this shadow demon in vain; I've not imagined that this shadow demon could come here for me on its own initiative only after standing here a short while. I really feel sorry for you.'

After a few minutes, Zhang Tie's gold-eaten tri-edged dagger had cut open a huge wound about 5 cm in length below the shadow demon's left armpit and broken 8-9 ribs and many guts of the shadow demon. Commoners might have long died in such a case. However, this shadow demon was still alive.

When Zhang Tie expanded the wound, his mouth corners also revealed blood traces due to the shocks of his protective battle qi.

Zhang Tie's eyes turned more merciless...

All of a sudden, with a roar, the shadow demon didn't chop its dagger towards Zhang Tie anymore; instead, it chopped off its own wrist which was grasped by Zhang Tie's hand.

After giving up one arm, the shadow demon escaped away at once by descending and sliding into the mine beneath Tiewei Mountain in terms of a bloody light...

Chapter 990: The Tragedy of the Shadow Demon

Zhang Tie had not anticipated that this shadow demon could give up its arm like a hero at this critical moment.

However, it was still too late for the shadow demon to make such a decision because it had been severely wounded and almost died.

What a brilliant victory it was for Zhang Tie to completely paralyze and kill an earth knight in only a few minutes' close combat. Now that this shadow demon had been severely wounded, of course, Zhang Tie would not let it go.

The escaping speed of the shadow demon was out of Zhang Tie's imagination as it had surpassed the maximal speed of Zhang Tie. However, Zhang Tie knew that the shadow demon's explosive strength was not lasting. It couldn't escape too far away; additionally, it must have consumed a lot of essence of qi and blood; otherwise, the shadow demon would not have chosen the mine as its destination.

Even a dog would leap over a wall in desperation. The shadow demon intended to escape from Zhang Tie's chase based on its familiarity to the environment inside the mine.

After wiping the bloodstains off his mouth corners, Zhang Tie threw the broken arm of the shadow demon into Castle of Black Iron before sneering and descending downward as fast as a lightning bolt.

It would be a laughingstock for the shadow demon to escape under this circumstance.

Even the shadow demon itself didn't know that Zhang Tie had attached some tracing feathers over its body stealthily when in close combat. Therefore, it would never escape away.

This shadow demon was worth over 70,000 square miles of land

and 10 cities. It was as valuable as a super gold mine. When Zhang Tie caught sight of this shadow demon, he had determined to kill it. Of course, Zhang Tie had made some preparations for further chase when in close combat.

In the blink of an eye, the shadow demon had disappeared in front of Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie also followed it into the mine.

It was pretty gloomy inside the mine. The dark red hematites on both sides of the mining walls were like coagulated blood, causing this mine to become colder and more terrifying.

After entering thousands of meters inside the mine, Zhang Tie had seen the first divergence. He immediately flew into the left bypass.

Although the shadow demon had disappeared in front of him, Zhang Tie could still clearly sense the traces and directions of the tracing feathers. Unless the shadow demon had changed a whole set of clothes, he was destined to be found by Zhang Tie.

At this moment, the shadow demon thought the same as Bai Suxian when she was chased by a would-be earth demon knight two months ago, namely, it also wanted to seek for a slim chance of survival based on the familiar terrain. Its dream might come true if its opponent was not Zhang Tie; however, now that it had met Zhang Tie, it was destined to die.

Only in less than 10 minutes, Zhang Tie had flown over 70 miles inside the mine and deepened into the underground space of Tiewei Mountain. Although numerous forks appeared in front of him, Zhang Tie didn't waste any time on making choices.

As he gradually deepened, the scenery in the mine changed too.

Golden sands sparsely appeared on the mining walls while the gloomy mine started to become brilliant.

Those golden things were earth-element crystal sands in the rocks of the mine, which proved that this mine had existed for

numerous years. Those crystal sands had not formed complete earth-element crystals; they only contained very low contents of earth elements. Additionally, they were as fine and loose as sands and were distributed around the earth-element crystal mine in terms of grains. They were components of the earth-element crystal mine in its periphery and were not valuable to be exploited. Therefore, they were preserved.

On the earth's surface, these ores containing the earth-elements crystal sands might be highly decorative. As for sculptors, these ores might be rare raw materials for sculptures. However, in the Earth-elements Realm, no knight would care about them at all. No matter how artistic the sculptures were, they could not be used to kill demons, they were nothing but sh*t!

All of a sudden, Zhang Tie sniffed an odor of putrefaction in flight.

Zhang Tie caught sight of two human corpses under the sparkling light of the earth-elements crystal sands right in front of him.

The two human corpses were incomplete. The male corpse had been separated into pieces and scattered on the ground. While that female corpse was naked. Her lower body was badly mutilated. Besides, her body was covered with weird wounds. Given her look, she might be anguished before death and had born too many abnormal torments. She still looked painful after being killed.

Shadow demons would always have abnormal desires about female human knights, including Abyan and Master Jiang.

Given their remained clothes and fragmented weapons, Zhang Tie knew that the two human corpses were not logistics and battle auxiliary personnel in Black Armor Battlefortress; they were more like knights.

Although the female corpse's face had been rotten, Zhang Tie could still identify that it was the very look that the shadow demon

had incarnated just now.

Zhang Tie didn't know what happened here; however, he was sure that two Hua knights who came here to join the large-scale battle between demons and humans in Tiewei Mountain would lie here forever after being killed by the shadow demon in an anguished way.

On the earth's surface, the two Hua knights might be a couple or lovers with remarkable statues and positions; however, they were nothing but stinky corpses here.

This was normally seen in the holy war.

Zhang Tie sighed inside as he boomed a huge pit on the ground by one punch and moved the two corpses into the pit tenderly. Closely after that, he punched the mining walls, causing a bulk of ores and sandy soil to fall down, covering the hug pit.

This was the mere thing that Zhang Tie could do under the circumstance.

After burying the corpses, Zhang Tie's eyes turned colder as he tightly pursed his lips, forming a clear arc. Closely after that, he continued to fly towards the depth of the mine.

After a few minutes, a bigger space appeared in front of Zhang Tie's eyes.

This space covered almost 0.7 square miles while the earth-elements crystal sands on the mining walls were as dazzling as stars in the sky. Those dazzling earth-elements crystal sands implied the brilliance here in the past while many ore wastes were piled sparsely on the ground.

7 bypasses were connected to this space.

Any earth human knight who followed a shadow demon here would stop and carefully observe the clues of the shadow demon so as to ascertain their further chase direction. Because they would lose their target completely after making a bit mistake.

However, Zhang Tie didn't.

After entering this space in less than 0.01 second, Zhang Tie had landed as fast as a lightning bolt near a pile of deserted ores. The moment he landed, he had stomped onto the plain ground while releasing his fierce battle qi at the same time...

When he was just a black iron knight, he had been able to collapse the pavilion of the Morality Association by one foot, not to mention this moment.

As a result, the ground cracked like being split open by a huge ax that was used to separate the sky from the earth.

With a terrifying roar, the lower part of the shadow demon directly sprung out of the ground as it spurted out blood as high as 20 cm.

However, the shadow demon didn't escape this time. Because Zhang Tie directly stomped onto its neck and almost broke it.

Previously, the shadow demon had been severely injured and almost run out of its aura when he escaped. Being almost died, it was concealing its qi and lying underground like a dead one. However, it had not imagined that it was almost transparent in Zhang Tie's eyes and was just waiting for Zhang Tie's stomp.

How could Zhang Tie give up such a good opportunity?

With Zhang Tie's stomp, the shadow demon's defensive system and physical functions were completely collapsed.

Being stomped onto the ground, the shadow demon's tail twisted and beat in a frenzied manner like a snake being put into a hot pot with cooking oil. Additionally, its wings had been out of shape due to extreme pains.

"Why...why..." The shadow demon struggled and shrieked towards Zhang Tie who was in a commanding position with bloody eyes in vain.

Until now, the shadow demon had not thought through why it suddenly became so miserable and even had no chance to escape.

It didn't understand why human knight who smelt like a black iron knight suddenly became an extremely powerful earth knight in combat.

It couldn't think it through why it was stabbed ferociously by this guy when it disguised to be a female human knight and sought for the human knight's favor.

It couldn't figure it out why its trump cards of escaping speed and concealing its qi could be identified by this human earth knight in a split second.

Since it caught sight of this human knight, it had been facing tragedies one after another.

"Why? Go ask your mom!"

When the shadow demon was still struggling, Zhang Tie stretched out his hands and grasped the shadow demon's head while he stomped the shadow demon's tail with one foot. Closely after that, he triggered his purgatory samsara, breaking apart the part of the water chakra which had been formed by the shadow demon in a split second...

...

After a few minutes...

With a sound "kacha", the shadow demon stopped its earthshaking miserable shrieks immediately. Because Zhang Tie had broken its neck by his hands and ended its struggle forever...

Chapter 991: Being Ambitious and Embarrassed

The shadow demon's head was circled on its neck before shrugging down weakly...

A dead demon was most reassured and valuable. After losing its power, the shadow demon was like a huge mutated lizard with wings and a unique horn; plus its tail, this shadow demon was almost 3 m in overall length.

As an earth knight-level shadow demon, its unique horn, wings and the color of its skin were obviously different than that of common shadow demons.

Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh, easing a lot of depression and indignation caused by Lan Yunxi's departure.

It only took Zhang Tie less than 1 hour to kill this earth knight-level shadow demon, the demon ghost who made all the human knights across Tiewei Mountain restless since he saw it. This could prove Zhang Tie's battle strength for sure.

Zhang Tie felt a surging strength inside; therefore, he became ambitious and confident once again immediately.

'The unrivaled earth demon knight which was previously as overwhelming as a mountain before me has already lain at my foot like a dead dog. One day, a shadow demon knight even a heavenly demon knight would lie like this at my foot. The result of the shadow demon today is that facing the Gobbling Party tomorrow. Heavenly demon knight? Top three chancellors in Taixia Country? Whatever! They only represent the past; however, I represent the future.'

After throwing another glance at the empty, deserted underground mine, Zhang Tie grasped the shadow demon's neck like lifting a dead dog before disappearing out of the void in a split

second.

...

Zhang Tie returned to Castle of Black Iron.

He had not been here for over 2 months since he met Bai Suxian to the present.

"Congratulations, Castle Lord, for killing a shadow demon!" Heller had long been waiting for him in the lobby of the palace tree. At the sight of Zhang Tie coming back, Heller had bowed towards Zhang Tie, "After killing this earth knight-level shadow demon, Castle Lord could definitely enjoy a higher honor and reputation in the human world, even in Taixia Country!"

This shadow demon was the eyesore of human knights in the Earth-elements Realm. It was very harmful to human knights, especially black iron human knights. On the battlefield, this shadow demon had made too many people restless; therefore, Taixia determined to reward the one who could kill this shadow demon with a big reward so as to motivate morale.

It was definitely a symbolic event that Zhang Tie could kill this shadow demon, which was of a special significance for human knights who joined the large-scale battle in Tiewei Mountain. It was an inspiring victory. Additionally, after Zhang Tie killed the earth-knight level shadow demon the weirdest species of demons as an earth human knight, it indicated that he had become a member of powerful earth knights in Taixia Country.

This shadow demon was a stepping-stone of special significance, with which Zhang Tie's reputation would reach an unprecedented new high in both Earth-elements Realm and Taixia Country.

"Help me check whether this b*stard has some personal belongings. This b*stard has tortured human knights in Tiewei Mountain for so long and made humans abhor him so much after killing so many human knights, he should have something

valuable!" Zhang Tie told Heller.

Due to the experience in searching over Old Monster Qi's corpse, Zhang Tie realized that he might miss some good items on the knight's body through simple superficial search. If he wanted to find all the valuables from the shadow demon, he might severely destroy the shadow demon's corpse in the end; therefore, Zhang Tie directly took the shadow demon's corpse into Castle of Black Iron. The moment it entered Castle of Black Iron, all the valuables on it would be under Heller's control on a molecular level.

Heller replied with a smile silently. Closely after that, he pointed at the shadow demon's corpse while two items flew off the corpse towards Zhang Tie.

This skill could even match Zhang Tie's capability as a divine dominator. What was more, Zhang Tie didn't feel any spiritual energy or battle qi waves on Heller at all.

One item was a necklace from the neck of the shadow demon. This necklace was faintly similar to that the demon general once wore. At the sight of it, Zhang Tie had known that it was a space-teleportation equipment. The other item flew out of the place beneath a scale in the middle of the forehead below the unique horn.

After catching the necklace, Zhang Tie confirmed that it was a space-teleportation equipment, which was much more senior than that of the demon general. He didn't want to waste time injecting his spiritual energy into the necklace to check what was inside. He directly poured all the objects from the space of the necklace into the lobby of the palace tree.

There were thousands of golden earth-element crystals, hundreds of blue water-element crystals, some food and water, two mirrors, dozens of clothes of various styles and some scattered objects.

It was shadow demon's special hobby to look into the mirror.

Those clothes might be used for figures in disguise. The earth-element crystals and water-element crystals were a big surprise; it was not easy for an earth knight to have a stockpile of so many crystals, especially those water-element crystals. It would take Zhang Tie many years to gain such a number of crystals if he just garrisoned in the Lion Fortress.

After glancing around them, Zhang Tie fixed his eyes onto those scattered objects, from where, he caught sight of a shield which was a silver secret item as same as that Zhang Tie gained from the demon general; plus the one that he gifted to Lan Yunxi, Zhang Tie had got 3 shields.

'Does it mean that such shields account most of the silver secret items?'

Zhang Tie became speechless. However, besides this shield, there were 10 more crystals being wrapped with metal among those scattered objects——senior secret methods.

Zhang Tie ran his spiritual energy and those secret methods flew towards him.

With a glimpse, Zhang Tie saw 4 strange classic secret cultivation methods whose levels were unknown. The remaining 11 secret items were all powerful battle skills.

Blood stains could be seen on most of the crystals of these secret cultivation methods. Given these blood stains, Zhang Tie knew how did this shadow demon gain them.

"What's this?" Zhang Tie caught that bead which flew out of the forehead of the shadow demon with a bizarre luster.

"This is a rare silver secret item, Castle Lord, you will know its function after pasting it onto your forehead!"

After hearing Heller's suggestion, Zhang Tie pasted it onto his forehead by hand.

The moment it touched his forehead, Zhang Tie had felt his

spiritual energy rocking in his mind sea while a refreshing and cool feeling slowly spread over Zhang Tie's mind sea.

'Unbelievable, this bead could nourish spiritual energy!'

Zhang Tie went ecstatic. He just watched the bizarre bead over and over and was unwilling to part with it.

'But how do I use it? I'm not a shadow demon; therefore, I cannot hide it in my skin. Neither can I mount it onto my forehead. If it was made into a headwear, it would be pretty awkward for a man.'

Zhang Tie touched his head helplessly. When he imagined how it would look when it was mounted onto his forehead, he revealed a bitter smile. 'All right, just keep it. When I wear a battle armor, I could inlay this bead into the helmet. If not, this bead could actually serve as woman's headwear.'

Zhang Tie really wondered about such a marvelous silver secret item.

"Heller, what's this bead's name? I feel it should be mounted onto something!"

"It's called Spirit Nourishing Bead. As you said, it should be mounted onto some special equipment. Precisely, it should be used together with some special silver secret item."

"Together with the other silver secret item?" Zhang Tie became faintly shocked. It was his first time to hear that different silver secret items could be combined.

Heller replied with a smile, "There're various silver secret items, more than weapons and space-teleportation equipment. In a far-ancient age, the so-called silver secret items were actually common tools produced by people. Of course, different tools could be combined. Castle Lord, when you see more silver secret items in the future, you will know it!"

After hearing Heller's explanation, Zhang Tie became silent.

...

After over 2 months, the small tree had been covered with fruits once again. However, there was no iron-body fruit anymore and was only one leakless fruit.

After Zhang Tie promoted to an earth knight, the small tree had stopped producing leakless fruit. The last one was left by Zhang Tie as a souvenir.

If the shadow demon was not an earth knight, there should be at least one fruit of plunder; however, the small tree could not produce any fruit of demon knights. What a regret!

Those on the small tree were all fruits of redemption from the gratitude of hairy shellfish, gulf shrimps and golden uangs.

Hairy shellfish increased Zhang Tie's physical defense and anti-strike ability; gulf shrimps improved his ability in healing and recovering wounds; golden uangs granted him greater physical strength.

After taking the fruits of redemption from three animals, Zhang Tie's physical defense and anti-striking ability had increased 0.45%, his ability in healing and recovering wounds had improved 0.87%; his overall physical strength had increased over 280 kg.

Being affected by these fruits, Zhang Tie's overall strength had reached a small new high.

After taking those fruits, Zhang Tie directly sat with crossed legs under the small tree and started to digest the water elements that he refined from the shadow demon...

...

2 days later, Zhang Tie opened his eyes while the 7th dragon scale on his earth knight's crystal plate had been lit. This shadow demon lit 5 dragon scales for Zhang Tie.

After 2 days' cultivation and rest in Castle of Black Iron, Zhang

Tie recovered his look as Cui Li. With the help of Heller, Zhang Tie made himself look embarrassed purposefully like having experienced a hard battle. After that, Zhang Tie left Castle of Black Iron for Black Armor Battlefortress as he directly hefted the shadow demon's corpse onto his shoulder like hefting a prey in a domineering way...

Chapter 992: Arousing a Shock

Before Zhang Tie reached Black Armor Battlefortress, he had encountered a squad of black armored knights who were patrolling outside the Black Armor Battlefortress.

Due to the popular reputation "unrivaled male and female" of Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian, the black armored knights who garrisoned the Black Armor Battlefortress had heard the name Cui Li although they had not seen him; especially his bald head and tower-like sturdy figure, which was definitely a unique brand in Black Armor Battlefortress.

When the squad of black armored knights caught sight of Cui Li from afar, they flew towards him. When they caught sight of the shadow demon's corpse on Zhang Tie's shoulder, the three members of the squad were left startled at once.

One knight screamed, "That's the earth knight-level shadow demon!"

"Hehhehheh, it's so nice to meet brothers of Black Armor Army again. This brother Cui is too lucky today. After wandering outside for a few days, I was almost cheated by this b*stard. Through a close combat, I killed it luckily!" Zhang Tie burst into laughter.

The three black armored knights didn't believe in any good luck at all. The shadow demon was an earth knight. Who could kill an earth knight luckily? Additionally, this earth knight was not a common demon, it was a shadow demon, which was always regarded as a tricky demon species in the world.

Since the beginning of the large-scale battle in Tiewei Mountain, very few earth demon knights had been killed by humans in the periphery of Tiewei Mountain. Additionally, neither did humans suffer a great loss. It was a shocking news for a human knight to kill an earth demon knight. As earth human knights were able to be provincial governors or Cheji Generals in Taixia Country, earth

demon knights should also be in the same positions among demons. It was a great military exploit for a human or a demon to kill an opponent earth knight.

At this moment, the three black armored knights watched Zhang Tie with full admiration and respect. As Zhang Tie looked a bit fatigued after a combat with the shadow demon's corpse on his shoulder, the three knights stopped patrolling and escorted him back to Black Armor Battlefortress for the sake of Zhang Tie's safety.

When Zhang Tie came to an entrance of Black Armor Battlefortress, those knights who were accessing to the Black Armor Battlefortress were greatly startled with very splendid looks at the sight of the shadow demon's corpse on Zhang Tie's shoulder.

"Shadow demon..."

"The shadow demon was killed!"

"That earth knight-level shadow demon was killed!"

At the sight of the shadow demon's corpse on Zhang Tie's shoulder, those knights who were leaving the Black Armor Battlefortress stopped while those knights who were entering the battle fortress swarmed up, causing an uproar at the entrance.

To some extent, knights were like commoners as they liked to be onlookers too. However, the thresholds between commoners and knights on becoming onlookers were sharply different. If two tough men were fighting in the street, commoners might swarm up; however, knights would ignore that. However, even knights would be attracted by a shadow demon's corpse.

Because the shadow demon was too rare. Most of the human knights might only see shadow demons in pictures in their whole lives. Less than 1 out of 100 human knights had seen a living shadow demon or the corpse of a shadow demon.

In the blink of an eye, the news had been spread over which

shocked the entire Black Armor Battlefortress.

Only after Zhang Tie entered Black Armor Battlefortress with the shadow demon's corpse on the shoulder a few steps, he had been surrounded by knights. Some of them directly flew off the ground to watch the corpse of the shadow demon as they could not enter the crowd.

After that, exclamations and a sharp intake of breaths could be heard one after another in the Black Armor Battlefortress.

Each step Zhang Tie inched forward, the crowd would give a way to him like a falling tide.

Of course, nobody dared flew above Zhang Tie's head to watch the corpse at this moment. They just surrounded Zhang Tie at a distance.

"Golden horn and purple grains; four-edged tail like a steel whip; skin like that of boa; sharp black bony spurs on the top of wings. That's it! It meets all the features of shadow demon after promoting to an earth knight..." Someone exclaimed out of excitement.

"Who's that earth human knight?" A new guy who flew off the ground and threw a glance at Zhang Tie before asking a knight beside him.

"Cui Li, Cui Li from Youzhou Province!"

"Ahh, he's Cui LI from Yongzhou Province?"

"You've heard about him?"

"Cui Li from Yongzhou Province is extremely righteous. He sacrificed himself to die together with the demon knight for the safety of his team members. I heard that when in the Lion Fortress. Wasn't Cui Li dead?"

"What you've heard was not the latest news. Cui Li didn't die; instead, he got good out of misfortune and promoted to an earth

knight!" The one replied as he watched Zhang Tie's back with flickering eyes, "That's what human knights should learn from. Earth human knights should exert their utmost to kill powerful enemies on the battlefield and become well-known in the Earth-elements Realm!"

...

Hot discussions drifted into Zhang Tie's ears clearly.

Zhang Tie just walked towards an information desk in the center of the square calmly step by step under various eye lights.

At this moment, in the eyes of everybody else, Zhang Tie's composed footsteps was formidable and oppressive.

The scene that Zhang Tie hefted a dead earth knight-level shadow demon in an extremely domineering way was deeply imprinted in the minds of all the surrounding knights.

Finally, Zhang Tie came to the front of the information desk.

Watching Zhang Tie and the shadow demon's corpse on Zhang Tie's shoulder, the old man almost popped out his eyes. Although being familiar with Zhang Tie, he could never imagine that Zhang Tie could come back with a dead shadow demon in only 3 days.

With a loud sound "bang...", Zhang Tie threw the dead shadow demon which weighed hundreds of kgs onto the desk in front of the old man like throwing a dead pig.

Zhang Tie grinned, "Take it, the earth knight-level shadow demon. I'm here for the reward!"

When Zhang Tie spoke, all the others became silent.

Everybody knew the reward of this earth knight-level shadow demon——700 miles' land and 10 cities in Taixia Country.

The reward made people jealous. However, nobody envied Zhang Tie at this moment because Zhang Tie had killed the shadow demon with his own ability.

On the battlefield, all the fighters only admired those who had great military exploits, regardless of human races and countries. Someone would admire about the military exploits and honors brought by one's battle strength and efforts; however, nobody would envy it.

The old man swallowed his saliva forcefully before taking a deep breath. He then started to check the corpse seriously from its head to its toe before nodding towards Zhang Tie, "It's indeed an earth knight-level shadow demon. As for the reward, you cannot get it from me..."

"Where can I receive it?"

Before that old man replied, some black armored fighters had walked to the front of Zhang Tie and bowed towards him respectfully. Closely after that, the head of the team of black armored knights stretched out his arm and said, "Brother Cui Li, our Commander Guan wants to see you!"

'General Guan?' Zhang Tie knew that a commander of Black Armor Army was on the back of Black Armor Battlefortress. He was a shadow knight surnamed Guan who had lit 3 chakras. Wu Guanhai talked about him before. Guan Qianchong was well-known and formidable across Black Armor Army.

Among the top four armies in Taixia Country, those commanders were on an equal footing with the military commanders of military regions in Taixia Country. They were able to be responsible for the safety of a region at a supreme position. It was said that Cheng Honglie the military commander of the Northeast Military Region was a commander of Black Armor Army previously.

Previously, even though Zhang Tie had been a bit famous in Black Armor Battlefortress, he didn't attract the attention of this Commander Guan. This time, after killing the earth knight-level shadow demon, he finally aroused the attention of Commander Guan of Black Armor Army.

Zhang Tie estimated that Commander Guan was going to talk about the reward with him. Therefore, he followed the team of black armored knights away from the square.

Watching Zhang Tie leaving, those onlooking knights swarmed up the counter at once and prepared to take a good look at the shadow demon.

'It's said that shadow demons could disguise into anyone's look; but how did such a huge thing with a tail make it?'

A knight asked out of curiosity!

The pile of knights started to touch the shadow demon's corpse with flickering eyes. As a result, the old man couldn't even put it away. Therefore, he changed his face and hurriedly intended to cover the shadow demon with his hands; however, how could his hands cover the corpse which was longer than 3 m while being surrounded by so many knights?

"Don't crowd, don't crowd, keep your hands off..." The old man shouted painfully as he treasured this corpse so much, "B*stard, don't press your hand on the wounds, don't you know that its blood could be made into the most senior disguising medicament...ahh, and you...stop...its scales are the best raw materials for making concealing rune..."

After hearing the old man's anxious exclamations behind him, Zhang Tie burst out into laughter...

...

A few minutes later, Zhang Tie followed the team of black armored knights to the top floor of the highest tower in Black Armor Battlefortress. He saw Guan Qianchong in a room from where he could look across the entire Black Armor Battlefortress.

Being different than the fiery feeling that Cheng Honglie impressed him, at the sight of Guan Qianchong the commander of Black Armor Army, Zhang Tie almost thought that he had

mistaken a person. With an unbearded white face and a pair of slim eyes, this man wore a cyan robe with loose sleeves with a white jade waist belt and a sophisticated crown. He was reading a book.

'He's absolutely an elegant old man! How could he be the commander of Black Armor Army in Taixia Country!'

Whereas, when Zhang Tie was doubting his status, the old man threw a glance at him before asking, "What's the relationship between you and Zhao Yuan the alchemist demon?". Hearing this question, Zhang Tie's heart almost stopped beating.

Chapter 993: A Profitable Bet

'First, the relationship between Zhao Yuan and I was established on the premise that I was Zhang Tie. The status Cui Li had nothing to do with Zhao Yuan since the beginning.'

'Second, Zhao Yuan's over strength is too powerful. As a heavenly human knight, of course, he would not be traced or cheated by a shadow demon; additionally, Zhao Yuan knew the current situations facing him and I; he would never reveal the secret that Zhang Tie was his apprentice to the anybody. Therefore, I'm not a shadow knight in the look of Cui Li.'

'Third, nobody knows that Cui Li is Zhang Tie.'

'Fourth, because Zhao Yuan was too arrogant, when he discovered the "Fire Dragon Sutra", he didn't even feel like putting it away; instead, he left it in the mountain cave. Now that Zhao Yuan left the "Fire Dragon Sutra" to me and was not afraid of any threats, it indicated that Zhao Yuan didn't tell the secret about "Fire Dragon Sutra" to anyone else. Therefore, nobody would doubt the relationship between me and Zhao Yuan through "Fire Dragon Sutra".'

'Fifth, only Zhao Yuan knew that I acquired the "Fire Dragon Sutra". At most, Zhao Yuan would doubt the relationship between Cui Li and Zhang Tie. It's not other's turn to doubt about the relationship between Cui Li and Zhao Yuan.'

'Sixth, Zhao Yuan's purgatory samsara method shocked both humans and demons. Besides, Zhao Yuan is an alchemist master. I only carry forward his purgatory samsara method, which is featured by absorbing other's chakra to rapidly form my own chakra. Guan Qianchong should wonder why I could vanish with the earth demon knights together and promote to an earth knight after staying in the hieron ruins 2 years ago.'

'Seventh, Guan Qianchong just doubts that. He would never get

any evidence. If he could confirm that I was practicing the purgatory samsara and the relationship between Zhao Yuan and I, he would have arrested me the moment I came to the Black Armor Battlefortress.'

'Therefore, he was just testing me in order to damage my psychological defense line in a split second. Guan Qianchong wanted to check my response. If I gave myself away, it was equal for me to admit his presumption.'

'However, even though this commander of Black Armor Army was very wise, he could never guess my means and secrets.'

At the critical moment, Zhang Tie had figured out everything in a split second.

...

"Hahaha..." Only after being faintly shocked, Zhang Tie had burst out into laughter with a bit indignation. He looked at Guan Qianchong with a sneer, "I've not imagined that the famous Black Armor Army in Taixia Country could be so insidious. If Commander Guan wants to rob the 700 miles' land and 10 cities from me or just want to take the so-called reward as a f*rt, just let me know. I don't treasure this reward at all. After leaving Taixia Country, I could get such a bit reward wherever I am. You don't need to frame me in such a dirty means!" Zhang Tie said as he looked around the room, "Whether some executioners are ambushing here or not? If you plan to use such an old trick. Call your men out. This Cui Li is not that easily bullied. In the worst scenario, I will be killed, spraying my blood in the air. However, I have to tell others what a m*therfucking thing you are."

With a sharp eyelight, Guan Qianchong revealed a smile towards Zhang Tie, "You were just a black iron knight 2 years ago. After staying with an earth demon knight in the hieron ruins, you promoted to an earth knight in only 2 years. Besides the purgatory samsara method, I really could not imagine about other means.

Perhaps you wanted to exchange yourself with Mountain Lifting Hermit and Lin Huanxi out of a good intention in the hieron ruins; however, I think that you have long cast greedy eyes on the earth demon knight's chakra and prepared for a risky fight. The others say that you're extremely righteous; however, I think that you're extremely cunning and audacious!"

Zhang Tie sighed inside, 'What a commander! Although he was not on the spot, he could almost hit my thoughts given the clues. How terrifying he is!'

'However, this Commander Guan doesn't know that one earth demon knight's earth chakra is not enough for me at all. If not the bloody sacrifice furnace in the hieron and the demon corps in Castle of Black Iron, I might not have used that means.'

After throwing a glance at the book in Guan Qianchong's hand and the other books in the bookcases, Zhang Tie continued to sneer, "Although this Cui Li didn't read too many books since childhood, I also understand that reading thousands of books is not equal to traveling thousands of miles. Do you think you've known all the secret methods in the world after reading so many books? Even if you know all the secret methods, how dare you confirm that nobody else could create or discover a new secret method? I don't know what is purgatory samsara, but this Cui Li has created a secret method by which I could absorb earth-element crystals ten times faster than the average speed. Through 2 years' cultivation in the hieron ruins, as long as there're sufficient earth-element crystals, I could reach the effect that would take common black iron knights 70-80 years. It's nothing strange for me to promote to an earth knight in 2 years at all! Coincidentally, the demon knight and Old Monster Qi had sufficient earth-element crystals for me to promote to an earth knight in only 2 years..."

"10 times faster?" Guan Qianchong revealed a faint smile as he patted his palm on the book, "If there's such a secret method in the world, there would be numerous knights!"

"It acquires sufficient earth-element crystals. It's my exclusive secret skill. I gained it due to karma. Nobody else could grasp it in the world!"

"Exclusive secret skill?"

"If Commander Guan doesn't believe me, dare you to make a bet with me in the public?" Zhang Tie raised his head and watched Guan Qianchong with a proud look.

"How?" Guan Qianchong mumbled as he realized that he might have mistaken the person at the sight of Cui Li's confident look.

"Right in the Lion Fortress. In front of all the garrison knights. If I could prove that I could absorb earth-element crystals 10 times faster than commoners, I would win. Commander Guan should break one arm and apologize to me in the public!" Zhang Tie said decisively.

"What if you cannot?" Guan Qianchong's eyes flickered.

"I will commit suicide in the public to apologize to all the human knights over there!"

"What sort of cultivation method could have such a remarkable effect?"

"What classics is Commander Guan cultivating? May you expose it to the public?" Zhang Tie gave tit for tat.

Two pairs of flickering eyes gazed at each other in the room like sabers and swords colliding with each other.

After quite a while, Guan Qianchong let out a distant sigh, "How tricky you are! So many knights from Lion Fortress are fighting demons in Tiewei Mountain; you just want to postpone the bet to the end of the battle a few months later so that Zhao Yuan the alchemist demon could save you out of here!"

"Hahahaha..." Zhang Tie burst out into laughter with an aggressive qi, "Cut the crap. If Commander Guan really thinks that

this Cui Li is related to the f*cking alchemist demon, we could make a bet in this room. We will see the result in 1 hour. No need to waste time and play tricks here!"

When Zhang Tie said, he took out a top-quality pure water-element crystal from his space-teleportation equipment that he had acquired from the shadow demon.

"This is a complete high-quality water-element crystal. It might take a common earth knight over 1 day to fully absorb it; if I could absorb it in 2 hours, I will be the winner. If not, I will be the loser and you can do to me whatever you want to. I will admit that even if you call me the stepson of alchemist demon by then. If I win, I don't request Commander Guan to apologize to me and break one arm; otherwise, Black Armor Army would hate me too much and Brother Wu Guanhai would not feel good in front of me. If I win, Commander Guan should add a bit more reward to me, I mean you should pay me over 700 miles' land and 10 cities too. Additionally, this bet is only confidential to you and me."

"Over 700 miles' land and 10 cities. It's just billions of gold coins. I can afford it!" Guan Qianchong revealed a faint smile as if he thought it was just a small gift, "It's my pleasure to witness how you absorb a water-element crystal 10 times faster than commoners at such a bit secular payment!"

When he heard Guan Qianchong's reply, Zhang Tie felt pretty thrilled. In a split second, he had reversed the situation and increased his reward while sparing a chance to prove that he was innocent.

What a good opportunity!

"Nice, Commander Guan is really generous!" Zhang Tie patted his thigh before asking, "Commander Guan, do you want to check this piece of water-element crystal..."

After throwing a glance at the piece of water-element crystal in Zhang Tie's hand, Guan Qianchong shook his head. As he had

spent a lot of water-element crystals to promote to a shadow knight, of course, he could confirm that it was a real one. He didn't believe that Zhang Tie could play any trick in front of his eyes.

...

Zhang Tie could visualize 21 abacuses in mind at the same time. At his full effort, he could absorb water-element crystals 20 times faster than common earth knights, namely, it would take him less than 1 hour to fully absorb one water-element crystal.

At this moment, Zhang Tie didn't make his full effort to absorb the water-element crystal, he just adjusted his speed to 11 times that of common earth knights. Even though in such a medium speed, he had also fully absorbed the water-element crystal in only a bit longer than 1 hour while the blue water-element crystal gradually turned transparent like a winebottle being emptied...

Watching the water-element crystal gradually losing its color in Zhang Tie's hand, Guan Qianchong looked pretty splendid.

Chapter 994: Clarifying His Innocence

"What's that secret method?" Guan Qianchong asked Zhang Tie once again.

As to the result of this bet, it was just a matter of over 700 miles' land and 10 cities, it seemed that this commander of Black Armor Army didn't care about it at all.

"This is Spiritual Multi-tasking Sutra! Zhang Tie renamed the "mental arithmetic by abacus" at once, which sounded very sharp.

'My God, I've not imagined that I could cheat a commander of one the top four armies in Taixia Country, a terrifying and powerful shadow knight with the "mental arithmetic by abacus" that I bought from an old man at only 4 silver coins when I was young.'

"Spiritual Multi-tasking Sutra!" Guan Qianchong repeated it. Even if he had a rich experience, it was still his first time to hear this name. He had witnessed the effect of this sutra. If the secret that Zhang Tie could absorb water-element crystal 10 times faster than common earth knights was revealed, all the other knights would be driven mad.

However, Zhang Tie had predicted that Guan Qianchong would be shocked by how he absorbed the water-element crystal. Therefore, he made an agreement with him in advance that the result of this bet was only confidential to two of them. As the commander of Black Armor Army and a shadow demon, he would not go back on his words. Those who went back on their promise would be belittled by dark forces, not to mention the ruling class. Therefore, Zhang Tie believed in his credibility.

Given Guan Qianchong's dense eyebrows which suddenly turned dignified, Zhang Tie knew what this commander of Black Armor Army was thinking about. If such a secret method could be grasped by the military party or Black Armor Army, the overall strength

and cultivation speed of all the knights in Black Armor Army would reach a new high. Theoretically, with sufficient earth-element crystals, black iron knights in Taixia Country could promote to earth knights in the shortest time.

"Hehhehheh, Commander Guan, don't expect me to reveal the Spiritual Multi-tasking Sutra to you!" Zhang Tie put it straightforwardly, "Due to some reasons, I acquired this secret method and reached such a high realm. It only works on very few people. Fewer than 1 out of 100 knights would be suitable to cultivate it. As for the others, even if they could cultivate it reluctantly, it would be ineffective for them to increase their cultivation speed either. Therefore, stop thinking about popularizing this secret method to the Black Armor Army and Taixia Country as a whole. It's not as simple as you think. This secret method poses abnormal requirements to the qualification of cultivators in some aspects."

Zhang Tie didn't tell a lie. Besides reaching the corresponding multi-tasking realm, the cultivator's spiritual energy should be many times more than that of common cultivators. Therefore, even though someone cultivated the "Mental Arithmetic by Abacus", he could not reach Zhang Tie's effect at all. The reason that Zhang Tie could have such a high spiritual energy lay in so many fruits of brilliance that he had taken. Besides Zhang Tie, nobody else could take so many fruits of brilliance.

After hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, Guan Qianchong gazed at Zhang Tie quite a while as if he wanted to recognize this guy from the scratch and wanted to seek for some loopholes from Zhang Tie's face. However, Zhang Tie looked bright and innocent which could be barely disguised. Based on his rich experience, Guan Qianchong didn't find anything wrong with Zhang Tie's look and eyes. Finally, Guan Qianchong let out a long sigh while his eye lights turned tender at once. Additionally, he started to appreciate Zhang Tie's talent, "It seems that this old man has mistaken a

person this time. It turns out that you've got a special karma and could rapidly absorb water-element crystals in a secret method. You got good out of misfortune and successfully promoted to an earth knight in 2 years in the hieron ruins!"

"Haha, when I killed Old Monster Qi and that earth demon knight, I've not imagined that they could carry so many earth-element crystals in their space-teleportation items. Therefore, I made a fortune!" Zhang Tie shrugged. Closely after tiding over the crisis, he became relaxed at once.

"This old man wondered how did you kill that demon knight. It was told that Old Monster Qi had taken the advantageous position at that moment; however, he suddenly became still like being possessed by the devil. Therefore, you chopped off his head. As for the earth demon knight, it was not easy; how did you kill it in the hieron ruins?"

Touching his head, Zhang Tie smirked, "Everybody has secrets. Of course, this Cui has methods to protect himself."

Guan Qianchong revealed a generous smile and didn't ask Zhang Tie anymore, "It's rare for someone with such a great good fortune to reverse the situation in such a marvelous way like you!"

"Silly people always have a good fortune. I have to tell you that Old Monster Qi is a b*stard of Three-eye Association. I killed him because he was possessed by the devil when he triggered a secret method of Bloody Soul Temple. I just seized the opportunity and killed him. When I closed the gate of the hieron, I had also thought about perishing together with the demon knight by destroying the crystal ball. After all, it's worthwhile for me to die at the cost of two earth demon knights as a black iron human knight. I was very satisfied to do that. However, later on, I found an item which could protect my life in an emergency from the space-teleportation item of Old Monster Qi; therefore I reversed the situation!"

Zhang Tie knew that he should spare space for the listener to

imagine when fabricating a lie. 1 false sentence in every 10 sentences was the wisest lie. After all, Old Monster Qi once framed Mountain Lifting Hermit using the Bloody Soul Driller on Damaging Guts. If Zhang Tie said that he found something sharp being related to the bloody soul temple from Old Monster Qi and gave a fatal blow to the earth demon knight on the premise of controlling the hub of the hieron, it was reasonable. He didn't explain it explicitly; instead, he just spared space for Guan Qianchong to imagine about it. It was better than nothing.

Besides the late Old Monster Qi and Zhang Tie himself, who else in the world knew what Old Monster Qi carried. Zhang Tie just guided Guan Qianchong's train of thoughts.

Certainly, soon after hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, Guan Qianchong had revealed a faintly clear look.

Guan Qianchong thought that although Zhang Tie had kept some secrets about this event, his choice was normal. Generally, this tower-like tough man was indeed extremely honest and sincere as was told by others. Such an innocent and sincere man was rarely seen in this world.

"Since I left the Hieron Ruins about 3 months ago, I've been wondering whether Mountain Lifting Hermit and the other team members have reported the background of Old Monster Qi to the superiors and whether Taixia Country has discovered something through the clue of Old Monster Qi?"

Zhang Tie asked another question "frankly"...

Chapter 995: Cashing the Reward

"After Mountain Lifting Hermit and the other team members returned and revealed the real status of Old Monster Qi, the Lion Fortress had already passed the news to the Supreme Court in Taixia Country. The Supreme Court will be responsible for investigating the clues left by Old Monster Qi!"

After feeling that Zhang Tie was pleasing to the eye, Guan Qianchong patiently solved Zhang Tie's question. This might be similar to the opposite-sex attraction. A cunning guy would always be fully vigilant and careful about the other one who was of the same personality; however, when he saw a frank, black, silly, sturdy and righteous one whose personality was utterly different than him, he would always have a favorable impression on the latter. At this moment, in the eyes of this commander of the Black Armor Army, Zhang Tie was the second sort of person.

He had long heard about Zhang Tie's gossips. A man who could call a princess of Lord Guangnan's Mansion his paramour must be favorable in some aspect. Such a person was always straightforward and didn't play tricks; whereas, he was easily favored by the God and could always avert the crisis. He would always have a very good fortune. By contrast, those who always played tricks would barely have a good fortune. Because the God would take their fortune away. That was the universal law.

"What about the survey result of the Supreme Court?"

"Old Monster Qi exposed his real status all of a sudden. Previously, he used to move very weirdly and secretly. Additionally, he was an earth knight and could barely be traced. It's very difficult to investigate what he had done. After investigating this case for 2 years, besides arresting some small fishes being related to Old Monster Qi and confirming that Old Monster Qi was related to the missing children across Taixia Country, nothing else was found!"

"I see..." Zhang Tie touched his bald head in a disappointed way. He had anticipated this result. 'It seems that the Supreme Court in Taixia Country didn't make any surprise this time. Whatever, if the Three-eye Association and the Heavens-reaching Church could be easily dealt with, demons would not have been wrestling with humans for so many years.'

"Are you interested in joining Black Armor Army?" Guan Qianchong suddenly asked him, "If you agree, I promise you to be a Cheji General in both Earth-elements Realm and on the earth's surface!"

"Hahaha, young brother Wu had already invited me to join the Black Armor Army; but this Cui refused him. I'm used to be free. Although it sounds great to join Black Armor Army, I have to follow orders and comply with regulations; with so many superiors, I might even be impeached by others if I made any mistake. That's too boring. I cannot adapt to that. Therefore, sorry about that, I prefer to be alone. At least I'm free and could do whatever I want and go wherever I want. I will fight demons whenever I want and escape whenever I want. I can sleep alone whenever I want and sleep with women whenever I want. As long as I don't do anything illegal, I will be free. This Cui prefers such a freestyle!" Zhang Tie directly refused Guan Qianchong's invitation.

Although it was impolite for Zhang Tie to refuse Guan Qianchong directly. Generally, when being invited by a commander of the Black Armor Army, the one being invited should politely express that he was overwhelmed by an unexpected favor. He should refuse the invitation in a euphemistic way at least. Few of them dared refuse Guan Qianchong's invitation in such a straightforward way.

However, the more Zhang Tie acted in this way, the more Guan Qianchong appreciated him. After hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, Guan Qianchong put down his book and burst out into laughter, "Alright, I will respect your choice. Everyone has

their own ambition. Speaking of killing demons, how did you kill that shadow demon this time? This shadow demon was too tricky. I wanted to find it; however, I couldn't it!"

Zhang Tie smirked, "Actually, I stayed in Black Armor Battlefortress for 2 months so as to find that b*stard for some benefits. However, Bai Suxian and I circled around Tiewei Mountain so many times and couldn't encounter it. Unexpectedly, this b*stard disguised as an injured woman and sought for my favor when I wandered alone outside; of course, I directly launched an attack!"

"How did you identify that shadow demon when it disguised as a human?"

"Hehheh, I have a clear estimation of myself. My look is far worse than being handsome since I was young. I have a ferocious look; especially after I cultivated the "Fire Dragon Sutra", even men would dodge away from me, not to mention women. If I walk alone in the wild, no woman dare walk with me at all. When I wandered around Tiewei Mountain alone, this "injured woman" dared approach me on her own initiative without any fear; therefore, I doubted that this woman should have secrets. Normally, even on the earth's surface, a female knight dared not approach me, not to mention Tiewei Mountain. Wasn't she afraid that I would harm her? Wasn't she worried that I was disguised by the shadow demon? When I thought about this, I became dubious about that female knight and became vigilant. When I noticed that she was going to harm me, I ferociously stabbed into her body with my dagger ahead of her..." Zhang Tie made a hand gesture.

"I see..." Guan Qianchong became startled by the plot. Although the shadow demon disguised as a female human knight, it didn't know how did human woman think, neither did it understand the human woman's appreciation of the beauty. Although Cui Li was tall, he looked a bit ferocious. If being not familiar with him, very few women might dare approach him on their own initiatives. It

was really out of Guan Qianchong's imagination that Cui Li could seize the only loophole and finally kill the shadow demon, 'Cui Li must be blessed by the God.'

Zhang Tie rubbed his hands as he asked, "Heh heh heh, Commander Guan, the reward, did you fob off me?"

"It's rewarded by the country. Of course, it's not a joke! This reward has long been registered in Taixia Country. It has been sealed by the three chancellors' mansions..." Guan Qianchong looked solemn, "We will cash your reward right away and spread the news to the public. As for my payment, when you go back to the earth's surface, I will have Guan people contact you and cash all of them for you!" As Guan Qianchong replied, he walked to the front of the desk in his room and pressed down a bell-like switch beside the desk.

After a few seconds, the door was pushed open. Closely after that, a major general with a solemn look entered and gave a military salute to Guan Qianchong.

"Cui Li has killed the earth knight-level shadow demon. You take him to select the rewarded land and accomplish the relevant formalities. After that, deliver the notice across the theater of operations. As for that shadow demon's corpse, don't waste it. As shadow demons are rare, many people have not seen them yet. Just make it a specimen and put it in the Black Armor Battlefortress so that everyone could watch it!"

Zhang Tie had not imagined that Guan Qianchong could be so overbearing. Whatever, it was good for Zhang Tie. Anyone who watched the earth knight-level shadow demon would inquire who killed it. Therefore, Cui Li's name would gradually spread over the theater of operations.

It was within Zhang Tie's anticipation that he could cash the reward in Black Armor Battlefortress. On the battlefield, in-time medal conference to those who have made remarkable military

exploits and wartime appointment were usual stimulatives. As the battle situation always changed transiently, many fighters didn't know whether they could survive back; therefore, in order to stimulate the morale, the rewards would always be cashed at the fastest speed on the battlefield. When one person rendered a meritorious service, if his reward could not be cashed until the battle came to an end after 3 years, that person would have long died. Who the f*ck would you pay the cash then? If so, such a reward could never be stimulative and effective at all; instead, it would make people disappointed.

'As I'm the good example of human knights in the large-scale battle between humans and demons in Tiewei Mountain, of course, they should cash my reward right away.'

Zhang Tie cupped his hands towards Guan Qianchong before leaving the room after that major general.

With a solemn look, the major general directly led Zhang Tie to a two-storey office in the high tower silently. After entering the office, the major general asked two military officers to fetch a map of the full territory of Taixia Country and spread it in front of him and Zhang Tie.

"The rewarded land and cities were all clearly marked on this map. 700 miles of land and 10 cities were close to each other. You can choose any one of the 117 green regions across Taixia Country!" The major general told Zhang Tie officially.

Zhang Tie threw a glance at the map and saw those green blocks on the map, whose color was sharply different than that of the other places.

"I can choose any part of the green regions?"

"Yes, through the strict assessment of the Land Planning Department, these green regions are close to each other in the area and urban development level. Those in low urban development level would be larger in the area as a compensation; conversely,

those in higher urban development level would be strictly restricted to 700 square miles in area."

At this moment, although Zhang Tie looked calm, he was thrilled inside.

After throwing a glance at Yongzhou Province at first, Zhang Tie found no green marks; therefore, he let out a sigh pitifully, "Ahh, previously, I wanted to choose a patch of land in my hometown Yongzhou Province, but there's no spare land and city over there. I could only find somewhere else..."

As he spoke, Zhang Tie moved his eyes all the way to the north from Yongzhou Province and started to view the territory of the Northeast Military Region of Taixia Country.

In the Northeast Military Region, there were three green blocks. Zhang Tie almost immediately targeted at a green block that partially deepened into Youzhou Province neighboring Youzhou Province. He then slowly revealed a faint smile and pointed at there, "Here!"

...

Chapter 996: Fire Dragon Bounty Territory

The patch of land that Zhang Tie chose was in the southwest of Youzhou Province. The core region of the land was a part of Yangui Mountain Range. It was Miyun Prefecture of Youzhou province in the northeast of the land. Three cities in the north of Yangui Mountain Range were included into this land.

Zhang Tie remembered that he had met the head and elders of Li Clan from Miyun Prefecture in White Tiger Platform when he fought for the provincial governor of Youzhou Province for Zhang Taixuan 3 years ago. The overall strength of Li Clan only ranked lower-middle among the so many major clans in Youzhou Province. Zhang Tie remembered that the entire Li Clan only had 4 black iron knights, plus the head and elders. It could not even match Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace who had caught up from behind after winning the competition for the provincial governor of Youzhou Province, not to mention deep-rooted Lu Clan and Gu Clan in Youzhou Province.

It was the south border of Yangui Mountain Range in the southernmost part of this private land which neighbored Tongzhou Province. Zhang Tie found that 4 cities being close to Yangui Mountain were included into his private land.

It was the north border of Yangui Mountain Range in the northernmost part of this private land which neighbored Yangzhou Province, the hub of the Northeast Military Region of Taixia Country. Four cities of Yangzhou Province were included into Zhang Tie's private land.

Those cities in Zhang Tie's private land were not advanced in development level given the map; additionally, most of the private land was mountain areas and mountain forests. Therefore, this green block was almost the largest one among all the green blocks on the map. Only after a glimpse at it, Zhang Tie had known that this private land was about 0.8 million square miles because it was

1/3 larger than the area of Yanghe Prefecture of Zhang Clan.

Coincidentally, this triangular region was only thousands of miles away from the Zanggu Plateau that he had bought at a high price in Youzhou Province in the north.

There were over 100 green blocks on the map of Taixia Country. If Zhang Tie adored prosperity, he could have chosen some provinces and prefectures which were much better than the Youzhou territory in the Northeast Military Region of Taixia Country. If Zhang Tie was ambitious, he could choose his private land near the south border of Taixia Country, where he could revitalize the Great Wilderness Sect over billions of square miles' land and become the king in the south of Taixia Country as long as the conditions became mature.

When he caught sight of the block on the south border of Taixia Country, Zhang Tie's heart indeed raced; however, the domineering thought was instantly ignored. As the Great Wilderness Sect had been exterminated, Zhang Tie was not interested in raising this banner once again. He didn't even know the enemy of the Great Wilderness Sect yet. It was very risky for him to inherit the legacy of the Great Wilderness Sect on the south border of Taixia Country at this moment. Now that those people could annihilate the Great Wilderness Sect in its heyday, it was not difficult for them to crack down an earth knight. The Cloud Crane had made it clear in the will that it was very risky yet profitable to raise the banner of the Great Wilderness Sect. It was meaningless for Zhang Tie to establish his undertaking at this moment.

By contrast, if he selected the private land near Youzhou Province, he could protect his family members and occasionally meet them in another status. He could receive the message from his family members at any time. As for Zhang Tie, it was very hard for him to refuse this choice. With this choice, the arrest order for him almost became ineffective in Taixia Country; additionally, he could develop his own force in the status of Cui Li and continue to

investigate the one who framed him secretly. One stone for two birds.

'I'm afraid that nobody could imagine that I would return to Youzhou Province in this way after being wanted for 2 years.'

When he thought that he might meet his family members soon, Zhang Tie became thrilled inside.

However, Zhang Tie also knew that it was not the right moment for him to return to Youzhou Province. It was not late at least after the battle in Tiewei Mountain. This battle was a rare opportunity for him to make military exploits.

"The land that you've chosen is in the southwest of Yangui Mountain Range. Neighboring three provinces of Northeast Military Region in Taixia Country, the private land contains 18.76 million people. Although its population is not large, the 10 cities have reached a scale in industrial and commercial industries. Additionally, the private land had over 70 resources such as iron ores, copper ores, coal mines, silver ores, lead-zinc ores, etc.. There were also a lot of rare resources in Yangui Mountain Range, most of which had not been explored yet. After you took over this land officially, Taixia party would only keep the taxation and judicial agencies in all the cities of your private land in order to maintain the orders inside your private land. You would have the right to manage all the other aspects in the 10 cities. You could appoint the administrators of your private cities, issue private regulations in your private land on the premise of not being contradictory to Taixia Laws!"

The major general started to explain it to Zhang Tie with a solemn look after seeing the private land that Zhang Tie had selected, "Of course, you could also entrust your administrative right over your private cities to relevant authorities in the Northeast Military Region. The administrative fees will be deducted from the taxes in cities. There's one point that you should know that the ownership of private properties and

resources will remain unchanged after you took them over as they are under the protection of "Taixia Laws". You have the ownership of the governmental real estates and assets and the corresponding jurisdiction and disposal right on them!"

"There are private properties in my private land?"

"Of course, as long as there were people, there would be private properties. The ownership of these private properties and resources are mainly fixed assets in the 10 cities, such as private real estates and shops of residents. The private properties and resources outside the 10 cities are mainly villages and arable lands as well as private mines. Generally, as the 10 cities were built by the country, the government still owns over 60% of land and real estates in each of the 10 cities. As for the land outside the cities, 99% of them belong to you; at least half of the ores belong to you. The relevant materials about ownership were carefully recorded in these cities and the Northeast Military Region, which will be transferred to you!"

"How?"

"After you deal with the formalities here, you can take your authorized documents and certificates to the authorities in the Northeast Military Region whenever you want.. After you tell them about your status, the Land Planning Department in Northeast Military Region would dispatch exclusive staff to deal with the corresponding formalities and documents for you! Later on, we will notice the relevant officials in the Northeast Military Region. From today on, until you came to deal with the formalities for your private land, the ownership of all the official lands and resources in your private land would be frozen."

'I've not imagined that Taixia could be so considerate.' Zhang Tie grinned after knowing the details, "Haha, let's do it then. This Cui Li will select this green block as my private land!"

"According to the rules about private land. Because your private

land combines different administrative regions from three provinces, you should name your private land. From then on, it would be the official name of this private land in official documents!"

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter as he felt it was funny, "Is there any learning about naming a private land?"

"Private land being rewarded due to military exploits would be named as XX bounty territory regardless of its area. In Taixia, bounty territory represents honor, which indicates that it is not bought, but is rewarded due to military exploits!"

Touching his bald head for a short while, Zhang Tie uttered, "Just call it Fire Dragon Bounty Territory!"

"Are you sure?"

"Sure!" Zhang Tie determined his decision.

"Okay!"

...

Half an hour later, an official document and the corresponding certificates being marked with some red seals had been prepared for Zhang Tie.

The moment Zhang Tie took these documents, he had thrown them into Castle of Black Iron. Until he left the tower, his heart was still racing.

Only after a short while, when Zhang Tie reappeared in the lobby, all the knights over there watched him in a formidable way.

...

2 days later, a grim and vivid shadow demon specimen appeared in Black Armor Battlefortress.

On the same day, Zhang Tie left Black Armor Battlefortress and disappeared into the dense black mist of Tiewei Mountain...

Chapter 997: A Glimmer of Dawn

After the huge earth-element crystals mine was discovered by demons in the 1st loop of Tiewei Mountain, the large-scale battle between humans and demons had lasted over 1 year.

In the first abyss where human knights were crisscrossed with demon knights, as long as one party had some big movement, it's very difficult for them to cover it. The tools and human resources required for exploiting large-scale earth-element crystals would never come out of the void. Of course, the transfer and movement of these tools and human resources would arouse the attention of human management. As a result, human management would make tentative arrangements.

From a certain perspective, the so-called holy war referred to the tentative battles between demons and humans which lasted over 100 years.

All the old knights knew that the so-called holy war was actually a long-term large-scale battle between humans and demons which tested the patience of both parties.

Humans and demons were like two sides of a millstone. After being squeezed together forcefully, the two pieces of stones would rotate towards the opposite directions. They both wanted to grind the opposite. The side that faced the opposite was always the most dauntless fighters on their own party. Each a trivial relative movement of the two sides would grind many fighters.

In the 3rd holy war, the first large-scale battle between humans and demons also the first fierce collision between the hardest parts of the two pieces of stones of the same milestone broke out in Tiewei Mountain in the first abyss of Earth-elements Realm.

...

On March 27th, the 903rd year of the black iron calendar, Zhang

Tie finally appeared in the 2nd loop of Tiewei Mountain after leaving Black Armor Battlefortress for many days.

Yesterday, namely March 26, was Zhang Tie's 30th birthday. He celebrated it alone again like how he did over the earlier two years. Whenever this day came, he would leave a reply under the post "The Inscription on the Gravestone of the Despicable" that he had issued in the Mountain of Brightness by that knight's crystal plate named Chakra's Lion. He wanted to tell his family members that he was safe through this reply.

——After another 1 year, the first abyss in the Earth-elements Realm has a good scenery. Being filled with dense black mist, I feel safe here. In the Earth-elements Realm, as long as you have a human face, you will almost be safe. The large-scale battle in Tiewei Mountain is turning white-hot. I'm traveling in the periphery of Tiewei Mountain and intend to kill 1 or 2 black iron knights so as to live up to my travel to the Earth-elements Realm. I don't plan to prove anything with 1 or 2 demon knights' heads. As a murderer in Taixia Country, no matter how many demons I killed, the Supreme Court of Taixia Country would not easily revoke the order for arrest. Over the past 2 years, someone else has been dead due to my event. However, the truth is still covered like that demon who hides in the dense black mist of the first abyss, the culprit who grasps the Bloody Demon Imitation Skill. He must be hiding in a corner of Taixia Country in a high position. I just want to let you know that I'm very good. Tycoons, of the Supreme Court of Taixia Country, the Gobbling Party, are you all right?

This was how Zhang Tie replied to his own post yesterday.

...

It was out Zhang Tie's imagination that the article that he posted in the forum of the Mountain of Brightness 3 years ago had been replied over 100,000 times and become the popular post in the forum. Additionally, the number of replies was increasing every day. He had escaped for 3 years; however, he had become the most

famous black iron human knight because of his article in the forum of the Mountain of Brightness. Zhang Tie had already surpassed his master Zhao Yuan in popularity and attention rate instead of the overall strength.

Zhang Tie didn't become well-known among human knights when he almost lost his life in Waii Subcontinent. When he helped Zhang Taixuan compete for the position of provincial governor of Youzhou Province, he just became a bit well-known in Youzhou Province. After he inflicted a great loss to the Heavens Breaking Church, his reputation was beyond the border of Northeast Military Region; however, after becoming a murderer in Taixia Country, his name was well-known across the knight's world as a hot, touching tragical hero.

Any knight with a normal conscience would have a strong emotional resonance and make a judgment about the truth after reading Zhang Tie's "autobiography".

With the increasingly extensive and greater impact of that event, even Green Flute Mountain Hermit and Guo Tieyi, an elder of Lancang Sect both replied Zhang Tie under his post at the risk of exposing their bynames in the Mountain of Brightness. They revealed the details about how they chased after Zhang Tie that night.

The two people's replies fully proved the truth of the "fatal details" that Zhang Tie had mentioned in his article—that night, the two people were indeed attacked by Qin Wu's battle qi smoke. When chasing after Zhang Tie, they both admitted that Zhang Tie had left their sights for a while. The entire chase process was dominated by Qin Wu. Additionally, when Qin Wu suddenly changed his search region and caught sight of Zhang Tie, he launched an attack on Zhang Tie firstly. When Qin Wu started to attack Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie had indeed asked Qin Wu why he left Fuhai City and attacked him. Additionally, Zhang Tie indeed explained that he was induced over there by someone else...

Pitifully, the two people didn't believe Zhang Tie's words in that situation.

In the beginning, Zhang Tie just defended himself. After being driven mad, Zhang Tie started to fight them fiercely; however, he still didn't exert his full effort.

Even Qin Wu's death was as same as Zhang Tie described. In that situation, Qin Wu's battle qi was boiling. The two people didn't see how Zhang Tie attacked Qin Wu at all; however, Qin Wu's body split into pieces.

In their replies, Green Flute Mountain Hermit and Guo Tieyi both felt guilty and self-condemned.

They both thought that if they could be a bit sober at that moment, the result might not be that worse. They both felt that they had become the indirect accomplices of the culprit who framed Zhang Tie.

In his reply, an elder of Fan Clan also admitted a judgment that Zhang Tie wrote in his article when Household Register Director Fan as the only witness of the tragedy saw Zhang Tie raping his daughter, he remembered that Zhang Tie was indeed wearing clothes and left no body fluid on the spot.

1 year ago, green flute mountain hermit had already paid a visit to Yanghe Prefecture, Youzhou Province to apologize to Zhang Tie's parents.

...

Because of the above things, 95% of replies to Zhang Tie's post didn't think that Zhang Tie could do such a brutal thing in Fuhai City; instead, they thought that Zhang Tie was wronged and framed. Very few people were still doubting about some details. It could be said that most of the human knights had thought that Zhang Tie was innocent and slandered. Zhang Tie had not only clarified his own innocence, but he also became a touching tragical

hero. Additionally, his poem "The Beloved One" was composed and spread over Taixia Country...

In the past 3 years, Zhang Tie was still wanted. However, facing the one-sided stress of consensus and doubts, even the Supreme Court of Taixia Country and the Gobbling Party had been involved in the tragedy of Fuhai City and condemned. If it was just commoners who condemned and doubted the Supreme Court of Taixia and the Gobbling Party, they could still put their airs or ignore that; however, thousands of human knights were blaming and doubting their judgment about Zhang Tie; such a great stress would not be ignored by the management of the Supreme Court of Taixia Country.

Under this circumstance, the Supreme Court and the Gobbling Party had both dispatched their elites to investigate the truth of the tragedy in Fuhai City, Yingzhou Province.

Death was the most effective means to cover everything.

In the past 3 years, the whole family of Yang Yushan the former head of the Morality Association in Fuhai City was slaughtered. After that, a famous doctor in Yingzhou Province who diagnosed Household Register Director Fan many years ago took poison to commit suicide. Then, Qin Wu and some relatives who were closely related to Qin Wu disappeared. When the elites of the Supreme Court started to investigate the provincial governor's mansion in Yingzhou Province, the archives staff was found dead out of taking gold at home...

The truth of the tragedy in Fuhai City was still confusing.

Under this circumstance, the mayor of Fuhai City resigned in advance; the grand justice of Yingzhou Province was degraded; the rating of the provincial governor of Yingzhou Province was worse; Cheji General of Yingzhou Province was transferred to another position. Over 20 backbones of the Gobbling Party in Yingzhou Province were accountable for the event and exiled. Due to the

aftermath of Yingzhou Province, the entire Gobbling Party in Taixia Country started to strengthen disciplines these couple of years...

Especially in the past year, the call for revoking Zhang Tie's order for arrest grew louder among the people and in the Mountain of Brightness. They would like to clarify Zhang Tie's innocence completely.

Especially 2 months ago, two famous gentlemen of Jingzhou Provincial College submitted a written statement to Xuanyuan Hill in order to clarify Zhang Tie's innocence, which shocked the whole country. The tragedy about Zhang Tie started to make the Supreme Court of Taixia Country uneasy, exposing a glimmer of dawn.

In the same 3 years, the Heavens Breaking Church directly vanished in Taixia Country which was pretty weird.

...

Only after Zhang Tie replied his own post a few hours yesterday, it had aroused a shock.

In the earlier two replies, Zhang Tie didn't tell them that he was in the Earth-elements Realm. This time, Zhang Tie revealed that he was in the Earth-elements Realm. Those who read it would think that Zhang Tie had just come to the Earth-elements Realm. Of course, even if they arrested and inquired all the human knights one after another in the Earth-elements Realm, they would definitely not find him, not to mention that they would know that Zhang Tie had been well-known in the Earth-elements Realm in the past 3 years. Besides having promoted to an earth knight, he had gained a bounty land with his own ability in the status of Cui Li.

Even the most imaginative person could not imagine that there's any relation between Zhang Tie the escaping tragical hero and Cui Li from Yongzhou Province...

Chapter 998: The Reappearance of Gorath

No matter what, it was a good news for Zhang Tie that he could scour the injustice and might appear in Taixia Country in his original look.

It was Zhang Tie's pleasure to see that the Supreme Court of Taixia Country could cancel off the order for arresting him; however, Zhang Tie also understood the stress facing him even if the Supreme Court of Taixia Country did it. Because the real culprit who framed him was still hiding somewhere. As long as Zhang Tie didn't find that culprit, he would never be safe and would be a target wherever he was.

That culprit might be at least a shadow knight who had formed 3 chakras and could dispatch enormous resources. If Zhang Tie couldn't find him, the moment he reappeared in his original look, Zhang Tie was sure that this guy would deal with him in a much fiercer way. This situation would become most dangerous for Zhang Tie.

Therefore, the biggest danger for Zhang Tie was not the arrest order from the Supreme Court of Taixia Country, but that culprit. Compared to the original status, the status of Cui Li was more suitable for Zhang Tie to fight that culprit.

The result of the battle would be determined by the overall strength. Therefore, Zhang Tie came to the core of Tiewei Mountain alone.

With purgatory samsara method, Zhang Tie could rapidly increase his overall strength. If he didn't come to join the fun in the core of Tiewei Mountain and kill some earth demon knights, he felt not living up to himself and wasting such good opportunities.

Additionally, Zhang Tie wanted to see and experience the fiercest collisions between humans and demons in the holy war.

Tens of thousands of knights fought at the same time, such a large-scale battle might only be seen in the holy war.

After entering the 2nd loop of Tiewei Mountain, Zhang Tie activated a super hiding rune effect and reduced his qi to the level of a common black iron knight; additionally, he was looming in the black mist caused by the abyss vines. Without arousing the attention of anyone else, he rapidly flew across the region covering over 700 miles between the 1st loop and the 2nd loop of Tiewei Mountain and rapidly approached to the edge of the 1st loop of Tiewei Mountain.

The closer the mountain ranges were to the core of Tiewei Mountain, the higher they would be. If one could reach high enough in the air, one would find that the entire Tiewei Mountain was like a blooming flower and a ripple that spread from the center. Such a strange terrain could only exist in the Earth-elements Realm.

Zhang Tie had already disguised as Gorath who had long disappeared once again. Wearing a black stickup robe, he had silver hair and a pair of icy and gloomy eyes above his slightly brutal and persistent hooknose. Flying in the black mist, he looked like a black vulture and a ghost.

The incarnation Gorath was Zhang Tie's umbrella.

In the core of Tiewei Mountain, if Zhang Tie appeared in his original look, he was finding trouble for himself; if he used the look of Cui Li, as was warned by Guan Qianchong's words a few days ago, the moment someone found that Cui Li could use purgatory samsara method on earth demon knight, the status of Cui Li that Zhang Tie had spent a lot of efforts in management in the past 3 years would be deserted. It was too silly for him to do that as he had made a great success in the status of Cui Li and gained a bounty land in Taixia Country.

At present, tens of thousands of human knights and demon

knights were converging in the core of Tiewei Mountain. Facing so many powerhouses, Zhang Tie should be careful.

Additionally, although having come to the core of Tiewei Mountain, Zhang Tie didn't know what he would do here at all. If there was a big trouble, just have the black-robed knight Gorath shoulder it. If demons and the Three-eye Association wanted to seek for revenge in the future, they would look for Gorath. After all, Gorath had already made a lot of troubles, in the worst scenario, he would give up his status as Gorath. Whatever, it was just one of his incarnation. Without Gorath, he might be Ballas, Dallas in the future as long as he wanted it.

With such a cunning thought, Zhang Tie turned into Gorath.

The large-scale battle in Tiewei Mountain attracted the attention of all the human rulers and knights. It was the first fiercest collision between humans and demons by now. It was reasonable for Zhang Tie the most famous murderer in Taixia Country and Gorath the mysterious knight in a black robe to join the fun here.

When in Waii Subcontinent, Gorath and Zhang Tie "almost" appeared in the southernmost and northernmost ends of the subcontinent on the same day; additionally, they didn't have any common point. Gorath was even known as the most famous voodoo pharmacist master. Zhang Tie didn't have a chance to touch and learn any skills about voodoo pharmacist in his growth experience and was strange to everything in this circle. Therefore, no matter what, nobody would link Gorath to Zhang Tie.

In this world, besides Zhang Tie himself, nobody else knew that Gorath was Zhang Tie. That was the subtlety of this status.

...

When Zhang Tie reached the highest 1st loop of Tiewei Mountain, he caught sight of a fierce combat in a deep valley which was covered with black shrubs.

They were battle auxiliary personnel instead of human knights.

The so-called battle auxiliary personnel were all Hua fighters whose ranks varied from LV 6 to LV 15.

When the large-scale battle between human knights and demons turned white-hot, these battle auxiliary personnel served as sentinels towards air across Tiewei Mountain.

Any demon knight flew over somewhere, these battle auxiliary personnel would rapidly transmit the intelligence to the human strongholds so that they could make corresponding arrangements. The information control center in the center of Black Armor Battlefortress collected many timely information about the demon knights' whereabouts, which originated from these battle auxiliary personnel who were responsible for observing the air force of demons.

Compared to combats between human knights and demon knights, these people were battle auxiliary personnel. However, it didn't mean that they didn't need to fight; conversely, they were fighting all the time.

It was very dangerous for these battle auxiliary personnel if they were discovered by demon knights. Many battle auxiliary personnel sent the intelligence by remote-sensing crystals at the cost of their lives. Besides demon knights, the ground forces that demons arranged tentatively in Tiewei Mountain were also the formidable enemies of all the battle auxiliary personnel in the Earth-elements Realm.

7-8 corpses of spider demons were scattering in the valley from the east to the west. Most of these corpses were split open from the middle of their bodies, scattering blood and guts everywhere. The latest two dead spider demons' body was still faintly twitching.

Spider demon was a branch of the demon. Its lower body was similar to that of a spider with a grim and ugly face. However, it excelled at hiding itself and could move rapidly and steadily on

cliffs like flying.

In Tiewei Mountain, the large number of spider demons that demons dropped were always the formidable enemies of battle auxiliary personnel.

Two battle auxiliary personnel were evacuating as they fought spider demons.

The two battle auxiliary personnel both wore mountainous black and brown soft armors. Some underground shrubs were purposefully stuck onto their armors for concealing effect. Besides, they wore a complete gas-defense respiratory mask with eyeglasses.

If they appeared on another occasion in such a dress, it would be hilarious; however, it was not hilarious here at all because they were both covered with blood, most of which belonged to those spider demons. Even in such a fierce combat, they still didn't take off their gas-defense respiratory masks. Because human fighters below knight level could not fully resist the toxicity in the air of the first abyss which was released by the abyss vines. The toxicity was contained in the underground black mist. After breathing such air for a few hours, fighters below knight level would feel numb and stiff all over. As a result, their movements would be influenced.

The black matt assault swords drew fatal arcs in the valley one after another. Although spider demons constantly fell down, the number of spider demons gradually increased.

With bloody eyes, the spider demons aspirated stinky qi through their mouthparts as they kept chasing after the two human fighters no matter how many partners had been killed.

Before death, those split-open spider demons successfully left injuries on the two Hua fighters' bodies.

The two battle auxiliary personnel were both LV 9 fighters; those

spider demons varied from LV 7 to LV 9, who were dauntless in a large quantity.

With a sound of "Zi...", when one of the two human fighters stabbed an assault sword into a spider demon's mouth, a dark red LV 8 spider demon immediately broke into that fighter's defense circle. Because the fighter could barely notice it with his eye corners, the spider demon stabbed a short spear into the human fighter's lower abdomen...

"Ahh!" That human fighter roared. When he clenched the short spear by one hand, he pulled his assault sword out of the spider demon's mouth by the other hand. Closely after that, with a fierce sweep, he chopped off the LV 8 spider demon's head.

"I will drag them, hurry up, go..." The injured fighter roared. Instead of escaping away, he turned around and rushed towards those spider demons who were chasing after him...

Chapter 999: Iron and Blood

"No, we will leave or die together..."

Seeing the fighter whose lower abdomen was injured turning around and rushing towards those spider demons, the other fighter screamed as he closely followed the first fighter and rushed back towards those spider demons too. At the same time, he stabbed his matt assault sword into a LV 7 spider demon's lower abdomen and forcefully gashed downwards, causing a huge wound. As a result, the bloody intestines of the spider demon flew out of the wound below its lower abdomen immediately with a sound "Huala".

After being heavily wounded, the spider demon uttered a sharp, jarring scream. Before death, it stabbed its short spear towards that human fighter ferociously.

In front of a LV 9 human fighter, the LV 7 spider demon was obviously weaker. Its counterattack before death didn't leave any wound on that human fighter. The human fighter directly kicked the wrist of its claw which held the weapon and broke it. Closely after that, he stabbed his sword directly into its heart.

After a spasm, the LV 7 spider demon fell down on the ground and didn't move anymore...

The human knight whose lower abdomen was severely wounded had killed another LV 7 spider demon. The two human fighters both used powerful, sharp, direct and fatal battle skills that they learned in the army of Taixia Country. In front of such low-level opponents, this battle skill could turn humans into the most effective killing machines which were urgently needed on the battlefield.

After a few seconds, some purplish-red spider demons had appeared behind the black brambles in the distance who were dashing towards here.

Those purplish red spider demons looked bigger than common spider demons, which indicated that they were LV 9 spider demons.

Given the battle strength, a LV 9 spider demon could match that of a LV 9 human fighter; additionally, LV 9 spider demons were trickier. Even in normal situations, a LV 9 human fighter and a LV 9 spider demon could be well-matched in strength, not to mention this moment when spider demons outnumbered human fighters who had already been injured.

At the sight of those LV 9 spider demons, the human fighter who had been slightly bruised instantly grabbed the waistband of his comrades-in-arms who was severely wounded and carried him on the back before escaping away.

"B*stard, Liu Xing, put me down..." The severely wounded one roared.

The fighter just lowered his head silently and kept rushing forward with his full effort. With one person's weight on his body, all of his wounds had been cracked while blood kept flowing out of there; additionally, he could not move as agilely as before...

Under the gas-defense respiratory mask, the runner's eyes turned bloody while his mouth corners were bleeding. However, he still insisted on running while gritting his teeth. Under this circumstance, he only had a firm belief—he would never drop his comrade-in-arms; he would live or die together with his comrade-in-arms...

As human fighters of Taixia Country, they were not afraid of fighting demons to death in the Earth-elements Realm!

The LV 9 spider demons were moving so fast and swiftly that they soon narrowed the distance to 50 m. At such a high speed, it would only take them a few minutes to catch up with the two human fighters.

"Put me down..." The severely wounded fighter's voice suddenly turned calm. When he uttered, he had already stabbed the sharp tip of the assault sword into his neck, causing blood to flow off, which immediately made his camouflage soft armor's collar wet, "When I count 3...if you don't put me down, I will commit suicide...1..."

"We can both escape away..." The runner had already exerted his utmost speed as he tightly carried the severely wounded one. At the same time, his sweat ran down like raindrops, his wounds were torn open once again, spraying blood all over while the main artery in the back of his neck started to bulge like that of a running battle horse. Each step forward, the main artery would pulse one time...

He didn't give up; instead, he just kept challenging his upper limit while gritting his teeth.

"If you put me down, you could have a narrow chance to escape; if you carry me, neither of us would survive...2..." The sword tip deepened into his neck while his blood dropped into the gaps on the runner's soft armor with the warmth of the bromance...

"3..."

The runner's heart raced as he felt the irresistible will and decisiveness of the one on his back. When his comrade-in-arms uttered "3", the runner felt his comrade-in-arms increased his strength on his sword. The runner immediately put down that severely wounded fighter.

"Xiaoyue likes you. If you could survive back, take care of her and say sorry to her on behalf of her brother!"

After leaving such a will, the severely wounded human fighter decisively turned around and rushed towards those LV 9 spider demons...

...

When he rushed towards those spider demons, he released his LV 9 battle qi totem for the first time. It was an awe-inspiring proud bloody scorpion with its tail raising in the air. He jumped high and flew over some LV 7 and LV 8 spider demons all the way towards a LV 9 spider demon.

The LV 9 spider demon's battle spike directly penetrated through his body. Thankfully, he faintly twisted his body when the spike touched his body, causing it to miss his heart.

After drawing a sword qi in the air, he chopped off the head of the LV 9 spider demon by his matt assault sword and had it sent flying off, spurting out blood higher than 1 m...

With a battle spike below his heart, the severely wounded human fighter continued to collide the second LV 9 spider demon. This spider demon's battle spike stabbed into the fighter's chest once again; however, the fighter's matt assault sword precisely stabbed into the spider demon's heart. Both parties roared at the same time; meanwhile, they stirred their own weapons in the opponent's body. As a result, the spider demon fell down; the severely wounded fighter spurted out blood which covered the crystal mirror of his gas-defense respiratory mask.

The proud bloody scorpion started to lose its balance. The fighter's one leg turned weak and he knelt down.

At this moment, the 3rd spider demon rushed over here with a grim look.

Although his sight became blurry while his vision was also reduced by the bloody mirror of his gas-defense respiratory mask; however, the human fighter didn't fall down. He just watched this LV 9 spider demon rushing towards him with a disdainful look...

This time, the 3rd spider demon's battle spike directly penetrated through the fighter's throat and neck. The fighter didn't dodge away; instead, he pushed his body forward while stretching out his arms. He faced the sharp battle spike of the spider demon with his

neck on his own initiative.

The battle spike penetrated through the fighter's throat and neck; however, this fighter hugged the LV 9 spider demon and detonated an explosive device on his body...

A white phosphorous munition rose up. In a split second, the two bodies started to burn heavily. At the same time, the LV 9 spider demon uttered an earthshaking miserable scream...

...

When the runner heard the last sound, he turned around and saw the fierce unyielding torches.

With hot tears flooding out of his eyes, the runner became stimulated and kept dashing forward at a higher speed...

High-power white phosphorous gel bomb was one of the necessary equipment of all the human fighters who were responsible for auxiliary combats. Compared to the white phosphorous gel bombs used in airships, such high-power white phosphorous gel bombs were smaller and more destructive. The original intention of such a bomb was to deter demon fighters; however, in many situations, it was used by common fighters to commit suicide on the battlefield of Earth-elements Realm.

As for Hua fighters, they could only fight demons to death instead of being captives.

...

In only a few minutes, the screaming spider demons had been burned into charcoal lying on the ground while the escaping human fighter was in a dilemma once again.

The flames attracted a LV 10 wing demon who was flying in a low height. A LV 10 wing demon plus a lot of spider demons, they soon cornered this LV 9 human fighter.

...

Standing still against the edge of the cliff, that human fighter panted heavily while his assault sword was still dropping blood. Only in a couple of minutes, he had a few more wounds, two of which were on his back, from where his bones could even be seen. A LV 8 spider demon's corpse had lain in front of him. 7-8 spider demons surrounded him in a fan shape over 10 m away. That LV 10 wing demon was flapping its wings and gazing at him with its brutal and bloody eyes like targeting at a prey which could not escape any longer.

"You cannot escape. As long as you surrender to us. You will have the best treatment. You could survive on and live better!" The LV 10 wing demon uttered its hoarse voice. At the same time, it threw a fearsome glance at the object on the human fighter's waist which looked like a bitter gourd.

The human fighter held a short sword by one hand and tightly held that bitter gourd-shaped object by the other hand.

The bitter-gourd shaped object was a high-power white phosphorous gel bomb. The LV 10 wing demon could hurt this human fighter by its battle qi, this human fighter could also throw this white phosphorous gel bomb at the wing demon and threaten it.

The outcome of being struck by human's high-power white phosphorous gel bomb had been presented by that charcoal-like corpse of that spider demon.

As the LV 10 wing demon was smart, it didn't want to lose its own life in front of this human fighter who was almost dead; instead, it intended to adopt a safer method to deal with this human fighter. If it could capture a Hua fighter alive, his military exploit would be greater than that of killing a Hua fighter.

"F*ck you!" The human fighter replied to the wing demon.

At the same time, the human fighter rushed a few steps forward and threw a black item towards the wing demon...

Chapter 1000: Saving Liu Xing

The LV 10 wing demon blew the black object into pieces from 10 m away. However, the object just broke apart like a rock without any phosphorous flame...

Of course, a high-power white phosphorous gel bomb would burn up even if it was broken.

Actually, it was not the real high-power white phosphorous gel bomb; but a common piece of stone, which attracted the attention of all the spider demons and the wing demon.

When the stone broke apart in the air, a LV 8 spider demon being closest to this human fighter burned up as it uttered a shrill miserable shriek like wild beast's whine.

The human fighter successfully made a feint to the east but attacked in the west. He solved a LV 8 spider demon who was closest to him.

When the LV 8 spider demon burnt up, all the surrounding spider demons were startled and hurriedly jumped away, causing a chaos, the human fighter had already stabbed his assault sword into another LV 7 greyish-blue spider demon and pulverized its body.

The flaming LV 8 spider demon jumped and screamed like a lunatic. Its eyes were destroyed in the shortest period by the high-temperature flames. As a result, it could not identify the direction anymore. Being driven mad in pain, it made the team of spider demons chaotic. However, that human fighter took advantage of this chaotic situation and killed another LV 7 spider demon with the cover of this spider demon.

At this moment, LV 9 spider demons and that LV 10 wing demon struck the flaming spider demon's body with their battle spikes and battle qi and ended its pain in the shortest period and had it

become a burning firewood on the ground.

In the blink of an eye, the human fighter had been cornered to the cliff once again with more wounds and burning traces on his camouflage soft armor. However, three more demon spiders were killed.

Pitifully, the human knight let out a sigh inside, 'LV 9 spider demons responded too fast. Additionally, they were a bit farther than me just now. If I were a bit closer to them, I might have killed one LV 9 spider demon with my high-power white phosphorous gel bomb at the risk of suffering more wounds...'

'Even now, it's not a poor military exploit, I've killed 3 more demons. Before death, I should have a chance to kill a LV 9 spider demon.'

In the gas-defense respiratory mask, the human knight gazed at a LV 9 spider demon while a beautiful and warm face occurred to his mind, 'Xiaoyue likes me?'

The human fighter didn't know whether he should cry or smile after knowing that news under this circumstance. However, when he remembered the figure which had turned into a burning torch, the human fighter felt faintly painful inside.

'Dahai, I'm sorry, I'm afraid that I will not have a chance to see Xiaoyue anymore.'

...

"Kill him..." The LV 10 wing demon roared as it felt being teased by this human fighter.

At the same time, the wing demon released its battle qi towards the human fighter together with the attacks of all the surrounding spider demons...

...

In the last moment, the human knight fiercely smashed his

remote-sensing crystal onto the cliff behind him. Closely after that, he rushed towards that LV 9 spider demon at the risk of his life...

If there was no accident, in a few seconds, some more corpses would appear here, including a human corpse. By then, the combat would come to an end.

However, there was an accident, Gorath appeared above the battlefield with an icy and gloomy look...

Without any omen, Gorath pointed at that wing demon while his battle qi flew out of his finger and charged at that wing demon in the shape of a wild wolf. All of a sudden, the LV 10 wing demon's body was shattered while its flesh and blood sprayed over. Closely after that, the wild wolf charged at those spider demons one after another like tearing and biting weak preys. After it circled around the human fighter, the last 7-8 spider demons cracked one after another orderly like crackers being lit in the legend; as a result, their flesh and blood covered the battlefield.

The blood from the sky and plasma from those spider demons covered the human fighter's body. The human fighter still rushed forward as he couldn't stop himself due to the inertia. When he stopped, he turned around and couldn't see any alive spider demon anymore besides a large area of blood and fragmented pieces of spider demons. All the spider demons and the wing demon who had dominated the battlefield had been exterminated in a split second.

The wild wolf-shaped battle qi gradually dispersed; instead, a figure in a black robe slowly descended with an icy and terrifying qi.

At the sight of that knight in a black robe, the human fighter's heart pounded as his throat felt dry. He couldn't utter a voice because he was really shocked by the power of the wild wolf-shaped battle qi. He had seen the battle qi strikes in the shape of

living beings; however, he had not seen such a vivid, agile living being. It was like a real living being, which was both spiritual and extremely powerful...

Given the icy qi of the knight in a black robe, the human fighter could not identify whether this gloomy knight was a black iron knight or an earth knight; however, no matter what, the knight in the black robe could easily kill the human fighter like how he killed those demons just now if he wanted.

"Thanks...for saving my life, senior!" The human knight uttered hardly as he cupped his hands towards the knight in a black robe.

After saying that, the human fighter felt that knight in the black robe raised his head and threw a glance at him. Although being dozens of meters away, Zhang Tie's blood almost froze when he saw clearly the face of the human fighter.

Although this human fighter wore his gas-defense respiratory mask, his face as a Hua fighter could still be clearly seen by Zhang Tie through his lotus-flower eyes.

It was over 3 years ago when he saw this face last time. Zhang Tie remembered that this person led him to his knight's tower and introduced Lion Fortress to him when he entered the Lion Fortress for the first time.

——Liu Xing, Xing means stars, stars in the sky!

This was how this man introduced himself at that time.

Zhang Tie was familiar with this name as he was the second "Liu Xing" that Zhang Tie knew.

Three years ago, Liu Xing was a logistics major general in the think tank of the Lion Fortress; it was out of Zhang Tie's imagination that he could join the most unsafe troop which was responsible for auxiliary combats in the Earth-elements Realm...

Table of Contents

[Castle of Black Iron](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 901: The New Identity of Zhang Tie](#)

[Chapter 902: Zhang Tie's New Plan](#)

[Chapter 903: Arriving at Force Province](#)

[Chapter 904: What Rolling Thunders!](#)

[Chapter 905: Arriving at the Earth-elements Realm](#)

[Chapter 906: Receiving Another Crystal Plate](#)

[Chapter 907: Zhang Tie's Counter-attack](#)

[Chapter 908: The Inscription on the Gravestone of the Despicable— —Excerpt 1](#)

[Chapter 909: The Inscription on the Gravestone of the Despicable— —Excerpt 2](#)

[Chapter 910: The Inscription on the Gravestone of the Despicable— —Excerpt 3](#)

[Chapter 911: Leaving the Knight's Tower](#)

[Chapter 912: The First Abyss](#)

[Chapter 913: Anus Boom](#)

[Chapter 914: Partners](#)

[Chapter 915: Samsara](#)

[Chapter 916: The Power of An Emperor-level Secret Method](#)

[Chapter 917: Meeting Pandora Once Again](#)

[Chapter 918: Familiar Strangers](#)

[Chapter 919: Alluring Secret Items](#)

[Chapter 920: Mountain Lifting Hermit](#)

[Chapter 921: Becoming a Celestial Being](#)

[Chapter 922: Golden Lotus Flowers over the Magma Lake](#)

[Chapter 923: Sects and Team Members](#)

[Chapter 924: Encountering Demon Knights](#)

[Chapter 925: A Destructive Strike](#)

[Chapter 926: Being Extremely Awkward and Sincerest](#)

[Chapter 927: The Demon Baron](#)

[Chapter 928: An Accidental Encounter](#)

[Chapter 929: The Hurricane in the First Abyss](#)

[Chapter 930: An Emergency](#)

[Chapter 931: The Crisis](#)

[Chapter 932: A Mysterious Island](#)

[Chapter 933: The Hieron Ruins](#)

[Chapter 934: As a Lion, Like a Dragon](#)
[Chapter 935: A Bloody Battle in the Lobby](#)
[Chapter 936: Woman's Heart](#)
[Chapter 937: Crossing the Lobby of the Hieron](#)
[Chapter 938: An Uninvited Guest](#)
[Chapter 939: The Weapons Mountain](#)
[Chapter 940: Pearls of Silver Secret Items](#)
[Chapter 941: A Weird Cloud of Mist](#)
[Chapter 942: An Aggressive Male Knight of Tianlu Palace](#)
[Chapter 943: The Conflict](#)
[Chapter 944: A Condition](#)
[Chapter 945: Breaking the Gate of the Hall](#)
[Chapter 946: Enticing the Lions off the Top of the Main Peak](#)
[Chapter 947: Making a Choice](#)
[Chapter 948: The Wrestle Between Zhang Tie and the Demon Baron](#)
[Chapter 949: An Unexpected Scene](#)
[Chapter 950: Life-or-Death Crisis](#)
[Chapter 951: A Kid Before A Giant](#)
[Chapter 952: Spare the Rat to Save the Dish](#)
[Chapter 953: Divine Dominator](#)
[Chapter 954: What a Righteous Man](#)
[Chapter 955: An Insurmountable Mountain](#)
[Chapter 956: The Tragedy of the Demon Baron](#)
[Chapter 957: You Cannot Die](#)
[Chapter 958: The Discovery](#)
[Chapter 959: Secret Warehouse and Purgatory](#)
[Chapter 960: Another Trump Card](#)
[Chapter 961: The Real Knight](#)
[Chapter 962: Recovery](#)
[Chapter 963: A Big Surprise](#)
[Chapter 964: Starting the Bloody Sacrifice Furnace Once Again](#)
[Chapter 965: You Were that Bear](#)
[Chapter 966: Zhang Tie's Playground](#)
[Chapter 967: Battle Wolf](#)
[Chapter 968: Price and Achievements](#)
[Chapter 969: Promoting to an Earth Knight \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 970: The Raging Tide](#)
[Chapter 971: Promoting to an Earth Knight \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 972: Taking Full Advange of the Demon Baron](#)

[Chapter 973: Leaving the Hieron](#)
[Chapter 974: The Lotus-Flower Eyes](#)
[Chapter 975: Meeting Young Sister Once Again](#)
[Chapter 976: Partner](#)
[Chapter 977: Treatment and News](#)
[Chapter 978: Irresistible Beauty's Love Potion](#)
[Chapter 979: Tiewei Mountain](#)
[Chapter 980: Reward](#)
[Chapter 981: All is Well](#)
[Chapter 982: Being Well-Known in the Black Armor Battlefortress](#)
[Chapter 983: Lord Guangnan's Mansion](#)
[Chapter 984: Beauties Come and Go](#)
[Chapter 985: The First Rays of the Morning in the Cloud](#)
[Chapter 986: Contact](#)
[Chapter 987: Martyr](#)
[Chapter 988: A Chance Encounter](#)
[Chapter 989: A Barbarous Combat](#)
[Chapter 990: The Tragedy of the Shadow Demon](#)
[Chapter 991: Being Ambitious and Embarrassed](#)
[Chapter 992: Arousing a Shock](#)
[Chapter 993: A Profitable Bet](#)
[Chapter 994: Clarifying His Innocence](#)
[Chapter 995: Cashing the Reward](#)
[Chapter 996: Fire Dragon Bounty Territory](#)
[Chapter 997: A Glimmer of Dawn](#)
[Chapter 998: The Reappearance of Gorath](#)
[Chapter 999: Iron and Blood](#)
[Chapter 1000: Saving Liu Xing](#)